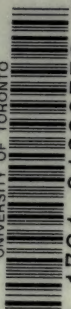


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



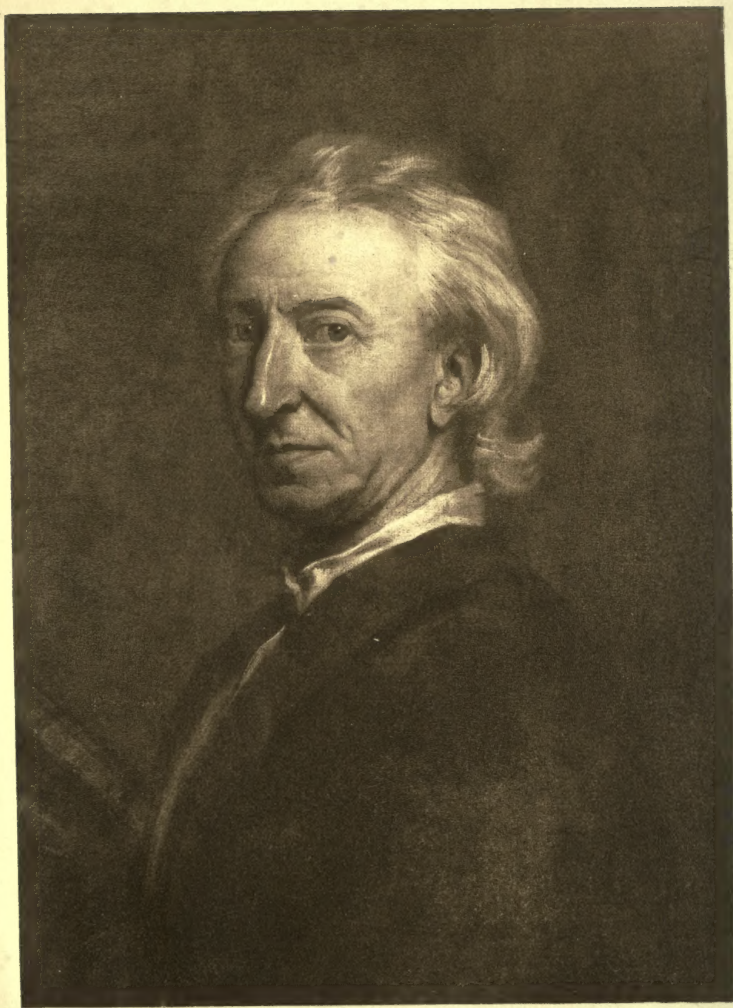
3 1761 01366776 1





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE HISTORY OF
THE EVELYN FAMILY



*John Evelyn.
from a painting by Sir Godfrey Kneller.*

**THE HISTORY
OF
THE EVELYN FAMILY**

**WITH A SPECIAL MEMOIR OF
WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, M.P.**

**BY
HELEN EVELYN**

**LONDON
EVELEIGH NASH
1915**

CS
439
E9
1915



LONDON
EVERFLEIGH NASH
1915

PREFACE

IN publishing this little work on the Evelyn Family, I am aware that it is very far from complete. To make it so, many more papers and documents both at the British Museum and the Record Office would have to be gone through. Notwithstanding this, however, I have decided to publish it as it is, with the consolation that it may be a slight help to any possible future historian of the family. In most previous accounts of the family many facts are mentioned without the references which would prove them, and in compiling this work I have endeavoured to avoid this error, carefully stating my authority whenever necessary. There still remain many interesting papers at Wotton which have not been gone through, and it is to be hoped that some day some enterprising member of the family may feel an inclination to do so. The title-deeds of Wotton might also afford some valuable information. In conclusion, let me say that I am much indebted to Miss Fairbrother of 5 Manor Place, Paddington Green, for her assistance with regard to the connection (or rather non-connection as it has proved) of the Evelyns with Shropshire, and also for her researches in regard to the Chamberlain and Shee pedigrees.

H. E.

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

John Evelyn of Wotton (the Diarist)	<i>Frontispiece</i>
From a portrait by Sir G. Kneller (1689).	
Richard Evelyn of Wotton (1579-1646), father of the Diarist	FACING PAGE 30
Eleanor Standsfield, wife of Richard Evelyn	34
John Evelyn (Diarist), 1620-1706	64
From a portrait by Vanderborcht.	
Mary Browne, aged 4 years, wife of "Sylva" Evelyn	88
Elizabeth Evelyn, granddaughter of John Evelyn, wife of Simon Harcourt	154
Sir John Evelyn, 1st Bart. (1682-1763)	162
Sir John Evelyn, 2nd Bart. (1706-1767)	178
William Evelyn of St. Clere (1686-1766), son of George Evelyn of Nutfield	216
Jane, daughter of Benjamin Mead, first wife of Richard Evelyn of Dublin	222
Margaret Chamberlain (1718-1776), wife of William Evelyn, Dean of Emly	226
William Glanville Evelyn (1741-1776)	230
John Evelyn (1743-1827)	234
John Evelyn (1743-1827)	238
From a portrait by Sir M. Archer-Shee.	
George Evelyn of Wotton (1791-1829)	246
Mary Jane Massy-Dawson (1801-1896), wife of George Evelyn	252
Mary Jane Massy-Dawson	258
From a painting on ivory by Sir W. Newton, in the possession of Mrs. E. Wyndham Bailey.	
Wotton House (from the North)	282
Mrs. George Evelyn and her Children	292
Mr. and Mrs. Dennis, of Jamaica, with their Children	296
Mrs. W. J. Evelyn (1850-1897)	360
From a portrait by Sant in 1884.	
William John Evelyn, M.P.	382
From a portrait by Havell.	
William John Evelyn, M.P.	450
Frances Evelyn (1719-1805), wife of Admiral Boscawen	562
Sarah Evelyn (1735-1826), daughter of William Evelyn of St. Clere	566

CONTENTS

PART I

THE FAMILY OF EVELYN

	PAGE
Traditional descent—The French family of Evelin—First English settlers—Their early history—George Evelyn of Long Ditton—His family	11

PART II

THE WOTTON BRANCH OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

CHAPTER I

RICHARD EVELYN OF WOTTON

His history—Petition to Charles I—His will—Family—George Evelyn—Family letters—Improvements at Wotton—Correspondence—Will—Woodcote Park—Baynards	29
--	----

CHAPTER II

JOHN EVELYN, AUTHOR OF *SYLVA*

Early years—Travels—List of published works—Correspondence—Prayers—His last will—Mary Browne, wife of John Evelyn—Her children—Princess Henrietta—Dr. Bohun's "Character of Mrs. Evelyn"—Correspondence—Death—Her will—Children of John Evelyn—His account of his eldest son—Mary—Elizabeth—Susannah	63
--	----

CHAPTER III

JOHN EVELYN, SON OF "*SYLVA*" EVELYN

Early years—Education—The Great Plague of London—Travels—Correspondence with his father—His poems—His children	133
--	-----

CHAPTER IV

JOHN EVELYN (AFTERWARDS SIR JOHN EVELYN, 1ST BART.)

Education—Marriage—M.P. for Helston—Correspondence—His children	156
---	-----

CONTENTS

CHAPTER V

SIR JOHN EVELYN, 2ND BART.

Family history—Correspondence—His children . . .	PAGE 178
--	-------------

CHAPTER VI

SIR FREDERICK EVELYN, 3RD BART.

Early life—Marriage—Catalogue of Wotton Library . . .	185
---	-----

CHAPTER VII

SIR JOHN EVELYN, 4TH BART.

Family history—Death, 1833	189
--------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER VIII

SIR HUGH EVELYN, 5TH BART.

Early life and marriage—Memoir—His death and will—Last direct male descendant of Sylva Evelyn	190
---	-----

PART III

THE GODSTONE BRANCH OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

CHAPTER I

JOHN EVELYN OF KINGSTON, GODSTONE, WEST DEAN,
AND EVERLEY

Early history and marriage—Litigation—West Dean—His children . . .	197
--	-----

CHAPTER II

SIR JOHN EVELYN OF GODSTONE, SECOND SON OF
JOHN EVELYN OF KINGSTON

Early life and marriage—Knighted by Charles I—His will—Children—Sir J. Evelyn of Lee Place—Marden Park—Litigation—George Evelyn of Nutfield—His marriage—Will—Children—Richard Evelyn of Dublin—Family by first and second marriages—William Evelyn, Dean of Emly—His career—Family	202
---	-----

CHAPTER III

JOHN EVELYN, SECOND SON OF WILLIAM EVELYN, DEAN OF EMLY,
DEVISEE OF LADY EVELYN

Early life—India—Marriage—Correspondence—Will—Correspondence of Anne Evelyn, his wife—Children—George Evelyn at Waterloo—Correspondence—His marriage—Athenæum Club—Further correspondence—Dr. Arnold—Death and children . . .	233
---	-----

CONTENTS

9

PART IV

CHAPTER I

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, A MEMOIR BY W. S. BLUNT . . .	PAGE 265
--	-------------

CHAPTER II

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN

Childhood and early life—Education	279
--	-----

CHAPTER III

W. J. EVELYN

Early manhood and first Parliamentary experiences	304
---	-----

CHAPTER IV

W. J. EVELYN'S EXPERIENCES WHILE HIGH SHERIFF OF SURREY	310
---	-----

CHAPTER V

W. J. EVELYN'S MARRIAGE AND SECOND PARLIAMENTARY CAREER	360
---	-----

CHAPTER VI

W. J. EVELYN

End of Parliamentary career	406
---------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER VII

W. J. EVELYN

Concluding years—Correspondence	450
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII

W. J. EVELYN

Poetical Works	473
--------------------------	-----

CHAPTER IX

JOHN HARCOURT CHICHESTER EVELYN

Early life—Education—Experiences of the Boer War—Prisoner of War—Return to England—Marriage	485
---	-----

PART V

THE EVELYNS OF WEST DEAN AND EVERLEY IN WILTSHIRE	489
---	-----

PART VI

	PAGE
THE EVELYNS OF FELBRIDGE, IN SURREY	510

PART VII

THE EVELYNS OF LONG DITTON, AND HUNTER- COMBE	514
--	-----

PART VIII

THE EVELYNS IN AMERICA

ROBERT EVELYN	530
-------------------------	-----

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I. The Ibelins of Syria, Cyprus, and Normandy	539
" II. The Evelyns in Shropshire	551
" III. Account of the Shee Family	556
" IV. Account of the Chamberlain Family	559
" V. The Evelyns of St. Clere, Kent	561
" VI. Pedigree of the Massy Family	569
" VII. Pedigree of the Chichester Family	570

FAMILY PEDIGREES

1. Abridged pedigree of the French family of Evelin	13
2. Pedigree of the Evelyns of Harrow-on-the-Hill and Kingston	28
3. Pedigree of the Wotton Branch of the Evelyn Family	194
4. Pedigree of the Evelyn Family showing the Wotton and the Godstone Branch	195
5. Table of descent showing relationship of the Boscauens	232
6. Pedigree of the Evelyns of Godstone and later of Wotton	488
7. The Evelyns of West Dean and Everley	509
8. The Evelyns of Long Ditton	528
9. The Evelyns of Huntercombe	529
10. The Evelyns in America	538
11. Pedigree of the Shee Family	558
12. Pedigree of the Chamberlain Family	560
13. The Evelyns of St. Clere	568
14. Pedigree of the Massy Family	569
15. Pedigree of the Chichester Family	570

LIST OF AUTHORITIES	571
-------------------------------	-----

THE HISTORY OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

PART I

THE FAMILY OF EVELYN

THE family of Evelyn is traditionally descended from the French family of Evelin. This family took a prominent part in the Crusades, and in fact took its name from Ibelin, a locality in Palestine lying between Joppa and Ascalon.¹ A *French Herauld's Book* was brought over to England in 1650 by John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*, who translated it into English. It relates that a member of the family went to the Holy Land with Robert, Duke of Normandy, and became possessed of Baruth, a seaport. It also states that the Evelins intermarried with the royal families of Jerusalem and Cyprus.² A member of the family, Henri Evelin, returned to France in 1475 and bought a fief in Normandy which he called "Eveliniere."

In John Evelyn's time the representative of the French Evelyns was Guillaume Evelin, described as "Physician and Counselour to Henry IV, Louis XIII, and Louis XIV."

¹ See Appendix I., p. 539, "The Ibelins of Syria, Cyprus, and Normandy."

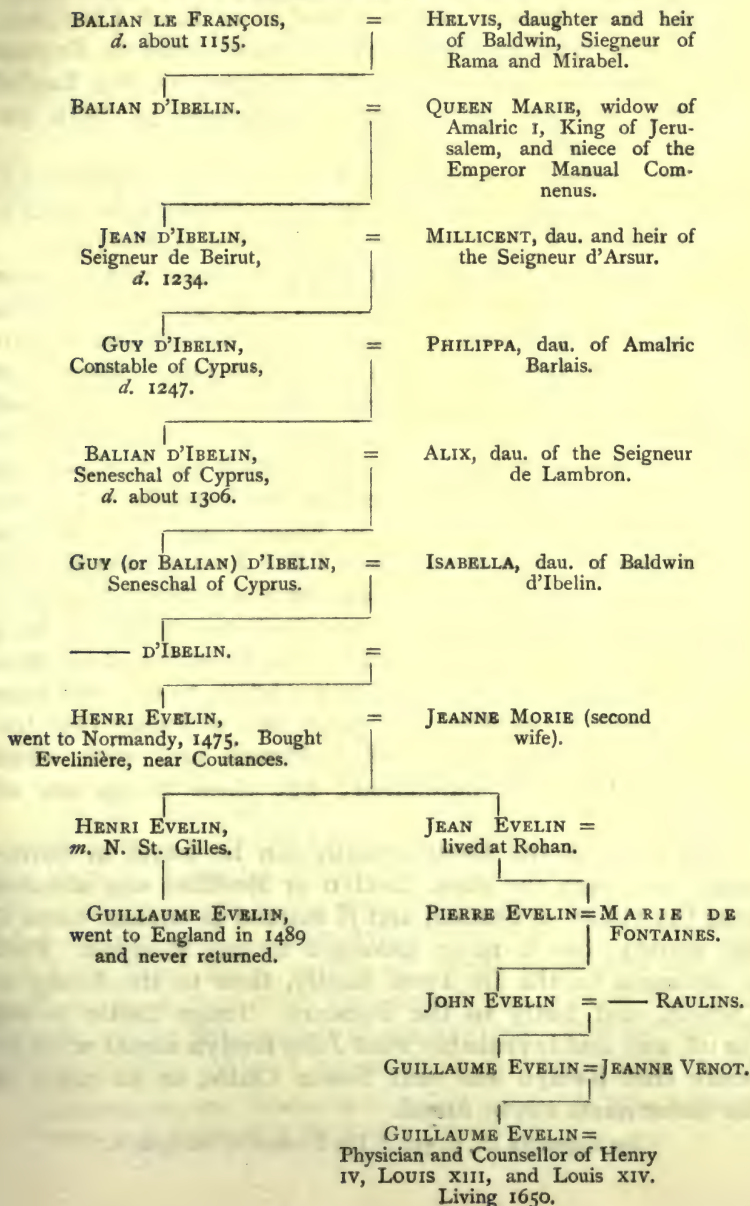
² The extract may be found in a book called *The Evelyn Family* compiled by the Hon. C. G. S. Foljambe, afterwards Earl of Liverpool.

John Evelyn met him in 1670 when he came over to England with Henrietta, Duchess of Orleans, sister to Charles II. The following is an extract from John Evelyn's *Diary* describing the meeting between them :—

“ May 26, 1670. Receiving a letter from Mr. Philip Howard, Lord Almoner to the Queen, that Monsieur Evelin, first physician to Madame (who was now come to Dover to visit the King her brother) was come to towne, greatly desirous to see me, but his stay so short that he could not come to me, I went with my brother to meete him at the Tower, where he was seeing the Magazines and other curiosities, having never before ben in England : we renew'd our alliance and friendship, with much regret on both sides that he being to returne towards Dover that evening, we could not enjoy one another any longer. How this French familie, Evelin, of Evelin in Normandy, a very ancient and noble house, is grafted into our Pedigree, see in the collection brought by me from Paris in 1650.”

ABRIDGED PEDIGREE OF THE FRENCH FAMILY OF EVELIN

(From the *Lignages d'outre Mer* of DU CANGE)



This pedigree of the French Evelyns, which is taken from the *Lignages d'outre Mer* of Du Cange, differs slightly from another pedigree of the family which John Evelyn brought from France and is included in Lord Liverpool's book. The William Evelyn said to have gone to England in 1489 cannot very well be the ancestor of the English Evelyns, as they were living at Harrow in 1476 (see pedigree, p. 28).

John Evelyn, in a letter to Aubrey, which is prefixed to the latter's *History of Surrey*, gives the following account of the Evelyn family and their first settlement at Wotton :—

“ We have not been at Wotton (purchased of one Owen, a great rich man) above 160 years. My great-grandfather came from Long Ditton (the seat now of Sir Edward Evelyn) where we had been long before ; and to Long Ditton from Harrow-on-the-Hill ; and many years before that from Evelyn near Tower Castle in Shropshire, at what time there transmigrated also (as I have been told) the Onslows and Hattons, from seats and places of those names yet there. There are of our name both in France and Italy, written Ivelyn, Avelin ; and in old deeds I find Avelyn *alias* Evelyn. One of our name was taken prisoner at the battle of Agincourt. When the Duchess of Orleans came to Dover to see the King (Charles II) one of our race (whose family derives itself from Lusignan, King of Cyprus) claimed relation to us. We have in our family a tradition of a great sum of money that had been given for the ransom of a French lord with which a great estate was purchased ; but these things are all mystical.”

No trace of the Evelyn family can be found in Shropshire,¹ although the place Evelyn or Evelithe was situated near the village of Shifnall and is marked in ancient maps of the county, but it never belonged to any Evelyns. First it belonged to the De Toret family, then to the family of Corbett, and lastly to the Forsters. Tonge Castle is not far off, and that is probably what John Evelyn meant when he wrote that Evelyn was near Tower Castle, as no castle of the latter name can be found.

¹ See Appendix II., p. 551, “ The Evelyns in Shropshire.”

The first Evelyn recorded is WILLIAM AVELYN or EVELYN¹ of the Harrow-on-the-Hill, who died in 1476 (reign of Edward iv).

CHILDREN OF WILLIAM EVELYN

ROGER EVELYN, of whom presently.

HENRY EVELYN, living 17 Edward iv (1478), 2 Henry vii (1487) and in 1508, according to Lord Liverpool's book, which, however, gives no references.

ROGER EVELYN

ROGER EVELYN of Stanmore, Middlesex, who died in 1508 (reign of Henry vii), is stated to have possessed lands at Harrow-on-the-Hill. According to Lord Liverpool, he was living 17 Edward iv (1478), 1 Henry vii (1486), and 18 Henry vii (1503). His wife was Alice Aylard, an heiress, and she died in 1515 (6 Henry viii). She was executrix to her husband's will, in which he desired to be buried at Stanmore. The will was dated July 28, and proved August 28, 1508. Years later, in 1572, we find the Aylard arms quartered with those of Evelyn in a grant of arms to George Evelyn of Long Ditton.

WILL OF ROGER EVELYN OF STANMORE

(P.C.C., Bennett, 4)

"In the name of God Amen, the twenty-eighth day of July Fifteen hundred and eight. I, Roger Evelyn of Stamar the More w^t in the Co. Middlesex, make and declare my last Will and Testament in the man and forme following, Firste I bequeath my soule to Almighty God and to His blessed Moder, our Lady Saint Mary, and to all saynts in Heaven and my body to be buried wⁱⁿ the churchyard of Our Lady of Stamar and my principall to be my mortuary after the manner of the country. Also I bequeath to the highe^r altar of the

¹ According to a MS. "History of the Evelyn Family," by Bray, preserved at Wotton, he is mentioned in the Harrow Court Rolls.

same church for tythes forgotten xvi^d. Item I bequeath to the high altar of the church of Harrow-on-the-Hill xii^d. Item I bequeath to the church of Our Lady of Stamar a redde cowe on her first calfe and the churchwardens to have the latting of the cowe so that the stokke may perpetually continue to the use of the church. Item I bequeath to the church ii of the best baron ewys that I have. Item I bequeath to our ladys werk at Stanmer 11^d. Item I bequeath to Alice my wif xx poolleys of bestes a bull, five score of my best schep at hir chose after my burying and moneths mynde. Item I bequeath to my wif viii hors the best of three hors coltes my dettes owing to me and my household stuffe. Item I bequeath to my fowre servantes iche of theym a wayning calf. Item I bequeath to my ii doughters Agnes and Margaret iiiii bullockes and to iche of theym xx s. to hir marriage. And the chyle that my wif ys wt all shal have oon bullock and xx s. to the marriage. And if it fayll my wif to have the part thereof. Also I bequeath to my ii sonnes John and Robert all the residue of my bestes schepes not bequeathed and yche of theym a hors colt. Item I bequeath to my ii sonnes a brede of free lond of John Warner lying in the fallowfield and it to be sow this yere w^t what of my wiffes proper costes and charge to the profit of my ii sonnes. Item I will that my wif doo deliver to John our heyre w^t in twel moneths and a day all the housyng and landes that she hath wtin the parishe of Harrow. And if she doo it not John my son shall shifte half of almannor of goodes that I have bequeathed to her and the goodes aforenamed that I have bequeathed to John my son Robert my son shall have it. Item I bequeath to John my son a grete brasse pot. Item I bequeath to Robert my son a litel brasse pot. Item I will that if any of my children faille iche of theym to be others heyre. Item I bequeath to John Colyn a gray mare. Item I bequeath to Henry Evelyn my brother a bay gilding and a don nagge. Item I will a trentall of masses to be songen for my soule. Item I bequeath xx lode of gravell to the High Way and it to be layd betwixt my gate and William Law is gate where that moost neede ys. The Residue of my goodes not bequeathed I give to Alice my wif. I will and ordeyne to myn executos the same Alice my wif

and John Warnar. And he to have vi s. viii d. for his labor. And my wife and he to dispose to the pleasure of God and helthe of my soule. Item I will that Robert Warryn and Henry Evelyn be overseers that my will be fulfilled and that my children have noo wrong. Witnesse that this is my last will Sr Edward Thorp parson John Warner yoman Henry Evelyn husbandman w^t many other moo.”

(Proved at Lambeth August 28, 1508, by Alice, relict, and John Warnar, executors.)

CHILDREN OF ROGER EVELYN

JOHN EVELYN, of whom presently.

ROBERT EVELYN of East Acton, Middlesex (in the parish of Ch. Acton in the Diocese of Westminster); second son, will dated October 16, 1543, proved January 12, 1543-44; desires to be buried in Churchyard in Acton. Married Petronilla, executrix to her husband. He had three children—William Evelyn, buried at Acton, September 12, 1543; John Evelyn, buried at Acton, November 18, 1539; and Margery Evelyn, buried at Acton, March 4, 1541-42.

AGNES EVELYN.

MARGARET EVELYN.

JOHN EVELYN of KINGSTON-ON-THAMES

JOHN EVELYN of Kingston-on-Thames, eldest son of Roger Evelyn, was the first of the family to settle in Surrey. He lived during four reigns, that of Henry VIII, Edward VI, Mary, and Elizabeth. He is mentioned in the will of his brother Robert, which is dated 1543. He was born in 1520. He was a tenant at Kingston of one Peter Bradsey in the reign of Edward VI¹ (1547-53), and was one of two wardens chosen yearly for collecting the sum of £6, 13s. 4d. for maintaining a priest to sing mass in Trinity Chapel, Kingston-

¹ Letter of George Evelyn, 1596, to Lord Treasurer Burghley. Dom. S. P., Eliz., vol. 261.

The Report of George Evelyn to Lord Burghley. Dom. S. P., Eliz., vol. 261.

on-Thames, which annuity had been left by one Robert Bradsey. His wife was the daughter and heiress of David Vincent of Long Ditton, Surrey.

Regarding the family of Vincent, Burke says: "This ancient family, which appeared to have possessed the manor of Swinford, Co. Leicester, A.D. 1264, removed from the Co. Northampton, wherein it had been established for ages, to the Co. of Surrey, upon the marriage of Thomas Vincent in the reign of Elizabeth, with Jane, only daughter and heiress of Thomas Lyfield of Stoke d'Abernon."

According to Brayley's *History of Surrey*, the manor of Long Ditton, which, with other monastic estates, had become the property of the Crown on the suppression of the monastery of St. Mary, Bishopsgate, in 1537, was in 1553 granted by Edward VI to David Vincent, keeper of the wardrobe at Richmond, afterwards one of the gentlemen of his bed-chamber, and witness to his will, in which the King bequeathed him a legacy of £100. According to the above-mentioned history, this David was the father of Mrs. Evelyn. He died in 1565 and was succeeded by his son Thomas afore-mentioned, who was knighted by Queen Elizabeth when she visited him at Stoke in 1613.

The manor of Cleygate, in Ditton, which had once belonged to the Abbot and convent of Westminster, but on its suppression by Henry VIII came into the possession of the Crown, was granted in the seventh year of the reign of Edward VI to John Child, paying a rent of £9, 8s. 8d., and not long after he sold the estate to David Vincent, Esq., who died seized of it. His son Thomas did not inherit it, but it became the property of George Evelyn, David Vincent's grandson.

John Evelyn was buried in St. Peter's Chapel, in the Tower of London, according to Lord Liverpool before 1568, his wife having been buried there about 1566. He left one son and a daughter, who married Robert Cole of Heston, Middlesex (belonging to an elder branch of the family now represented by the Earl of Enniskillen, Ireland).

GEORGE EVELYN of LONG DITTON, ETC.

GEORGE EVELYN of Kingston, Long Ditton, Godstone, and Wotton, only son of John Evelyn, was born in 1526 (reign of Henry VIII). Like his father, he lived through four reigns. About the year 1565, Queen Elizabeth granted him a monopoly for the manufacture of gunpowder, which had hitherto always come from abroad. The granting of monopolies by the Crown was an intensely unpopular practice, and excited a great deal of ill-feeling. George Evelyn had mills for the manufacture of gunpowder at Long Ditton, Godstone and Wotton, all in Surrey. John Evelyn (Sylva), grandson to George Evelyn, in a letter to Aubrey dated February 8, 1675, says :

“Not far from my Brother’s House (Wotton) upon the Streams and Ponds, since filled up and drained, stood formerly many *Powder Mills*, erected by my Ancestors, who were the very first who brought that Invention into *England* ; before which we had all our powder out of *Flanders*. My Grandfather transferr’d his Patent to the late Sir John Evelyn’s Grandfather of Godstone, in the same County ; in whose Family it continu’d till the late Civil Wars. That which I would remark upon this Occasion, is, the breaking of a huge Beam of fifteen or sixteen Inches Diameter in my Brother’s House (and since cramp’t with a Dog of Iron) upon the blowing up of one of those Mills, without doing any Mischief that I can learn ; but another standing below towards Shire, shot a Piece of Timber thro’ a Cottage, which took off a poor Woman’s Head as she was spinning.”

George Evelyn’s manufacture of gunpowder was very successful and probably furnished the means by which he bought the large estates of which he became the possessor.

About the year 1550 he married his first wife, Rose Williams, daughter and heiress of Thomas Williams, brother and heir of Sir John Williams, Kt. There is a small portrait of her in the Library at Wotton which represents her as a very plain lady with a sour expression. She is dressed in the costume of the period with an Elizabethan ruffle round her neck. She had a large family consisting of ten sons

and six daughters, but most of them died young. She died in July 1577 and was buried at Long Ditton.

George Evelyn became bailiff of Kingston in 1566.

On April 1, 1567, he came into possession of the manor of Long Ditton (see Brayley's *History of Surrey*), which he bought from Thomas Vincent, his mother's brother; in 1579 he bought Wotton, which belonged to a family of the name of Owen;¹ on July 1 of the same year² his son-in-law, Richard Hatton of Long Ditton (the husband of his daughter Mary, whom he had married in 1566), sold to him, for the sum of £200, Hill Place *alias* Hull Place, in Surrey, and 139 acres belonging to it in the parishes of Horsell, Byssheley, and Chobham, in Surrey; and on the same day Richard Hatton sold to George Evelyn,³ for the sum of £650, the fourth part of the manor of Wooton *alias* Wooten, also the fourth part of the advowson and patronage of the Church of Wooton *alias* Wooten, "and the free gift and disposition of the same," also the fourth part of other lands in Wooton, Abynger, Dorking and Shere, in Surrey. In 1585 the moiety of the manor of Abinger⁴ belonged to the Hill family, who conveyed it to George Evelyn. The other moiety belonged to Sir John Morgan, who settled it on his daughter Ann on her marriage with Edward Randyll, Esq., of Chilworth, and the latter in 1622 conveyed it to Richard Evelyn, youngest son of George Evelyn, who had left him the other moiety.

On April 24, 1588, George Evelyn came into possession of his Godstone estate,⁵ which he bought for £3100 from Thomas Powle of London, Clerk of the Court of Chancery. This included the manor of Merdenne, *alias* Mardon, and a house called Leighe Place in the parish of Godstone.

On October 11, 1588,⁶ George Evelyn bought from Richard Taverner, Esq., of the city of London, Norbyton Hall in Kingston-on-Thames and lands in Kingston-on-Thames.

¹ See Chan. Pro., Eliz., C. 7. 26.

² See Close Roll, 21 Eliz., part 9.

³ See Exchequer of Pleas Judgment Roll, 22 Eliz., Trinity Term, *memb.* 16, d.

⁴ See Brayley's *History of Surrey*.

⁵ See Close Roll, 30 Eliz., part 15.

⁶ See Close Roll, 30 Eliz., part 19.

The following account of Norbiton Hall is from Brayley's *History of Surrey* :—

“ In the reign of Edward VI the mansion called Norbiton Hall was the property and residence of Richard Taverner, Esq., a person of somewhat eccentric character, but a zealous Protestant ; and though a layman, he obtained a licence to preach in any place in the King's dominion. When High Sheriff for the county, he is said to have actually delivered a discourse before the University of Oxford, wearing a gold chain about his neck, and a sword by his side. The estate afterwards belonged to the Evelyn family, and was then described as a manor held of the bailiffs of Kingston. The present house, comparatively a modern structure, stuccoed, was the residence (in the early part of this century) of General Gabriel Johnstone, who purchased it of the representatives of the Lintall family in 1799.”

The manor of Milton in Surrey in the time of Edward II belonged to the prioress and nuns of Kilburn,¹ and after the suppression of that convent by Henry VIII the manor was annexed to the honour of Hampton Court. Queen Mary settled it and other estates on the restored monastery of Shene, which was again suppressed in the beginning of the reign of Elizabeth. After some temporary grants that queen conveyed it, by letters-patent dated 1599, to George Evelyn of Long Ditton. The mansion called Milton Court was built in the latter years of Queen Elizabeth's reign, probably by George Evelyn. It is a red brick house two stories high. The staircase is remarkable for the peculiar form and solidity of its rails and balusters.

George's second wife was a Mrs. Rogers, a young widow whose maiden name was Joan Stint. She was born in 1550 and was married to George Evelyn at St. Mary Aldermary, April 23, 1578. She died March 9, 1613, aged sixty-three, and was buried at Wotton. She had eight children, six of whom died young, which brings the total number of George Evelyn's children up to twenty-four. There were only six, however, of this enormous family who did not die young.

¹ See Brayley's *History of Surrey*.

In 1587¹ George Evelyn brought a lawsuit in the Court of Chancery against one Thomas Gunne of Ewell, whom he alleged to have unlawfully taken possession of some lands in Ewell which rightly belonged to George Evelyn. How the suit ended does not appear.

George Evelyn's grandson, John Evelyn (the diarist), mentions in a letter to Aubrey² that his grandfather, George Evelyn, cut down some oaks at Wotton. He says: "That which I would observe to you from the Wood, is, that where goodly Oaks grew, and were cut down by my Grand-father almost a hundred years since, are now altogether Beech; and where my Brother has extirpated the Beech, there rises Birch."

George Evelyn lived to the age of seventy-seven. He died at midnight between the 29th and the 30th of May 1603, about two months after the death of Queen Elizabeth, and was buried at Wotton on May 31.

WILL OF GEORGE EVELYN

(P.P.C., 35 Belein)

"In dei nomini amen. The twenthe day of Januarie and in the forteth yeare of the Raigne of our most gratiouse Sovereigne Ladie Elizabeth by the grace of God Queene of England Fraunce and Ireland, Defender of the Faith etc., I Georg Evelyn of Wotton in the County of Surrey esquier being sicke of bodie but whole and in perfect of remembraunce praise be given unto God Do make ordaine and devise this for my p(rese)nte testament containinge therein my laste will in manner and fourme followinge, that is to saie, firste and principallie I com(m)ende my sowle into the handes of Almightye God my maker and Creator and to his sonne Jhesus Christe my onlie true saviour trustinge by his deathe and passion I hope to be saved. And my bodie to be buried within the parrish Church of Wotton as aforesaide. Item I give unto threescore poore howsholders of the parryshe of Darkinge the some of three poundes of currant monie of

¹ See Chan. Pro., Eliz., E.c. 4, No. 25.

² See Aubrey's *History of Surrey*.

Englande that is to saie, to everie howsholder twelve pence to be paide at their dwellinge howses. And allso unto twentie howsholders of the parrishe of Wottoun the some of twentie shillinges that is to saie twelve pence a peece. And allso to thirtie poore howsholders of Abinger the some of thirtie shillinges that is to saie twelve pence everie howsholder as aforesaid. Allso to fortie poore howsholders of the parrishe of Sheere the some of fortie shillinges to be paide att their howses twelve pence a peece as aforesaid. Item I give unto everie one of my servauntes twentie shillings apeece. Item I give unto Thomas Bysshopp and to his wife dwellinge at Claigate the some of fortie poundes of like monie of England. Item unto Henrie Tilte of the parrishe of Kingstone the some of tenne shillinges. Item I give and bequeathe unto Katherine Eveline my daughter the some of five hundred poundes of good and lawfull monie of England which some of five hundreth poundes to be paide by my sonne John Eveline when that the said Katherine my daughter shall accomlishe and be of the full age of eightene yeares which said some of fower (*sic*) hundreth poundes the said John Evelyne hath receaved of my late ladie Davers or from her Assignes as a true debte from the saide ladie Davers to the onlie use of me the saide Georg Evelyn. And the other hundred of Mr. Edmondes for my woodd. Item I give and bequeath unto my sonne John Evelin and to his heires forever all those parcelles of landes and one tennement with the appurtenaunces lyinge and being in Kingstone uppon Thames which late I purchased of Richard Hatton gent. and Thomas Stamforde of Thisselworthe now in the occupations of William Stawltton and Thomas Elmer and their assignes provided alwaies and uppon this condiction that the said John Eveline or his heires shall well and trulie paie unto the said Katherine my daughter the foresaide some of five hundred poundes as aforesaide when that she shall accomlishe the saide age of eightene yeares as aforesaide without fraude or decepte yf that the saide Katherine shalbe then livinge. And further that yf the saide John Eveline shall make default of the paiment of the saide some of five hundreth poundes to the saide Katherine at or before the time aforesaide that then I give

and bequeathe unto the said Katherine my daughter and to her heires forever the said two parcells of landes and tennementes beforesaide lyinge and beinge in Kingstone uppon Thames aforesaide. And allso that my saide executors shall recover of the said John Eveline and of his heires or assignes the same some of five hundreth poundes before named by accion of debt. And allso further I do give and bequeathe unto the said John Eveline my sonne and to his heires forever all that my mannor called Norlyngton Hall lying and being in Kingstone aforesaide. And allso all other my landes and tennementes lienge and being in Kingstone aforesaide to the saide John Eveline and to his heires forever excepte all my lande in Hooke and nine acres of arrable lande lyinge and beinge in a common feilde called Surbiton feilde in the occupation of my sonne Thomas Eveline his assignes which saide nine acres of lande I do give and bequeathe unto the saide Thomas Eveline and to his heires for ever. And item I give and bequeathe unto my sonne Richard Eveline and to the heires of his bodie lawfullie begotten forever all those my Mannor landes Tennementes and appurtenaunces to the same belonginge lienge and being in the parrishe of Abinger in the Countie of Surrey. And allso all other my landes and tennementes, whatsoever lieng and beinge in the saide parrishe of Abinger to the said Richard Eveline my sonne and to his heires of his bodie lawfullie begotten as aforesaide. And allso further I give and bequeath to the said Richard Eveline one certaine lease and woodes lieng and being in East Clangdon in the saide Countie of Surry with all the tearme of yeares therein yet to come. And allso my verie minde and will is that Thomas Evelin, John Evelin, Robert Evelin and Richard Evelin shall have and enjoy all such landes and tennementes accordinge to their severall estates made and mentioned in their saide severall Deedes thereof made by me foresaide Georg Eveline. And further I give and bequeathe more unto the saide Katherine my daughter the some of eight hundreth poundes of good and lawfull monie of Englande when that the saide Katherine shall accomlishe the full age of eightene yeares yf that she shall so longe live, which saide some of eight hundreth poundes shalbe payde to the saide

Katherine at the time aforesaide by Robert Evelin my sonne. And in consideration thereof that my saide sonne Robert doe well and trulie paie the saide some of eight hundreth poundes I do frelie and clerelie forgive unto the saide Robert Evelin my sonne all other debtes and somes of monie whatsoever is to me owing by the saide Robert at the daie of my death. Item I give unto Marie Hatton the wife of Richard Hatton gent. the some of one hundreth poundes of current monie of England to be paie unto the saide Marie or her assignes within one yeare next after my decease. Item I give and bequeathe unto Fraunces Hatton the daughter of the said Richard Hatton the some of one hundred poundes of like monie of England to be paid unto the saide Fraunces at the day of her marriage. The residue of all my moveable goodes, debtes and chattelles whatsoever I now have (after my debtes paie my funerall expences donne my legacies performed and this my p(rese)nte testament in all thinges fullfilled) I wholie give and bequeath unto Joane my wife and to my sonne Richard Eveline whom I make my Executors of this p(rese)nt will and last testament. Allso I entreat and desier my cosen Georg Cole and William Comber gent. to be my overseers trustinge in them and everie of them that they will see my will accomplished as much as in them lieth. And for their paines I give to everie of them the some of three poundes six shillings eight pence a peece. Theis being Witnesses. William Mathew ser. Further I give to Mary Evelin one hundred poundes to be paie at xxth yeares of age. George Evelin-Robert Rogers."

(Will dated Jan. 20, 40 Eliz. ; pr. May 30, 1603, by Thos. Iles, proctor for Joane the relict, power being reserved to Rich^d Eveline.)

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN

By George's first wife he had three sons who survived him, Thomas, John and Robert, and one son called Richard by his second wife. He also had two daughters who survived, Mary, by his first wife, and Catherine by his second.

Between his four sons he divided his estates.

THOMAS, the eldest son, born 1551, inherited Long Ditton. His family is now extinct in the male line. Mrs. Gladstone, who was a Miss Glynne, was descended from him through Sophia Evelyn, daughter of Sir Edward Evelyn of Long Ditton, who married Sir Stephen Glynne, Bart.

JOHN, the second son, was born about 1554. He had Kingston at his father's death, also West Dean and Everley in Wiltshire. He purchased Godstone from his brother Robert on the latter's emigrating to Virginia. He was the direct ancestor of the present owner of Wotton.

ROBERT,¹ the third son, was born about 1556. Godstone, as stated before, was left to him. He was engaged as well as his brothers in the manufacture of gunpowder, but failed to make it pay, and even complained in a petition² to the Earl of Salisbury, Chief Secretary of State to James I, that he had had "insupportable losses and dangers by it almost to the whole overthrow of his estate." The petition failed in its object, so Robert Evelyn formed the plan of selling Godstone to his brother John and of emigrating to Virginia, where he hoped to retrieve his fortune. On October 19, 1590, he had married, at St. Peter's, Cornhill, London, Susannah, daughter of Gregory and Susannah Young, and he was at this time the father of a considerable number of children. He embarked about 1609 and became the founder of a family in America.

RICHARD EVELYN, the fourth surviving son of George Evelyn, was born in 1579 and inherited Wotton as his share in the family estates.

MARY EVELYN, daughter of George Evelyn of Long Ditton by his first wife, was born in 1550. She married, October 7, 1566, Richard Hatton of Long Ditton, third son of Richard Hatton, Esq., of Shrewsbury. She died September 19, 1612, and was buried at Long Ditton.

CATHERINE EVELYN, daughter of George Evelyn and his second wife Joan Stint, was baptized at Long Ditton, August 20, 1582. She married Thomas Stoughton (son of Sir Lawrence Stoughton), of Stoughton, near Guildford, Surrey.

¹ See Part VIII., "The Evelyns in America."

² Cecil MSS., at Hatfield.

On her marriage her father settled on her husband¹ the manor of Wolborough in Nutfield, consisting of a messuage and about 160 acres of land, and Daysies Farm in Burstow. Thomas Stoughton afterwards devised this manor to his brother (later Sir George Stoughton, Kt.), by whom it was sold in 1624. Sir Lawrence Stoughton represented Guildford in the latter years of Elizabeth, and James I knighted him at Bagshot in 1611.

The family mansion of the Stoughtons was called Stoughton Place,² and was situated near the centre of the manor of Stoughton. It was pulled down, but its site is still called Stoughton Gardens. Catherine Stoughton died November 15, 1610, her five children having all died before her. Her husband expired a few months later, viz. March 22, 1610-11. There is a brass to her memory in Stoke Church near Guildford.

¹ See Brayley's *History of Surrey*.

² *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

THE EVELYN FAMILY

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYNS OF HARROW-ON-THE-HILL
AND LATER OF KINGSTON

WILLIAM AVELIN OR EVELYN
of Harrow-on-the-Hill, *d.* 1476.

ROGER EVELYN = ALICE AYLAND,
of Stanmore, *d.* 1516.
Middlesex, *d.* 1508.

HENRY EVELYN,
l. 1508.

JOHN EVELYN = — VINCENT
of Kingston-on-Thames, *b.* 1520,
d. 1558. *d.* about 1566.

ROBERT = PETRONILLA
of East Acton, Middlesex, *d.* 1544.

Firstly, ROSE WILLIAMS, = GEORGE EVELYN = Secondly, JOAN STINT, widow of
d. of Thomas Williams, of Kingston, Long Ditton, Godstone and Wotton, *b.* 1550, *d.* 1613.
d. 1577. 1526, *d.* 1603.

Long Ditton. *Godstone.* *America.*

Wotton.

Thomas, of
Long Ditton.

John, of
Kingston
and Godstone.

Robert,
founder
of
American
branch.

Mary, *m.*
Richard
Hatton,
of Long
Ditton.

Richard,
of Wotton.

Catherine,
m. Thomas
Stoughton.

PART II

WOTTON BRANCH OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

CHAPTER I

RICHARD EVELYN

RICHARD EVELYN, the fourth surviving son of George Evelyn of Long Ditton, was born in 1579 or 1580 (reign of Elizabeth). He was the father of John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*. On the death of his father in 1603 he inherited Wotton as his share in the family estates. He must have been about twenty-four at this time. He was J.P. in 1623.

He purchased a house called Baynards¹ in Ewhurst, Surrey, with land belonging to it, in 1629, from one Richard Gurnard, who had bought it in 1628 from one James Jossey.

He married Eleanor Stansfield (daughter and heiress of John Stansfield of the Cliff, Lewes, Sussex) at St. Mary Overyes, Southwark, on Thursday, January 27, 1613-14. As she was born on November 17, 1598-99, she cannot have been more than fourteen at this time.

The following is a description of Richard Evelyn and his wife from the *Diary* of their second son, John Evelyn. The account of their appearance is borne out by two portraits of them at Wotton :—

“ My father named Richard was of a sanguine complexion, mixed with a dash of choler ; his hair inclining to light, which though very thick, became hoary by that time he was thirty years of age ; it was somewhat curled towards the extremity ; his beard, which he wore a little peaked, as the mode was, of

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles I, E. 65/8, and E. 71/16.

a brownish coulour, and so continued to the last, save that it was somewhat mingled with grey hairs about his cheeks which with his countenance was cleare and fresh coloured, his eyes quick and piercing, an ample forehead, manly aspect ; low of stature but very strong. So exact and temperate, that I have heard he had never been surprised by excesse, being ascetic and sparing. His wisdom was great, his judgment acute ; of solid discourse, affable, humble and in nothing affected ; of a thriving neate, silent and methodical genius ; discreetly severe, yet liberal on all just occasions, to his children, strangers and servants ; a lover of hospitality ; of a singular and Christian moderation in all his actions ; a justice of the Peace and of the Quorum ; he served his country as High Sheriff for Surrey and Sussex together. He was a studious decliner of honours and titles, being already in that esteem with his country that they could have added little to him beside their burden. He was a person of that rare conversation that upon frequent recollection, and calling to mind passages of his life and discourse, I could never charge him with the least passion or inadvertence. His estate was esteemed about £4000 per ann. well wooded and full of timber.

“ My Mother’s name was Elianor, sole daughter and heyresse of John Standsfield Esq. ; of an ancient and honourable family (though now extinct) in Shropshire, by his wife Elianor Comber of a good and well knowne house in Sussex. She was of proper personage ; of a browne complexion ; her eyes and haire of a lovely black ; of constitution inclyned to a religious melancholy, or pious sadness ; of a rare memory and most exemplary life ; for oeconomie and prudence esteemed one of the most conspicuous in her County.

“ Thus much in briefe touching my parents ; nor was it reasonable I should speake less of them to whom I owe so much.”

Richard Evelyn was Sheriff of Surrey and Sussex in 1634, which counties have ever since been under the government of two distinct Sheriffs. John Evelyn writes in his *Diary* :

“ 1634. My Father was appointed Sheriff for Surrey and Sussex before they were disjoyned. He had 116 servants in liverys, every one livery’d in greene satin doublets ; divers



RICHARD EVELYN OF WOTTON (1579-1646)
FATHER OF THE DIARIST

gentlemen and persons of quality waited on him in the same garbe and habit, which at that time (when 30 or 40 was the usual retinue of the High Sheriff) was esteem'd a great matter. Nor was this out of the least vanity that my Father exceeded (who was one of the greatest decliners of it), but because he could not refuse the civility of his friends and relations, who voluntarily came themselves, or sent in their servants. But my Father was afterwards most unjustly and spitefully molested by that jeering judge Richardson, for repreeving the execution of a woman, to gratifie my L. of Lindsay, then admiral; but out of this he emerged with as much honour as trouble."

The following was a petition by Richard Evelyn while he was High Sheriff:—

*"To the King's most Excellent Ma^{tie}
The humble peticon of Richard Evelyn Esq.¹*

"Humbly sheweth,—That yo^r Peticon being by yo^r sacred Ma^{tie} appointed Sherriffe of the Counties of Surrey and Sussex in the 9th yere of yo^r Ma^{ts} raigne did execute the said office wth all dilligence and integritie, yet notwth-standing some psons disaffected to him have untruly suggested to yo^r Ma^{tie} that he did presumptuouslie, and of his owne power reprove Magdalen Dutton and Elizabeth Wynne prisoners condemned by the lawe and by him to have bin executed. And although the Peticon can give satisfaccon of his innocencie therein yet he is likely to be questioned in Star-chamber for the supposed offence, through the wily information of his adversaries.

"Yo^r humble suppliant having noe way offended and well knowing yo^r Ma^{tie} to be so gracious to all yo^r loyall subjects as that they shall not be put to the defence of a Starchamber suite when they can make a cleere demonstracon of their innocence, Most humbly besecheth yo^r sacred Ma^{tie} to referre the examinacon thereof, to any of yo^r Ma^{ts} most ho^{ble} privy Councell to the end that they may certify yo^r Ma^{tie} whether he hath offended or not.

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, pp. 285, 294, 18.

“And he shall ever pray for yo^r Ma^{tie}, etc. At the Court at Oatlands 20 July, 1635.”

(Unsigned.)

The matter was looked into and resulted in the following report :—

“*May it please yo^r most Excellent Ma^{tie},*

“According to yo^r Ma^{ty} gracious Refference hereunto annexed, I have in the presence of Mr. Attorney Generall, taken consideracon of the annexed peticyon, and I finde Elizabeth Wynn convicted before the Judges of Assize for the County of Surrey, the tenth day of March in the ny nth yeare of yo^r Ma^{ty} Raigne for felony in breaking into a house and takeing away goods of the value of £3 5s., and Magdalen Dutton was at the same Assizes convicted for takeing a purse of ten pounds from one John Putch, and the said Wynn and Dutton at the said Assizes received judgment to be hanged, Richard Evelin the Pet^r being then High Sheriff. It appeares by the affdt of Robert Tayor the pet^{ts} undersheriff that the said Elizabeth Wynn was newly delivered of a child before the said Assizes, and that Sir Robert Hitcham one of yo^r Ma. then Judges of Assize, before whome the said Elizabeth was tryed, gave order to the said Undersheriff to respit her execucon for a moneth after her delivrance. And Mathew Aburne the said Tayers deputy deposeth he intended to have executed the said Elizabeth about the twentieth of Aprill next after the said Assizes, but that he then receaved a peticyon whereby yo^r Ma^{tie} had declared yo^r royall pleasure to be certified from the Justices of Assize how fitt the said Elizabeth Wynn was to receive yo^r Ma^{ty} mercy, and upon sight of the said peticyon the said Aburne deposeth he did forbear to execute the said Elizabeth Wynn, and for no other cause, and that she was brought to the next assizes from whence she was remaunded by the Judges to prison, there to remaine without Bayle. It appears by the kallander of the prisoners condemned at the aforesaid Assizes that the said Magdalen Dutton was reprimed because it was alleadged that she was then with childe, and at the moneths end after

her deliverie she was to be executed. And the said Magdalen Dutton being brought to the next Assizes held the one and twentieth of July following, was remaunded backe to remaine in Gaole without bayle. And the said Elizabeth Wynn and Magdalen Dutton was by your Ma^{ts} gracious comaund the tenth of May last transported to Guiana so that I conceive if it may stand with your Ma^{ts} good pleasure, Mr. Evelin is very capable of your Ma^{ts} grace and favour in this particular which in all humbleness I submitt to your princely Wisdome.

“February 11th, 1635. Vera copia ex^d.

p. THOMAM ALURED.”

Elizabeth, the eldest daughter, who had married Edward Darcy of Dartford, Kent, and who had a very unhappy married life, died December 15, 1634, at the age of twenty.

The grief occasioned by the death of Elizabeth Darcy hastened that of her mother, who died on September 25 the following year, 1635, aged thirty-seven. Before her death she sent for her four remaining children, the youngest of whom, Richard, was thirteen years old, and after giving them some pious instructions, handed to each of them a ring with her blessing. She then took her husband's hand and recommended her children to his care. She begged him to give the money which he intended to spend on her funeral to the poor instead. She sent for every servant in the house and gave to each some good advice. Her physicians, Dr. Merwell, Dr. Clement and Dr. Rand, could do nothing to save her, and although Dr. Sanders Duncombe tried to cure her with a celebrated powder, it was of no use, though she lingered on for many days. When her death was approaching, she laid her hands on all her children, and after resigning her soul to God, gently expired. She was buried at night on October 3rd, as near as possible to her daughter, Mrs. Darcy. The portrait of her at Wotton depicts her in a black dress with a large white lace collar. She has a long, pale, melancholy face surrounded by black curls.

Richard Evelyn possessed a house called Vachery in the

parish of Cranley, Surrey. Aubrey in his *History of Surrey* says :

“ In this parish (Cranley) is a Seat call'd Vachery, formerly belonging to the Onslow's, then the Baynard's and since to the Evelyn's of Wotton ; formerly surrounded with a Park, but now disparked.” John Evelyn refers to this in a footnote. He says : “ This was built by Sir George More of Lothesley in this County, and purchas'd of him by my Father Richard Evelyn Esq.”

On June 27, 1640, Richard Evelyn went to Bath by the advice of his physicians, and on July 7 his two eldest sons, George and John, having heard that their father was dangerously ill, rode as fast as they could from Guildford to see him. They found him very weak, but he lingered on for some months, returning home on September 8 with his son John.

Richard Evelyn died December 24, 1640. His son writes in his *Diary* :

“ My Father's disorder appeared to be a dropsy an indisposition the most unsuspected, being a person so exemplarily temperate. On the 24th of December he died, retaining his senses and piety to the last, which he most tenderly expressed in blessing us whom he now left to the world, and the worst of times, whilst he was taken from the evil to come.”

On January 2, 1641, he again writes :

“ We at night followed the mourning hearse to the Church at Wotton, when, after a sermon and funeral oration my Father was interred neere his formerly erected monument, and mingled with the ashes of our Mother, his deare wife. Thus we were bereft of both our parents in a period when we most of all stood in need of their counsell and assistance, especially mysele, of a raw, vaine, uncertain and very unwary inclination ; but so it pleased God to make tryall of my conduct in a conjuncture of the greatest and most prodigious hazard that ever the youth of England saw.”



ELEANOR STANSFIELD (1597-1635)
WIFE OF RICHARD EVELYN OF WOTTON



WILL OF RICHARD EVELYN

(Copied from Lord Liverpool's book)

Will dat. October 27, 1640 ; pr. February 9, 1640-41, by Geo. Evelyn (1 Evelyn).

"Leighe farm in Sussex after my death is settled upon my da. Jane Evelyn and her issue, and I give her £2000 in lieu of the legacy from her grandfather Mr. John Stansfield, and other demands. To my son John Evelyn lands at South Maling and also £4000 and to my son Richard Evelyn £1000, in lieu of the legacies from their ads^d grandfather Stansfield. Residue to my son Geo. Evelyn, sole ex'or. My cousin Robert Hatton, Esq., and my brother in law George Duncombe the elder, overseers. To my servant Richard Higham an annuity of £10. Wit., Geo. Duncombe, Robt. Rapley, Jerome Collins."

CHILDREN OF RICHARD EVELYN

RICHARD EVELYN and his wife had five children : ELIZABETH, born November 28, 1614 ; JANE, born February 16, 1615-16 ; GEORGE, born at Wotton, June 18, 1617 ; JOHN, born at Wotton, October 31, 1620 ; and RICHARD, born November 9, 1622.

ELIZABETH, the eldest daughter, had a very unhappy married life. She was married on October 25, 1632, at Blackfriars, London, at the age of eighteen, to Edward Darcy of Dartford, Kent. Her brother John remarks in his *Diary* that "he little deserved so excellent a person," and on his sister's death, December 15, 1634, at the age of twenty he describes her as "in vertue advanc'd beyond her yeares, or the merit of her husband, the worst of men." On the previous 2nd of June to her death she had given birth to a daughter, Elizabeth Darcy, who was born at Wotton, but the infant only lived till the following 17th of July.

John Evelyn, in a footnote in Aubrey's *History of Surrey*, says :

"This Darcy married for 2nd Wife the Lady Elizabeth Stanhope, Daughter of the Earl of Chesterfield. He ruined

both himself and Estate by his dissolute Life. He sold the Maneur of Episham and Horton to Mr. Mynne of Woodcot, whose Daughter and Coheir married my younger Brother Richard Evelyn, whose only Daughter married Mr. Montague, Son of the Chief Baron, who ruined both my Niece and himself by his scandalous Life. J. E., *i.e.* JOHN EVELYN."

JANE EVELYN,¹ the second daughter of Richard Evelyn, was twenty-six when her father died. On June 28 of the same year, 1641, she went to London with her brother John, who the next day sat for his portrait to a painter called Vanderborch, who painted it in oils. John gave the portrait to his sister on her request as a parting present, as he had resolved to leave England on account of the unpromising state of things at home, in which he found it difficult to prevent himself from taking part to the danger of himself and his relations. Jane did not marry till 1647, when over thirty. She married George Glanville of Devonshire. She had one son, William Glanville, whose daughter, Frances Glanville, married William Evelyn of St. Clere, Kent. Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, November 9, 1647: "My sister open'd to me her marriage with Mr. Glanville." Jane went to Gravesend to see her brother John off on his departure to France in July 1649. He says in his *Diary*: "It was about three in the afternoone I tooke oares for Gravesend, accompanied by my cousin Stephens and sister Glanville, who there supp'd with me and return'd."

Jane died in December 1651, and was buried at Wotton on the 19th of that month. Her brother John was abroad when she died. On January 2, 1652, he writes in his *Diary*: "News of my sister Glanville's death in childbed, which exceedingly affected me."

Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, June 1, 1691 :

"I went with my son and brother-in-law Glanville and his son, to Wotton, to solemnize the funeral of *my Nephew* (Glanville), which was perform'd the next day very decently and orderly by the Herauld, in the afternoon, a very great appearance of the country being there. I was the cheife mourner; the pall was held by Sir Francis Vincent, Sir

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles I, E. 10/49.

Richard Onslow, Mr. Tho. Howard (son to Sir Robert) and Capt. of the King's Guard, Mr. Hyldiard, Mr. James, Mr. Herbert *nephew to Lord Herbert* of Cherbury and cousin-german to my deceas'd nephew. He was laid in the vault of Wotton Church, in the burying-place of the Family. A great concourse of coaches and of people accompanied the solemnity."

On the death of his brother-in-law, George Glanville, Evelyn also writes :

"1702, *April 12*. My Brother-in-law Glanville departed this life this morning after a long languishing illness, leaving a son by my sister, and two grand-daughters. Our relation and friendship had been long and greate. He was a man of excellent parts. He died in the 84th year of his age, and will'd his body to be wrapp'd in lead and carried downe to Greenwich, put on board a ship and buried in the sea, betweene Dover and Calais, about the Goodwin sands, which was don on the Tuesday or Wednesday after. This occasioned much discourse, he having no relation at all to the sea. He was a gentleman of an ancient family in Devonshire, and married my sister Jane. By his prudent parsimony he much improv'd his fortune. He had a place in the Alienation Office, and might have ben an extraordinary man had he cultivated his parts."

GEORGE EVELYN,¹ eldest son of Richard Evelyn, was born at Wotton, June 18, 1617. He was educated at the free school at Guildford, and afterwards completed his education at Trinity College, Oxford.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN OF TRINITY COLLEGE,
OXFORD, TO HIS FATHER, RICHARD EVELYN, ESQ., OF
WOTTON, 1634.²

"HONOR^d SIR,—I cannot omitte writinge unto you, deeming it fit to make knowne unto you, that I am in good

¹ Chan. Pro. before 1714, Hamilton, Evelyn v. Mansel, 441/69; Chan. Pro. before 1714, Hamilton, 448/28; Chan. Pro. before 1714, Whittington, Evelyn v. Offley, 320.

² Add. MSS., 15,948, fo. 2, British Museum.

health, and that our acte is at hand. Our acte is A Saterdag soen which, wilbe an occasion of expenses to me, by reason of friends which come to our acte, and knowing that I am in ye University will visite me. Wherefore, I would entreate you to furnish me wth 2 pieces by Mr. Hill, (who is a constant visitor of our acte,) assuringe you moreover that I have not as yet, neither will I consume my money idly, but uppon good grounds. The Quarter is expired, and I would have made knowinge unto you in this letter what my Battalls amounts too, if I could have gotten the Bowser (*sic*) to have summoned them up. Wherefore betwixt this and our acte I will certify you in a letter what my Battells and all other necessarys which I have had, come too. So remembering my Duty to you and my (Honord Mother) and my love to my brothers and sisters but in pticuler to my Brother and Sister Darcy, hoping that I shall enioy his Society heere at our acte: In all haste, I rest

“Yo^r obedient Sonne

(Signed) GEORGE EVELYN.

“TRIN. COLL. OXON.

this 30 of June 1634.”

(*Addressed.*)

“To his very loveinge father Richard Evelyn Esq. and high sherife of the countys of Surrey and Sussex, at his house att Wooton in Surrey neere Dorkinge *presente these with speede.*

“Leave this letter w^h Mr. Thomas Cole Woollen draper att the White Lyon in Powles Churchyard London to be delivered accordinge to the Supscription.”

His father's reply is written upon the other side of this letter.

LETTER FROM RICHARD EVELYN TO HIS SON GEORGE IN REPLY TO HIS SON'S LETTER

“SONN GEO.—I rec^d yo^r letter dated 30 January 1634 and have herewi^h sent you 2 pieces accordinge to yo^r desire, hoping you wilbe carefull howe you spend it and not to wast yo^r money wi^hout good cause, for as I would not have you baseand uncivill in companye, yett would I have you discrete and prudent in yo^r expence, neither would I have you to

visitte the inns or taverns so often, for that will by degrees bringe you to a habitte and a delight in keeping companye w^{ch} will draw much charge and needles expence uppon you, and especyallye you must be carefull what companye you keepe, that you associate yorselve with none but sivill men, and of them you shall be sure to learne no hurt ; now you must be carefull of yor behavyer, for you are in a publicke place and many eyes are uppon you, and take heede of beinge ov^rcom wth wine or strong beere (for any man's pleasure) and beware of flatterers that will sooth you upp in folly, and insinuate into you for their own ends w^{ch} may tend to your overthrow. And above all things be sure to serve God and depend uppon him, and then no doubt but he will bless you and defende and keepe you in all your wayes. And now make good use of your tyme, and apply yourself to your studye, for that will doo you good when other things will faile and my joye be increased by your well doings. Your brother Harye is com to see you and designes to bring you home with him after the Acte. I would have you advise with your Tutor whether your Tutor goes into the country this vacatyen, which if he doo then (if your Tutor approve well of it) you maye come with your Brother and staye till your Tutor think it fitt for you to come againe.

"I send no money now to your Tutor but when I heere from him that he desyres to have anye it shalbe speedely sent.

"If your Tutor goe into the country this vacation, I would have you aske him if he will come along with you and staye heere awhile.

"And so both myself and your carefull Mother praying God to pour down his blessing uppon you and so preserve and keepe you from all evil,

"I rest

Your loveinge and carefull
father "

(Unsigned.)

(Endorsed.)

My Sonn Geo. his letter to me 30 January 1634.

My letter to him 10 July 1634.

My Annsweare 10 July 1634.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN TO HIS FATHER,
RICHARD EVELYN ¹

" I know you have long desired to heere of my welfaire, and the totall series of his Majesty's entertainment whilst hee was fixed in the center of our Academie.

" The Archbishop our Ld. Chauncelour (Laud) and many Bishops, Doctor Bayley or Vice-Chauncelor wth the rest of the Doctors of the University, together wth the Maior of the City, and his brethren, rode out in state to meet his Majesty, the Bishops in their pontificall robes, the Doctors in their scarlet gowns and their black capps (being the habite of the University), the Mayor and Aldermen in their scarlett gowns, and 60 other townsmen all in blacke satin doublets and in old fashion jacketts. At the appropinquatio of ye King, after the Beedles staffs were delivered up to his Majesty in token yt they yielded up all their authority to him, the Vice-Chauncelor spooke a Speech to the King, and presented him wth a Bible in the Universitys behalfe, the Queene wth Camden's Britannia in English, and the Prince Elect (as I tooke it) wth Croke's Politicks ; all of them wth gloves (because Oxford is famous for gloves). A little higher the City where ye Citye bounds are terminated, the Maior presented his Majesty wth a large guilt capp, et tenet vicinitaten opinio the Recorder of the City made a speech to his Majesty. In the extreme of the Universitie, at St. John's College, he was detained wth another speech made by a Fellow of the house The speech being ended, he went to Christe-church, schollers standing on both sides of the street according to their degrees and in their formalitys, clemantes, Vivate Rex noster Carolus. Being entered Christ-church he had another speech made by the Universitie oratour, and student of the same house ; the subject of all which speeches being this, expressing their joy and his welcome to ye Universitie. Then retiring himsele a little he went to prayers ; they being ended, soone after to supper, and then to the play, whose subject was the Calming of the Passions ; but it was generallie misliked of the Court, because it was so grave, but especially because

¹ Add. MSS., British Museum.

they understood it not. This was the first days entertainment.

“The next morning he had a sermon in Christ-church, preached by Browne the proctor of the University, and a student of the house. The sermon being ended, the Prince Elect and Prince Rupert went to St. Mary’s, where there was a congregation, and Prince Rupert created Mr. of Arts, also many nobles wth him. The reason why the Prince Elect was not created Mr. of Arts, was because Cambridge our Sister had created him before. The congregation done, the King, Queene, and all the nobles went to the Schools, (the Glory of Christendome) where in ye publick Library, his Majesty heard another speech, spoaken by my Ld. Chamberlans 3rd sonne, and of Exeter College, w^{ch} speech the K. liked well. From the Schools the K. went to St. Johns to dinner, where the Archbishop entertained his Majesty wth a magnificent dinner, and costly banquet (dessert). Then a play made by the same house. The play being ended, he went to Christ-church, and after supper to another play called the Royall Slave, all the actors performing in a Persian habite, w^{ch} play much delighted his Majesty and all the nobles, commending for the best y^t ever was acted.

“The next morning he departed from the University, all the Doctors kissing his hand, his Majesty expressing his kingly love to ye University, and his countenance demonstrating unto us that he was well pleased wth this his entertainment made by us schollars. After the King’s departure there was a Congregation called where many Doctors, some Maisters of Art and a few Batchelours were created, they procuring it by making friends to ye Paulsgrave. There were very few that went out that are now resident, most of them were Lds. and gentlemen. A Doctor of Divinity and Batchelour of Arts were created of our house (Trinity) but they made special friends to gett it.

“Wth the £30 you sent me I have furnished me wth those necessarys I wanted, and have made me two suits, one of them being a blacke satin doublett and black cloth breeches, the other a white satin doublett and scarlett hoase; the

scarlett hoase I shall weare but little heare, but it will be comely for me to weare in the country.

“Yor desire was that I should be as frugal in my expenses as I could and I assure you, honoured Sir, I have been; I have spent none of it in riot or toyes. You hoped it would be sufficient to furnish me and discharge my battailes for this quarter, but I feare it will not, therefore I humbly entreat you to send me £6. I know what I have already, and wth this I send you, will be more than enough to discharge these months, but I know not what occasion may fall out.

“TRIN. COLL. OXON., 26, 9th 1636.”

After leaving Oxford George entered himself at the Middle Temple, which it was the custom for young men of good position to do, though he had no intention of taking up the law as a profession. On May 28, 1640, at the age of twenty-three, he married a daughter of Daniel Caldwell by Mary, daughter of George Duncombe, Esq., of Albury. The wedding took place at Albury, near Wotton. The bride was an heiress, according to the *Diary*, and belonged to an old Leicestershire family. Her married life lasted but a short time, as she died four years later, May 15, 1644. She left one son, who was christened George.

George's father died about seven months after this marriage, and George being the eldest son succeeded him at Wotton. He married again, and his second wife was Mary, daughter of Robert Offley of Kettleby, Cheshire, and Dalby, Leicestershire. She was the widow of Sir John Cotton of Kent, and belonged to an old Staffordshire family. In 1641, George Evelyn became M.P. for Reigate at the age of twenty-four. He stood for Haslemere in 1661, for Surrey in 1678-79, and again in 1679, 1680-81, and 1688-89.

John Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, January 1, 1651 :

“I wrote to my brother at Wotton about his garden and fountaines.”

In the year 1652, George Evelyn set about to improve the garden at Wotton. He intended to lay out the garden in the Italian style, which had been newly introduced into England by Inigo Jones, the celebrated architect of the

Italian style. The latter died the year before, July 5, 1651. Up till now the house had remained almost untouched since the reign of Elizabeth when George Evelyn, the original purchaser, lived there. It was then surrounded by a moat.

His grandson George had two advisers in his work of planning the garden ; one was his younger brother John and the other was Captain George Evelyn, the son of his uncle Robert and formerly Governor of Kent Island. This Captain George Evelyn had recently been employed in laying out the mansion and grounds of Albury Park, near Wotton, which was then the Surrey residence of the Dukes of Norfolk.

In a footnote in Aubrey's *History of Surrey*, John Evelyn says :

“ My kinsman, Capt. George Evelyn, (who had been a great Traveller) built the great Dining-Room and Apartment for Mr. Henry Howard, (after Duke of Norfolk) in order to a noble Palace, &c. But the Duke (after his virtuous Lady's Death) growing Dissolute, neglected this Design, and all other honourable Things. His Grandfather, who purchased Albury, would have sold any Estate he had in England, (Arundel Excepted) before he would have parted with this his Darling Villa, as I can show you in that brave Person's Letters to me from Padoua, 1646.”

Captain George Evelyn had travelled a great deal, and among other places had visited Italy, and had there made a study of the Italian style.

On February 26, 1649, three years before the alterations were made, John Evelyn wrote in his *Diary* :

“ Came to see me Capt. Geo. Evelyn my kinsman ye greate traveller, and one who believed himself a better architect than really he was, witness the portico in the garden at Wotton ; yet the greate room at Albury is somewhat better understood. He had a large mind but overbuilt everything.”

The Doric portico or temple mentioned in this passage was designed by Captain George Evelyn. It was at a distance of about 390 feet from the house. In the central niche of the portico was placed a stone statue of Venus holding a dolphin, out of whose mouth the water ran into a sculptured stone basin underneath. On the sides of the portico were

two smaller niches, containing boys' heads in marble throwing up water which fell into two stone basins. On the ceiling were painted the four elements, with Flora in the middle and the arms of the family. The floor was paved with marble. The portico still exists in good preservation, but the painting on the ceiling has disappeared. Venus with the dolphin and the boys' heads still remain.

Some years before, in 1643, John Evelyn had, with his brother's permission, made a few improvements at Wotton, which he mentions in his *Diary* in these words :

" May 2, 1643. Resolving to possess mysele in some quiet if it might be, in a time of so great jealousy, I built by my Brother's permission a study, made a fishpond, an island, and some other solitudes and retirements, at Wotton, which gave the first occasion of improving them to those water-works and gardens which afterwards succeeded them, and became at that time the most famous of England."

This passage shows that the earlier improvements gave to George Evelyn the idea of the changes which he accomplished in 1652 and 1653.

There exist at Wotton some etchings of the house by John Evelyn showing it as it was before and after the alterations in 1652 and 1653, but as the perspective is very bad (in one sketch the house looks as if it were on the top of a hill instead of in a valley) it does not give a very good idea of it. On March 22, 1652, John Evelyn says in his *Diary* :

" I went with my Brother Evelyn to Wotton to give him what directions I was able about his garden, which he was now desirous to put into some forme ; but for which he was to remove a mountain overgrowne wth huge trees and thicket, with a moate within 10 yards of the house. This my Brother immediately attempted, and that without greate cost, for more than a hundred yards south, by digging downe the mountaine and flinging it into a rapid stream, it not only carried away the sand, etc., but filled up the moate, and level'd that noble area, where now the garden and fountaine is. The first occasion of my Brother making this alteration was my building ye little retiring place betweene the greate wood eastward next the meadow, where sometime after my

Father's death I made a triangular pond, or little stew, with an artificial rock after my coming out of Flanders."

The gardens were laid out in the Italian style, with parterres, terraces, and walks leading up to the portico, in front of which was a fountain throwing water to the height of about thirteen feet. The fountain still exists, but nothing now remains of the Italian garden. In the same year, 1653, George Evelyn built the banqueting hall (a fine room in the Italian style), about 38 feet long, 20 feet wide, and 20 feet high. The ornamentation, however, is quite modern, having been added by William John Evelyn. Up till the latter's time it was used as an orangery; there was no entrance to it from the house, and it was only by attaching a corridor to it that it became possible to use it as a dining-room. The ceiling is in the Italian style, divided into compartments by guilloche ornaments. The cornice is 42 inches in girth, and is composed of dentils, mouldings, and enrichments of the same. The mouldings in the doors and joiner's work are in egg-and-anchor or egg-and-tongue pattern.

Most of George Evelyn's children died young. By his first wife he had five sons, all of whom died in infancy except the youngest, George. By his second wife he had nine children, five sons and four daughters, but they all except three died young. On the death of George's third son Richard, by his second marriage, at the age of two, he received the following letter from his brother John:—

"TO MY BROTHER G. EVELYN,

"SAYS-COURT, 15 Decemb. 1656.

"DEAR BRO.¹—I am so deeply sensible of the affliction which presses you, that I cannot forbear to let you understand how greate a share I have in the losse, and how reciprocal it is to us. For yr part, I consider that your sex and your knowledge do better fortifie you against the com'on calamities and vicissitudes of these sublunary things; so that precepts to you were but impertinencys; though I also find that the physitian himselfe has sometimes neede of the physitian;

¹ From the Epistolary Correspondence of John Evelyn in the *Memoirs of John Evelyn*, edited by William Bray.

and that to condole and to counsell those who want nothing to support them but their owne vertue, is to relieve them of a considerable part of their affliction ; But the feare which I have that the tendernesse of so indulgent a mother's affection (as is that of my deare lady) may insensibly transgresse its bounds, to so huge a prejudice as we should all receive by it, (if her immoderate grieffe should continue) makes me choose rather, being absent, to contribute what aydes I can towards its remedy, then, being present, to renew her sorrows by such expressions of resentment as of course use to fall from friends, but can add little to the cure, because but compliment. Nor do I hereby extenuate her prudence, whose virtue is able to oppose the rudest assaults of fortune ; but present my arguments as an instance of my care, not of my diffidence. I confesse there is cause of sadnesse ; but all who are not stoicks know by experience, that in these lugubrious encounters our affections do sometimes outrun our reason. Nature herselfe has assigned places and instruments to the passions : and it were as well impiety as stupidity to be totaly ἀστόργος and without natural affection ; but we must remember withall that we grieve not as persons without hope ; least while in sacrifice to our passions, we be bound to offend against God, and by indulging an over kind nature redouble the losse, and loose our recompence. Children are such blossomes as every trifling wind deflowres, and to be disordered at their fall, were to be fond of certaine troubles, but the most uncertaine comforts ; whilst the store of the more mature which God has yet left you, invite both your resignation and yr gratitude. So extraordinary prosperity as you have hitherto ben encircled with, was indeede to be suspected ; nor may he think to beare all his sailes, whose vessell (like yours) has been driven by the highest gale of felicity. We give hostages to Fortune when we bring children into the world : and how unstable this is we know, and must therefore hazard the adventure. God has suffer'd this for yr excercise : seeke then as well your consolation in his rod, as in his staff. Are you offended that it has pleased him to snatch yr pretty babes from the infinite contingencies of so perverse an age, in which there is so little temptation to live ? At

least consider, that your pledges are but gon a little before you : and that a part of you has taken possession of the inheritance which you must one day enter, if ever you will be happy. Brother, when I reflect on the losse as it concerns our family in general, I could recall my owne, and mingle my tears with you (for I have lost some very deare to me) ; but when I consider the necessity of submitting to the divine arests, I am ready to dry them againe and be silent. There is nothing of us perished ; but deposited : And say not thay might haue come later to their destiny : *Magna est felicitas, cito esse felicem* : 'tis no smalle happnesse to be happy quickly. That which may fortune to all, we ought not to accuse for a few : and it is but reason to support that patiently, which cannot be prevented possibly. But I haue now don with the philosopher, and will dismissee you with the divine. ' Brother, be not ignorant concerning them which are asleepe, that, you sorrow not euen as others which have no hope : for, if we belieue that Jesus died and rose againe, euen so them also which sleepe in Jesus will God bring with him.' They are the words of St. Paul, and I can add nothing to them. In the mean tyme auxiliariys against his enemy cannot render it the more formidable : and though all grieffe of this nature haue a just rise, yet may it end in a dangerous fall : our deare Mother is a sad instance of it : and I conjure you to use all the art, and all the interest you are able, to compose your selfe, and consoleate yr excellent lady, which (after I haue presented my particular resentiments) is what I would haue hereby assisted you in, who am,

“ Dear Brother, &c.

“ *Et consolamini alij alios istis sermonibus.*”

“ TO MY LADY COTTON,¹

“ FROM HER BROTHER-IN-LAW JOHN EVELYN

“ MADAME,—It was by a Visite which was made us this afternoon, that we heard how it had pleased God to dispose of the little sweete Babe ; and withall, how much the losse of it does yet afflict you. Whatsoever concernes you in this

¹ From the *Memoirs of John Evelyn*, edited by William Bray.

kind is, Madame, a com'on diminution to the Familie, and touches every particular of it; but so as our resentiments held proportion to the cause, and that the losse of one dos not take away the comfort and the comtentment which we ought to have in those who are left; since we must pretend to nothing here, but upon the conditions of Mortalitie, and ten thousand other accidents; and that we may learne to place our felicities in our obedience to the Will of God, which is allways the best, and to sacrifice our affections upon that Altar, which can consecrate our very losses, and turne them to our greatest advantage. Madame, I have heard with infinite satisfaction how graciously God had restor'd you your health: Why should you now impaire it againe by an excesse of Griefe, which can recalle nothing that God has taken to himselfe in exchange without a kind of ingratitude? There be some may happly sooth your Ladyship in this sensible part (which was the destruction of my deare Mother); But your Ladyship's discretion ought to fortifie you against it before it become habitual and dangerous. Remember that you have an Husband who loves you intirely; that you have other Children who will neede your conduct; that you have many Friends, and a prosperous Family. Pluck up your spirits then, and at once banish these hurtfull tendernesses. It is the vote of all who honor and love you; it is what God requires of you, and what I conjure you to resolve upon; and I beseech your la'p., let this expresse bring us some fairer confidences of it, then the com'on report dos represent it, to the grieve of

“Madame, Your, &c.

“SAYES COURT, 9 Sept. 1662.”

On August 8, 1664, George Evelyn's second wife died and was buried at Wotton.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON TO JOHN
EVELYN OF SAYES COURT ¹

“WOTTON, 20 Feb. 1684.

“DEARE BROTHER,—I received your letter by my Bro: Granvill: who I praise God, is well recovered, and I hope the

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 2.

country fresh Aire, will restore him to his wonted health & constitution. As to ye moneys you have loged at my cousen John's Lodging; I shall in convenient tyme dispose off, & for ye remaynder, you may take your own tyme to repay it. My occasions will call me to Towne some tyme in Easter Tearme, when we shall have oppotunity to adjust all matters: Brother I find by your Letter, Y^t I have the fate of other men, to be misrepresented to his present Majesty, but you, and all men that know me, must witness, that I was always loyall to his late Ma^{ty} (of blessed memory) and am now to his present Majesty and shall so continue to my life's end, praying for his long life and ye happiness of his Governmnet. The only answer I can give to ye foote of your Letter is, That as to the choice of knights of ye sheere into the next Parliam^t, I leave my country men to their own freedome: With my service to all our Relations.

"I am,

D. Bro.

Y^r most affectionate Brother
& Serv^t,

(Signed) GEO. EVELYN."

(In John Evelyn's handwriting endorsed.)

From my bro. G. E., Wotton,

20: Feb. 168 $\frac{1}{2}$.

Concerning his recpt^t of £200 & of his
resolution of serving in Parliam^t if chosen:

Answered 22 ditto.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON TO JOHN EVELYN OF SAYES COURT ¹

"WOTTON, 30th March 85.

"DEARE BROTHER,—I doe heartily condole the decease of y^t most excellent creature my Neece Mary Evelyn; it is to you my sister & to all her relations a most irreparable losse, but we must all submit to God's will in these & all other his dispensations, & I know you and my sister hath that religious and Xtian prudence as to moderate your sorrow, knowing she is a blessed saint in Heaven and taken away

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 3.

hence from the evils to come, w^{ch} must be your consolation. I have sent my servant in purpose to enquire after all your healths (w^{ch} was my intentions before I received your last obliging letter) which acquaints me of the kindness and favors of D^r Daye and M^r Bowzer expressed to M^r Onslow & my selfe in the approaching elections for K^t of the Sheere. I must deale ingeniously wth you, it was not my desire any more to stand for a parliam^t man, haveing paid so deare for ye honor, & been sufficiently satisfied their is nothing but change and trouble in such employs ; and to shew you how unwillingly I am pswaded to stand againe, I have not solicited one vote either for myselfe or friend, but leave the freeholders to their owne choyse at the day of the Election. There have been many of my Neighbours & country men wth me to desire I would serve them in this ensueing Parliam^t I have desired their excuse but when I could not prevaile wth them to let me be at home & in quiet I told them y^t if they did choose me, & M^r Onslow, we would both serve them, soe we are obliged to doe it if once chosen, and thus stands the business. I find by D^r Parr's letter to you that M^r Bowzer & himselfe have been industrious to get voices for us without our knowledge or any applications from us to any of them, & therefore these favors are the more to be esteem'd & acknowledg^d by us both. What directions I can give you, how to improve their favors not at present for we are kept in the darke when the time and place wilbee appointed for the Election. The County Court is next Wensday at Guildford & by ye statute the Sheriffe then is to appoint tyme and place and the day, but we have by informaccon that the Sheriffe intends on Wensday to open ye writt for Elections, & by subsequent then to proceed to an election, & tis beleev'd he will play that tricke a' purpose to surprise an Election ; but the freeholders have notice of this intended design and wilbee in some numbers ready there to attend ye progresse & method he will take, and so demand a pole (if there be occasion) y^t so there may be a fair proceeding on all partys, and men may have time to come to give their voices. It is left to ye discretion of ye gentlemen whether they will come a' Wensday morning to ye County Court, or stay till a further notice if

any by the Sheriffe shall be given, but I am of opinion it may be on Wensday and therefore most of ye freeholders in these parts will appeare at Guildford a' Wensday next, w^{ch} you may intimate (if you thinke fit) to M^r Abbis y^r Neighbour who is a leading man (as D^r Parr's Lre hints), and has been very instrumental for voices for M^r Onslow & my selfe, & now at this instant I have certain intelligence that Wensday next is designed for ye day of Election a' purpose to serve Sr A. V. & Sr Ed. E., so y^t if they desire to beat ye election, they must not faile to be a' Guildford a' Wensday morning & they have liberty to give their voices for whom they please when they come into ye feild. I suppose ye ffreeholders in Southwarke and Bermunsey may have an alarum of this design before this can kiss y^r hands. It is resolved by us to be at no charges, the ffreeholders must beat themselves which they have in two former elections done, & are resolved not to put ye gentlemen they vote for to any expense, they having formerly paid so deare for it. Having tired you with this account give me leave now to tell you that I have ordered M^r Spencers clerke to rec. the £200 w^{ch} you so long time lodged at my Nephew John's lodgings, & in order thereunto have sent my nephew a' letter & note under my hand for him to pay it M^r Rich. Smyther, M^r Spencers clerke, that willbe a sufficient discharge to you & my nephew for ye paym^t of the £200. I am sorry I have burthened my cousen so long wth ye custody of it but I beg yrs & his parden for it. May all our services be prsented to you & my sorrowing sister & all our cousens. My Brother Glanville remembers kindly to you all. He is in good health God be praised.

" I am

Y^r most affectionate Brother
& humble servant,

(Signed) GEO. EVELYN."

(Endorsed.)

From my bro: Geo: Evelyn,
Wotton, 30 Mar: 85.
Concerning his election for
Knight of the Sher. &c.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON TO JOHN
EVELYN OF SAYES COURT ¹

“DEARE BROTHER,—Your ioynt Congratulations with other of my good friends and Relations upon the birth of my grandson, adds to the obligations upon all occasions you exert towards me, and consequently must repeat my high sentiments of them. I thanke God after many miscarriages my Daughter Evelyn hath brought a very lusty Boy into the world, & I hope by your hearty prayers for his life, he may be a ioy and happiness to ye family, in ye continuance of ye name, which by God’s blessing hitherto hath prospered amongst us, and you have my hearty prayers yt my little Nephew at Deptford may live to recomfort you & my sister in ye losses of my deere Neeces.

“D^r Br.—I have but a few days to spend heere ; from ye 17 instant I shalbee 69 years old. I would gladly see you & my sister at Wotton ere I dye. I hope before the sumer be ended you may be at leisure to visite your Natale Solum, and give us the happiness of your enioym^t where you know your welcome to him who is and ever wilbee D^r B^r,

“Your most affectionate Brother
& humble Ser^t,
(Signed) GEO: EVELYN.”

“WOTTON, 9 June 86.

“Mr. Strickland tells me £100 shalbee paid this weeke the last about Midsummer, which is well.

“I have given M^r Strickland a note of the time of payment of this last £500 that at your leisure you may adiust the Interest & at your good tyme all accounts between us.”

(Endorsed.)

Bro: Evelyn
9 June 86.
Concerning ye birth of
a son at Wotton & of
mony &c.

George Evelyn survived his wife five years, dying on October 4, 1699, at the age of eighty-two. He left no male

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 4.

heir, so his brother John succeeded him at Wotton. The following account of him is from the *Diary* of his brother :—

“ Oct. 4, 1699. My worthy Brother died at Wotton in the 83rd year of his age, of perfect memory and understanding. He was religious, sober and temperate, and of so hospitable a nature that no family in the county maintain'd that ancient custom of keeping, as it were, open house the whole yeare in the same manner, or gave more noble or free entertainment to the county on all occasions, so that his house was never free. There were sometimes 20 persons more than his family, and some that staid there all the summer, to his no small expence; by this he gain'd the universal love of the county. He was born at Wotton, went from the free schoole at Guildford to Trinity Coll. Oxford, thence to the Middle Temple as gentlemen of the best quality did, but without intention to study the law as a profession. He married the daughter of Colwall, of a worthy and ancient family in Leicestershire, by whom he had one son; she dying in 1643, left Geo. her son, an infant, who being educated liberally after travelling abroad return'd and married one Mrs. Gore,¹ by whom he had several children, but only three daughters surviv'd: he was a young man of good understanding, but overindulging his ease and pleasure, grew so very corpulent, contrary to the constitution of the rest of his father's relations, that he died. My Brother afterwards married a noble and honourable lady relict of Sr John Cotton she being an Offley, a worthy and ancient Staffordshire family by whom he had several children of both sexes. This lady died leaving only two daughters and a son. The younger daughter died before marriage; the other afterwards married Sr Cyril Wych, a noble and learned gentleman (son of Sr — Wych), who had ben Ambass at Constantinople, and was afterwards made one of the Lords Justices of Ireland. Before this marriage, her only brother

¹ Register of the Vicar-General of Canterbury, Marriage Licenses. “George Evelyn of Wotton—bachelor, aged about 23 years, and Mrs. Catherine Gore of Chelsea—spinster, aged about 19 years, with the Consent of her father, Robert Gore of the same merchant.” (Married at St. Luke's, Chelsea, Dec. 19, 1667.)

married the daughter of — Eversfield of Sussex, of an honourable family, but left a widow without any child living ; he died about 1691, and his wife not many years after, and my Brother resettled the whole estate on me. His sister Wych had a portion of £6000 to w^{ch} was added about £300 more ; the three other daughters, with what I added, had about £5000 each. My Brother died on 5 Oct. in a good old age and greate reputation, making his beloved Lady Wych sole executrix, leaving me only his library and some pictures of my father, mother, etc. She buried him with extraordinary solemnity, rather as a nobleman than as a private gentleman. There were, as I computed, above 2000 persons at the funerall, all the gentlemen of the county doing him the Last honors. I return'd to London, till my lady should dispose of herselfe and family."

WILL OF GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON

George Evelyn of Wotton, Co. Surrey, Esq. Will dat. July 22, 1699 ; codicil, Sept. 15, 1699 ; proved Feb. 3, 1699–1700 by Dame Mary Wych, power reserved to W^m Glanville.

"To be buried in my Vault near Adjoining Wootton Church next my late dearest wife Dame Mary Cotton. Poor of Wotton, Abinger, and Dorking, £10 each parish. To my brother in law William Glanvill £100. To my brother John Evelyn, Esq., my library of books, my gilt bowl of plate, and three pictures of my father, mother, and sister Darcy. My grandchildren Mrs. Katherine Fulham and Mrs. Mary Evelyn. My great grandchild Jane Dyett. Sir Cyril Wych. My nephew John Evelyn. My nephew William Glanvill £200. Indenture 23 June 1699 between me and my brother John Evelyn of one p^t, Stephen Hervey, Esq., of the second p^t, and Francis Stratford, Esq., and W^m Draper, Esq., of the third part, to pay the said Steph. Hervey and Fran. Stratford £6500 upon certain trusts. Residue of my goods, etc., my rent charge of £38, 16s. out of the manor of Sommersbury and other lands, etc., in Ewhurst and Cranley, co. Surrey, and all rents which have come to me by the death of my brother Richard Evelyn, Esq., I give to my dau. Dame Mary Wych, sole ex'trix. Codicil (15 Sep. 1699) : To my nephew William

Glanvill £300 more, and to be joint ex'or with my dau. Dame Mary, wife of Sir Cyril Wyche.¹ Wit. (to will and codicil), Robt. Wye, William Morley, James Marten. (22 Noel)."

RICHARD EVELYN² of Woodcote, the younger brother of George and John Evelyn, and the third son of his father Richard, was born on November 9, 1622 (according to *Diary*, December 4). On January 21, 1640, he left school to be a chamber-fellow at Baliol College, Oxford, with his brother John. The latter writes in his *Diary* :

"Came my Bro. Richard from Schole to be my chamber-fellow at the University. He was admitted the next day, and matriculated the 31st."

His father died on the following 24th of December when Richard was nineteen. It does not appear what he did on leaving Oxford.

He lived in a house called Baynards,³ in Surrey, which had been left to him by his father. On January 14, 1648, his brother John writes :

"From London I went to Wotton to see my young Nephew ; and thence to Baynards (in Ewhurst) to visit my Brother Richard."

On August 16 of this same year, 1648, he writes :

"I went to Woodcote (in Epsom) to the wedding of my Brother Richard, who married the daughter and coheire of Esqr. Minn lately deceas'd, by which he had a greate estate both in land and monie on the death of a brother. The coach in which the bride and bridegroom were, was overturned in coming home, but no harm was done."

¹ Sir Cyril Wyche possessed a house called Flankford in the parish of Reigate which is described in Coxe's *History of Surrey*, published 1728: "In this parish also is an house called Flankford, an handsome Seat, lately in the Possession of Sir Cyril Wyche, that one of the six Clerks in Chancery some time since. It is adorn'd with a spacious Garden, and a Park well stock'd with Deer, wherein are four Ponds in a Row, from which issue out water in such Plenty as to drive a Mill. This Sir Cyril Wyche, who was afterwards Secretary of State in Ireland, was born at Constantinople during his Father's Embassy there to the Ottoman Court ; and having had for one of his God-fathers at his baptism, the famous Patriarch Cyril, who was bodely murder'd by the Jesuits, had his name imposed on him."

² Chan. Pro. before 1714, Brydges, 3/26.

³ Chan. Pro. before 1714, Brydges, 157/15.

Richard was twenty-six when he married ¹ and the bride was nineteen. Her name was Elizabeth, and she was the daughter and heiress of George Mynne of Woodcote in the parish of Epsom, whose wife was Anne, daughter of Sir Robert Parkhurst, Kt., of Pirford, Surrey.

In the beginning of the year 1655, John went to pay his younger brother a visit at Woodcote, where the couple seem to have lived. He writes on January 1, 1655 :

“ I went to keepe the rest of Christmas at my Brother’s R. Evelyn, at Woodcote.”

The following is a description of Woodcote Park from Brayley’s *History of Surrey* :—

“ Woodcote Park comprises about 350 acres of ground, and is situated at the distance of one mile from Epsom to the south, and contiguous to the racecourse. The park is well wooded, and includes some flourishing plantations. The mansion is a handsome building, consisting of a centre and wings, connected on each side by curvilinear arcades. From the lawn in front a twofold flight of steps with balustrades, leads to the entrance-hall, which is ornamented with coupled Corinthian columns supporting a frieze. The chief apartments include two with drawing-rooms, elegantly decorated. The library is profusely enriched by gilding, etc., and on the ceiling is a painting of Gannymede by Verrio. There is also an apartment called the Painted Room, from the walls being covered with designs illustrative of the Greek romance, by Longus, of Daphnis, and Chloe ; and on the ceiling of that which was formerly a chapel is a representation of the Ascension of our Saviour by Verrio. The old manor-house at Horton, which was large and surrounded by a moat, appears to have been the abode of the Mynns and their predecessors ; but after the marriage of their co-heiress, Elizabeth, with Richard Evelyn, that gentleman, being struck with the far preferable situation of Woodcote Park, determined to erect a mansion there for the residence of the owner of the estate ; and such a house he built, together with a chapel and a library. The two latter were ornamented by Grinling

¹ Faculty Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Marriage Licenses.

Gibbons and Verrio, who had been recommended to Mr. Evelyn by his brother John."

The following is a description of Baynards from the *Diary*, May 5, 1657 :—

"I went with my cousin George Tuke to see Baynards in Surrey, an house of my brother Richard's, which he would have hir'd. This is a very faire noble residence, built in a park, and having one of the goodliest avenues of oakes up to it that ever I saw ; there is a pond of 60 acres neere it ; the windows of ye cheife roomes are of very fine painted glasse The situation is excessively dirty and melancholy."

The following quotation is from Evelyn's *Sylva* (edition Hunter, p. 589) :—

"To conclude, I could have shewn an avenue planted to a house standing in a barren park, the soil a cold clay ; it consisted totally of Oaks, one hundred in number ; The person who first set them, dying very lately, lived to see them spread their branches one hundred and twenty-three feet in compass, which, at the distance of twenty-four feet, mingling their shady tresses for above a thousand in length, formed themselves into one of the most venerable and stately arbor-walks that in my life I ever beheld ; This was at Baynards in Surry, and belonging lately to my most honoured Brother (a most industrious planter of wood) Richard Evelyn, Esq ;—since transplanted to a better world : The walk is fifty-six feet broad, one tree with another containing, by estimation, three quarters of a load of timber, and in their lops three cords of fire-wood ; Their bodies were not of the tallest, having been topped when they were young, to reduce them to an uniform height ; yet was the timber most excellent for its scantling ; and for their heads, few in England excelling them : Where some of their contemporaries were planted single in the park without cumber, they spread above four-score feet in arms ; all of them since cut down and destroyed by the person who continued to detain the just possession of that estate from those to whom of right and conscience it belonged. Since then it is disposed of, and I am glad it has fallen into the hands of the present Possessor."

Baynards is situated partly in Ewhurst and partly in Cran-

ley. It adjoins to Rudgwick in Sussex and is in a deep clay soil. Sir George More of Losely bought it about the year 1577 from Sir Edward Bray. John Evelyn in a letter to Aubrey, which is prefixed to the latter's *History of Surrey*, says :

“ You will observe the number of ponds and little lakes in this country, one of my brothers (now deceas'd) had at a place call'd Baynards, within his Park, a pond of 60 acres. The house was honourably built by Sir George Moore, many years past Lieutenant of the Tower. The soil is so addicted to oaks, that to tell of their prodigious growth within 50 years, would astonish those who should measure the timber now growing. It is a sour loamy ground.”

The following description of Baynards is quoted from Brayley and Walford's *History of Surrey* :—

“ The Mansion, situated on a healthy knoll, commands a beautiful view over the Hog's Back Hills, and is a fine specimen of Tudor architecture. It was carefully restored by the late owner. The northern front is of irregular design, but very characteristic of the period of its erection, the arrangement and older parts of the mansion being apparently much anterior to the date specified by Evelyn. On the basement floor is a spacious hall, which communicates with the library, dining-room, music-room, drawing-room, and great staircase, all of which are appropriately fitted up, and furnished with taste and elegance. The collection of paintings (mostly portraits) at Baynards is very fine and comprises works by Raffaele, Holbein, Zuccherro, Mytens, Vandyke, Rembrandt, and other masters. Here likewise, together with some fine old armour, carvings, and tapestry, several objects of great curiosity are preserved, among them a large and very strong charter chest, formerly the property of Sir Thomas More, which is beautifully painted, cased with iron, and secured by four locks and secret keyhole, and a pair of steelyards, presented by the City of London to Sir Thomas Gresham : they are finely wrought, inlaid with gold, and ornamented with figures of Gog and Magog, Romulus and Remus, and other curious devices.

“ Baynards is said to be haunted, and many years ago no neighbour would approach it after nightfall. The impression

of ghosts having been seen fluttering about, had its origin in the decapitated head of Sir Thomas More having been long kept in this house by his favourite daughter, Margaret Roper. Her residence here was doubtless in consequence of her daughter Elizabeth (by William Roper, Esq.) having become the wife of Sir Edward Bray, the younger. The skull of Sir Thomas was finally deposited in the vault of the Ropers, in St. Dunstan's Church, Canterbury. Margaret Roper was herself buried there, and near her coffin is a niche in the wall, secured by an iron grating, within which the skull is placed."

When Richard Evelyn died in 1670, Baynards was inherited by his only daughter, Anne, who married William Montague, son of the Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer. Of his heirs it was purchased by Richard, first Baron Onslow, from whom it descended to George, Earl Onslow; but after several intermediate ownerships, Baynards was sold in 1882 to the Rev. Thomas Thurlow, a nephew of Lord Chancellor Thurlow.

The third Earl of Onslow carried the beautiful painted glass in the house to his seat at Clandon.

On August 9, 1664, on the day after the death of his sister-in-law, Richard went to Wotton with his brother John to try and console his eldest brother George.

Richard had five children, of whom four sons died in infancy and an only daughter survived. This daughter, Anne, was married on June 29, 1670, at Southampton House Chapel, London, to William Montague, son of the Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer. She had no children and died at Woodcote, February 15, 1688. Her uncle John mentions the wedding in his *Diary*. On June 29, 1670, he says:

"To London, in order to my Niece's marriage, Mary, Daughter to my late Brother Richard, of Woodcot, with ye eldest son of Mr. Attorney Mountague, which was celebrated at Southampton House chapell, after which a magnificent entertainment, feast, and dauncing, dinner and supper, in the great roome there, but the bride was bedded at my Sister's lodging in Drurie-lane."

In 1668 Richard Evelyn became very ill. On November 8 a message was sent to his brother John, which arrived while

he was in the middle of dinner, asking him to come up to London and see his brother. He did so, and stayed with him till the 17th. Richard's illness lasted many months.

John Evelyn writes, March 3, 1670 :

"Finding my Brother in such exceeding torture, and that he now began to fall into convulsion fits, I solemnly set ye next day apart to beg of God to mitigate his sufferings and prosper the onely meanes which yet remained for his recovery he being not only much wasted, but exceedingly and all along averse from being cut (for the stone ;) but when he at last consented, and it came to ye operation, and all things prepar'd, his spirit and resolution failed."

Three days later, on March 6, Richard's sufferings were ended. His brother writes, March 6 :

"Dr. Patrick preached in Covent Garden church. I participated of the blessed Sacrament, recommending to God the deplorable condition of my deare Brother, who was almost in ye last agonies of death. I watched late with him this night. It pleased God to deliver him out of this miserable life, towards five o'clock this Moneday morning, to my unspeakable grieve. He was a Brother whom I most dearly lov'd for his many virtues ; but two yeares younger than myself, a sober, prudent, and worthy gentleman. He had married a greate fortune, and left one onely daughter, and a noble seate at Woodcote near Epsom. I return'd home on the 8th, full of sadnesse, and to bemoane my losse."

Richard was buried at Epsom on March 21. His brother writes on that date :

"We all accompanied the corpse of my deare Brother to Epsom church, where he was decently interr'd in ye chapell belonging to Woodcote House. A greate number of friends and gentlemen of the country attended, about 20 coaches and six horses, and innumerable people."

Richard's wife survived him about twenty-two years. She died January 29, 1692, aged sixty-three, and was buried in Epsom Parish Church. She was Lady of the Manor of Epsom and Horton, and her daughter having died before her in 1688, Charles Calvert, Baron Baltimore, was her next of kin, as she had no grandchildren.

LETTER FROM MRS. ELIZABETH EVELYN, WIFE OF
RICHARD EVELYN OF WOODCOTE, TO WILLIAM GLAN-
VILLE, 1661.¹

"DEARE BROTHER,—I give y^u very many thanks for
sending mee so much choise fruit, I looke upon it a great
present because I know there is but little new com over. I
shall not give you the trouble of procuring me any more,
since y^u have sent me as many as I shall make use of my
selfe a great while. Though I am I thanke God pritty well
now, yett I must tell y^u I have beene sick againe as formerly
and how to remedy it is (for what I can perceiv) beyound
the Phisitians skill. Notwithstanding I follow their pre-
scriptions and shall waite the event. Y^r good company
will doe me more good than all their Phisick, which as soone
as conveniently y^u may is desired by

"Ye^r most affect sister
and humble servant,
(Signed) ELIZA: EVELYN.

" Woodcott, *novemb.*
the 12th, 1661.

my most humble service to y^r Brother
and sister and let them know that
their Daughter is well.

my service to all on Ludgate Hill."

(Addressed.)

These
To William Glanville Esq.
present.

(Endorsed.)

12th November 1661.

WILL OF RICHARD EVELYN OF WOODCOTE

(P.C.C., 68 Penn.)

"Richard Evelyn of Woodcott in the par. of Ebisham al's
Epsham, Surrey, Esq. Will dat. 5 Feb., 1669; proved 17
June 1670 by Elizabeth Evelin the relict. To be buried in

¹ Add. MSS., British Museum, 15,949, fo. 125.

the Chancel of Ebisham Church, belonging to Woodcott house, and for my funeral £250. To poor of Ebisham £15, of Wootton 50s., and of Ewhurst 50s. Manors and lands in Pevensey, Mankesey, and Hoo, co. Sussex, and in Horley, Horne, and Sheire, co. Surrey, were by deed conveyed to Sir Edward Thurland, Knt., and Christopher Buckle, Esq., in trust for the advancement of my dau. Anne in marriage, and my Ex'ix is to pay my s^d da. Anne £1000. To my brothers George and John Evelyn and my brother in law William Glanville, Esq., £20 each for rings. To my nephew and godson William Glanville £100. To my friends Sir Edward Thurland, Knt., and Christopher Buckle the elder, Esq., £10 each, they to be guardians of my dau. Anne if my wife dies before she is of age. To my s^d wife a messuage and farm, etc., in Longhurst Hill, Cranley, co. Surrey. By my marriage settlement, dat. 20 May 1648, the manor house of Baynards and other lands, and the manor of Somersbury in Ewhurst and Ockley, were settled on me and my wife for our lives, remainder in default of my brother George Evelyn, he to pay my brother John Evelyn £1000, and my nephew and godson William Glanville £500. My wife Elizabeth sole ex'ix, and to have the custody of my dau. Anne Evelyn during her minority. My s^d brother George Evelyn and John Evelyn overseers. Wit., Edw^d Thurland, Tho^s Hollier, and James Martin."

CHAPTER II
JOHN EVELYN
(AUTHOR OF *SYLVA*)

JOHN EVELYN, second son of Richard Evelyn, was born at Wotton on Tuesday, October 31, 1620, and was baptized there the following 15th of November, by the Rev. Geo. Highnam, Rector of Wotton. The following is a short résumé of the chief events of his life. The christening took place in the dining-room at Wotton and he was afterwards, as was the custom, sent out to be nursed by a tenant's wife, and remained away from home till the 17th of January 1622, when he was over a year old. In after life his earliest recollections were of seeing, when he was three years old, his younger brother Richard in the nurse's arms. His education began at the age of four, when he made his first efforts under the teaching of a schoolmaster called Frier, who taught him at the church porch of Wotton.

In 1625 he was sent away from home to live with his maternal grandfather Standsfield, at Lewes in Sussex, and here his childhood was passed. When he was six years old his portrait was painted by Chanterell. In 1627 his grandfather died, but he continued to live with his second wife, who wished to keep him with her. He learnt Latin from a Frenchman in Lewes called Citolin. He was also sent to a school at Lewes kept by a Mr. Potts, and later on to the free school at Southover near the town, kept by Edward Snatt, and here he stayed till he went to Oxford. His grandmother married a Mr. Newton of Southover, so they all removed there. John's father wanted to send him to Eton, but the boy was so terrified at the reports he had heard of the severe discipline there, that he was persuaded to let him remain on with his grandmother.

In 1637 he entered as a Fellow Commoner of Baliol College, Oxford, where he remained for three years. In April 1640 he took up his residence in the Middle Temple, and engaged in the study of law. In December of this year his father died, leaving him to face his future career unaided.

In July of the next year, 1641, at the age of twenty-one, he resolved to go abroad owing to the unsettled state of things in England. He visited Holland, and after a stay there of a few months, he returned home again. The battle of Brentford, fought between the Cavaliers and the Roundheads, took place on November 12, 1642, and John arrived on the scene with his horse just at the retreat. He stayed with the Royal Army till the 15th, and then left, for fear of ruining himself and his brothers without any advantage to the King, as the soldiers were about to march to Gloucester.

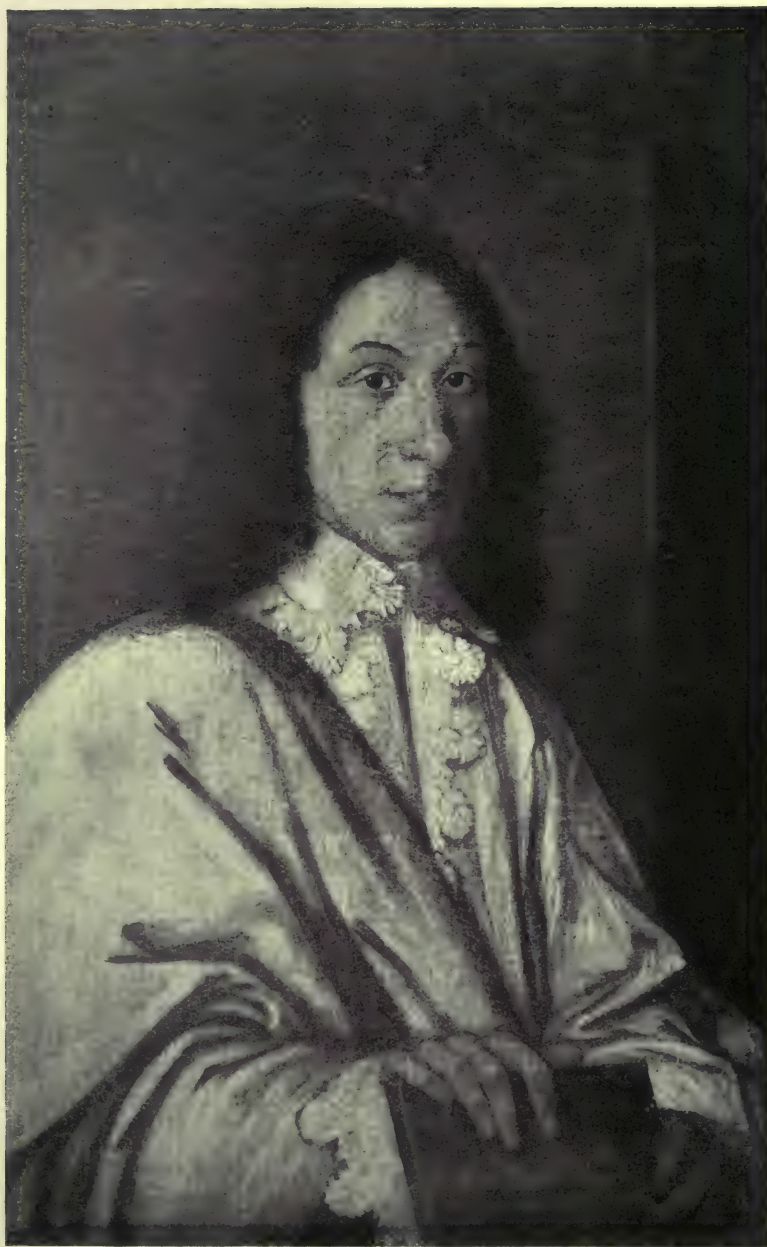
In November 1643 he again visited the Continent, this time going to Paris, where he made the acquaintance of Sir Richard Browne, Charles I's ambassador in Paris. He then visited Italy, where he remained some years. About the end of 1646 he returned to Paris, and the next year, on June 27, 1647, he was married by Dr. John Earle (afterwards Bishop of Salisbury) to Mary, daughter of Sir Richard Browne, in the chapel attached to the latter's house in Paris. He soon after returned to England, leaving his wife, who was only eleven years old, in the care of her mother.

It was in right of this marriage that John came into possession of Sayes Court, Deptford, which belonged to Sir Richard Browne.

Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, November 14, 1647 :

"To Sayes Court at Deptford in Kent, (since my house), where I found M^r Pretymen my wife's uncle, who had charge of it and the estate about it during my father-in-law's residence in France. On the 15th I againe occupied my owne Chambers at the Middle Temple."

In January 1649 he took up his residence at Sayes Court, and in the same month issued his first publication, which was a translation from the French of an essay by François de La Mothe Le Vayer, on *Liberty and Servitude*.



JOHN EVELYN (AUTHOR OF "SYLVA")

From a portrait (1641) by Vanderborcht



May 12, 1649, he writes in his *Diary*, "I purchased the Manor of Warley Magna in Essex."

In the summer of 1649 he again went to France, but returned in the beginning of 1652, and on his arrival home published a little book entitled *The State of France*.

On March 9, 1652, John Evelyn writes in his *Diary* :

"I went to Deptford, where I made preparation for my settlement, no more intending to go out of England, but endeavour a settl'd life, either in this or some other place, there being now so little appearance of any change for the better, all being entirely in the Rebels hands, and this particular habitation and the estate contiguous to it (belonging to my father-in-law actually in his Majesty's Service), very much suffering for want of some friend to rescue it out of the power of the usurpers; so as to preserve our interest, and take some care of my other concernes. By the advice and endeavour of my friends I was advis'd to reside in it, and compound with the soldiers. This I was besides authoriz'd by his Majesty to do, and encourag'd with a promise that what was in lease from the Crowne, if ever it pleas'd God to restore him, he would secure to us in fee-ferme. I had also addresses and cyfers to correspond with his Majesty and Ministers abroad: upon all which inducements I was persuaded to settle henceforth in England, having now run about the world, most part out of my Country, neere 10 yeares. I therefore now likewise meditated sending over for my wife, whom as yet I had left at Paris."

His wife came to England in June of this year, and the following August their first child was born. He was called Richard, and gave promise of great ability, but only lived till he was six. Four more sons were afterwards born, all of whom except one died in infancy, and three daughters, Mary, Elizabeth, and Susannah.

John Evelyn took great pains with his garden at Sayes Court, which in time became celebrated.

He was among the first members of the Royal Society, which was created in the reign of Charles II. He held several appointments at different times of his life. In 1664 he was

appointed one of the Commissioners to take care of the Dutch sick and wounded prisoners, taken in the war with Holland. He had much difficulty in getting the funds necessary for their maintenance. To make matters worse, the plague broke out in London, so he sent his wife and family to Wotton while he remained to attend to his duty.

In the same year, 1664, he published *Sylva*, his celebrated work on forest trees.

In 1685 he was made one of the Commissioners of the Privy Seal. In the same year he had his portrait painted by Kneller, which is now at Wotton, together with one by Vanderborcht and one by Walker. John Evelyn was not averse to the Revolution in favour of William of Orange.

On January 17, 1653, Evelyn writes :

“ I began to set out the ovall garden at Sayes Court, which was before a rude orchard and all the rest one intire field of 100 acres, without any hedge, except the hither holly hedge joining to the bank of the mount walk. This was the beginning of all the succeeding gardens, walks, groves, enclosures, and plantations there.

“ 19th. I planted the Orchard at Sayes Court, new moone, wind W.”

The following is copied from the *Diary* of John Evelyn, edited by William Bray in 1870 :—

FROM THE MSS. AT WOTTON

“ SAYES COURT.—The hithermost Grove I planted about 1656 ; the other beyond it, 1660 ; the lower Grove, 1662 ; the holly hedge, even with the Mount hedge below, 1670.

“ I planted every hedge and tree, not onely in the garden, Groves, etc., but about all the fields and house since 1653, except those large, old & hollow Elms in the Stable Court & next the Sewer ; for it was before, all one pasture field to the very garden of the house, which was but small ; from which time also I repaired the ruined house, & built the whole end of the Kitchen, the chapel, buttry, my study, above & below, cellars and all the outhouses & walls, still-house, Orangerie, & made the gardens &c. to my great cost, & better I had don

to have pulled all down at first, but it was don at severall times."

His only surviving son, John, died in 1699, leaving one son. His elder brother, George Evelyn, died in the same year at Wotton, at the age of eighty-three, and John Evelyn then inherited Wotton, being seventy-nine at the time. He continued to write his *Diary* to the last, and is now more celebrated for it than for his *Sylva*, for which he was famous in his own day.

On February 27, 1706, he died, aged eighty-five, at his London house in Dover Street. He was buried in the Mortuary Chapel in Wotton Church, March 4, 1706.

LIST OF WORKS BY JOHN EVELYN¹

1649. *Of Liberty and Servitude*. Translated out of the French (of the Sieur F. de La Mothe Le Vayer) into English by John Evelyn and dedicated to George Evelyn, Esq. The Note of Dedication is signed Phileleutheros and dated Paris, March 25, 1647. Although only a translation, it is interesting as being Evelyn's first literary work. It is a philosophical treatise on liberty. The author was a celebrated writer of the seventeenth century, who was born at Paris in 1588 and died in 1672. His works are numerous and are on a great variety of subjects, the principal of which are, *De la Vertu des Payens*, *Des Anciens et Principaux Historiens Grecs et Latins*, *Sur la Façon de Parler n'avoir pas le sens commun*, *Petits Traites en Forme de Lettres*, and *The Prerogative of a Private Life*. The translation by John Evelyn was reprinted in *Evelyn's Miscellaneous Works*, edited by William Upcott of the London Institution, published in 1825. The editor states in his preface that it was reprinted word for word from the copy which was in John Evelyn's possession, containing his MSS. notes. He also says that in 1781 it was purchased by Mr. Bindley, probably from Mr. J. Robson, a well-known bookseller in Bond Street, who bought a large portion of the Evelyn library from that family about the year 1767. At the

¹ Copied from Evelyn's *Memoirs*, edited by Bray.

disposal of Mr. Bindley's collection in 1818, it came into the possession of George Watson Taylor, Esq., on the sale of whose books it was purchased by Mr. Upcott, March 26, 1823. In Evelyn's own copy there is the following pencil-note :—
 "I was like to be call'd in question by the Rebels for this booke, being published a few days before his Majesty's decollation."

1652. *The State of France, as it stood in the IXth year of this present Monarch, Lewis XIII.* Written to a Friend by J. E., London. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings* in 1825.

1656. *An Essay on the First Book of T. Lucretius Carus de Rerum Natura.* Interpreted and made English verse by J. Evelyn. Frontispiece designed by Mrs. Evelyn and Engraved by Hollar.

1658. *The Golden Book of St. John Chrysostom, concerning the Education of Children.* Translated out of the Greek by J. E., Esq. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*, 1825.

1658. *The French Gardiner : instructing how to cultivate all sorts of Fruit-trees and Herbs for the Garden ; together with directions to dry and conserve them in their natural.* Six times printed in France and once in Holland. An accomplished piece, first written by R. D. C. D. W. B. D. N. (N. de Bonnefons) and now transplanted into English by Philocephos. Illustrated with sculptures.

1659. *A Character of England, as it was lately presented in a Letter to a Noble Man of France.* Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*, 1825.

1659. *An Apology for the Royal Party*, written in a Letter to a person of the late Council of State, by a Lover of Peace and of his country. With a Touch at the pretended "Plea for the Army." Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*, 1825.

1660. *The late News from Brussels unmasked, and His Majesty vindicated from the base calumny and scandal therein fixed on him.* An answer to a coarse libel by Marchmont Needham, entitled *News from Brussels.* Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1661. *Fumifugium : or the inconveniencie of the Aer and*

Smoak of London dissipated, together with some remedies humbly proposed by J. E., Esq., to his Sacred Majesty and to the Parliament now assembled. Published by His Majesty's Command. Reprinted for B. White, London, 1772, and in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1661. *A Faithful and Impartial Narrative of what passed at the landing of the Swedish Ambassador*.

1661. *Instructions concerning erecting of a Library*, presented to My Lord the President De Mesme by Gilbert Naudeus, P., and now interpreted by Jo. Evelyn, Esquire.

1661. *Tyrannus or the Mode*, in a Discourse of Sumptuary Lawes.

1662. *Sculptura : or the History and Art of Chalcography and Engraving in Copper*, with an ample enumeration of the most renowned masters and their works ; to which is annexed a new manner of Engraving or Mezzo Tinto, communicated by His Highness Prince Rupert to the Author of this treatise. Second edition, London, 1755. Dedicated to Sir John Evelyn, Bart., by J. Payne the publisher. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*, 1825.

1664. *Sylva, or a Discourse of Forest-Trees, and the propagation of Timber in his Majesties Dominions*. By J. E., Esq. As it was deliv'd in the Royal Society the xvth of October, MDCLXII., upon occasion of certain quaeries propounded to that illustrious Assembly by the Honorable the Principal Officers and Commissioners of the Navy ; to which is annexed Pomona, or an Appendix concerning Fruit Trees in relation to Cider, the making and severall wayes of ordering it. Published by express order of the Royal Society. Also *Kalendarium Hortense, or the Gard'ner's Almanack*, directing what he is to do monethly throughout the year.

1664. *Kalendarium Hortense ; or the Gard'ner's Almanack*, directing what he is to do monethly throughout the year, and what fruits and flowers are in prime. By John Evelyn, Esq., Fellow of the Royal Society. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*, 1825.

1664. *A Parallel of the Ancient Architecture with the Modern*, in a Collection of ten principal Authors who have

written upon the five Orders, viz., Palladio and Scamozzi, Serlio and Vignola, D. Barbaro and Cateneo, L. B. Alberti and Viola, Bullant and De Lorme, compared with one another. The three Greek Orders, Doric, Ionic, and Corinthian, comprise the first part of this Treatise, and the two Latin, Tuscan and Composita, the latter. Written in French by Roland Freart, Sieur de Chambray, Made English for the Benefit of Builders; to which is added, An Account of Architects and Architecture in an Historical and Etymological Explanation of certain terms particularly affected by Architects, with Leon Baptista Alberti's Treatise of Statues. By John Evelyn, Esq., Fellow of the Royal Society.

1665. *Μυστηριον τῆς Ανομίας*, that is, *Another part of the Mystery of Jesuitism, or the new Heresie of the Jesuites*, publickly maintained at Paris in the College of Clermont the 12 of December, 1661, declared to all the Bishops of France, according to the Copy printed at Paris; together with the Imaginary Heresie in three letters with divers other particulars relating to this abominable Mystrie, never before published in English. The copy presented by the author to Sir Henry Herbert, with autograph inscription, is in the British Museum.

1666. *The English Vineyard*, vindicated by John Rose Gard'ner to his Majesty at his Royal Garden in St. James's, formerly Gard'ner to her Grace the Duchesse of Somerset. With an Address, where the best plants may be had at easie rates. The Preface is signed "Philosepos," otherwise John Evelyn, who put the book into form. Reprinted in the *French Gardiner*.

1667. *Publick Employment*, and an Active Life prefer'd to Solitude, and all its appanages, such as fame, command, riches, conversation, &c., in reply to a late ingenious Essay of a contrary title. By J. E., Esq., S.R.S., London. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1668. *An Idea of the Perfection of Painting*, demonstrated from the principles of art, and by examples conformable to the Observations which Pliny and Quintilian have made upon the most celebrated pieces of the ancient painters,

parallal'd with some works of the most modern painters, Leonardo da Vinci, Julio Romano, and N. Poussin. Written in French by Roland Freart, Sieur de Cambray, and rendered English by J. E., Esquire, Fellow of the Royal Society. Dedication and Preface reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1669. *The History of the three late famous Impostors, viz., Padre Ottomano, Mahomed Bei, and Sabetei Sevi*. The one pretended son and heir to the late Grand Seignior, the other a Prince of the Ottoman family, but in truth a Valachian Counterfeit; and the late, the supposed Messiah of the Jews, in the year of the true Messiah 1666. With a brief account of the ground and occasion of the present war between the Turk and the Venetian; together with the cause of the final extirpation, destruction and exile of the Jews out of the empire of Persia. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1674. *Navigation and Commerce, their Original and Progress*. Containing a succinct account of Traffick in general; its benefits and improvements; of discoveries, Wars, and Conflicts at sea, from the Original of Navigation to this day; with special regard to the English Nation; their several voyages and expeditions to the beginning of our late differences with Holland; in which his Majesties title to the Dominion of the Sea is asserted against the Novel and later pretenders. By J. Evelyn, S.R.S. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1676. *A Philosophical Discourse of Earth*, relating to the culture and improvement of it for Vegetation, and the propagation of Plants, &c., as it was presented to the Royal Society, April 29, 1675. By J. Evelyn, Esq., Fellow of the said Society.

1690. *Mundus Muliebris: or the Ladies' Dressing-room Unlock'd and her toilette spread*. In Burlesque, together with the *Fop-Dictionary* compiled for the use of the fair sex. *A Voyage to Marryland; or the Ladies' Dressing-room*, is the title given on page 1. It seems likely that the poem was written by Mary Evelyn, John Evelyn's eldest daughter, as in the *Diary* her father makes a slight allusion to it when describing her character after her death

on March 14, 1685. This was five years before the publication of the poem. The passage alluded to states that "she could compose happily, and put in pretty symbols, as in the *Mundus Muliebris*, wherein is an enumeration of the immense variety of the modes and ornaments belonging to the sex." Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

1693. *The Compleat Gardener, or Directions for Cultivating and right ordering of Fruit Gardens ; with divers Reflections on several parts of Husbandry*. In six Books. By the famous Monsr. De La Quintinye, Chief Director of all the Gardens of the French King ; to which is added his Treatise of Orange Trees, with the raising of Melons, omitted in the French editions. Made English by John Evelyn, Esq. Illustrated with Copper Plates.

1697. *Numismata : A Discourse of Medals, Antient and Modern*. Together with some Account of Heads and Effigies of illustrious and famous persons in sculps and taille-douce, of whom we have no medals extant, and of the use to be derived from them, to which is added a digression concerning Physiognomy. By J. Evelyn, Esq., S.R.S.

1699. *Acetaria : A Discourse of Sallets*. By J. E., S.R.S., Author of the *Kalendarium*. Reprinted in *Miscellaneous Writings*.

POSTHUMOUS PUBLICATIONS

1818. *Memoirs illustrative of the Life and Writings of John Evelyn, Esq., F.R.S.*, comprising his *Diary* from 1641 to 1705-6, and a Selection from his familiar letters. Edited by W. Bray. London, 1818.

1825. *The Miscellaneous Writings of John Evelyn, Esq., F.R.S.*, Author of "*Sylva, or a Discourse of Forest-Trees*," "*Memoirs*," &c. Now first Collected, with occasional Notes by William Upcott, of the London Institution.

1847. *The Life of Mrs. Godolphin*. By John Evelyn, of Wotton, Esq. Now first published and edited by Samuel (Wilberforce), Lord Bishop of Oxford, Chancellor of the most noble Order of the Garter. Printed from Evelyn's original MS. in the possession of his great-great-grandson,

Edward Venables Vernon Harcourt, Lord Archbishop of York.

1850. *The History of Religion: a Rational Account of the True Religion.* By John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*, etc. Now first published, by permission of W. J. Evelyn, Esq., M.P., from the original MS. in the Library at Wotton. Edited with Notes by the Reverend R. W. Evanson, B.A., Rector of Lansoy, Monmouthshire. This work, which contains much interesting matter drawn from various authors, was commenced in 1657. John Evelyn continued and added to it during his life. He entitled it *Analecta or Collections*.

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO HIS WIFE ¹

“FOR MRS. EVELYN, AT GEO: EVELYN ESQ.

“his house in Wotton: Surrey.

“SAYS-COURT, 29th Jan: 65.

“MY DEARE,—I am just now arriv'd from Hampton-Court, where his Ma^{tie} gaue me so kind a reception as I could not haue desired a more gracious: The Duke of Albemarle presenting me to the King, he ran to me, & giuing me his hand to kisse, told me he was heartily glad he had me safe; & twise, vsing this expression, as I am an honest man, I haue been in care for you, I haue pitied you; I haue been I tell you, realy troubled for y^r employment; I am much beholden to you for your good Service:—Vpon w^h I replyd, that for the danger I did not consider it, so the performances of my duty, might answer his Ma^{ties} gracious opinion of me: He told me, he was highly satisfied, & that I had exceedingly oblig'd him: I vse his Ma^{ties} very expressions as neere as I can recall them: after this I had the honor to entertaine him quite alone concerning severall particulars relating to my service for neere 3 quarters of an houre, & after that twise more in Privat, dismissing me with a Command to waite on him on Thursday at Whitehall, where I find I shall receive orders for my grand Project of an Infirmary to be built at Chatham, & diuers other affairs, that I am

¹ In the possession of Mrs. Arthur Heygate.

like to be engag'd in: After this the Duke of Yorke came to me of his owne accord; & gaue me likewise his hand to kisse, with many most obliging expressions for the good Service I had don him & the King, then came my Ld: Arlington, S^r W^m Coventry, & a full crowd of other Greate Persons to salute me; but none wth more ceremony, compliment & wonderfull expressions of kindnesse, than my Ld: of S^t Albans who is wont (you know) to overlooke all the World: Thus I passd from one, to another, halfe pull'd to pieces for joy, & at last I came away, a Squire as pure as euer I went, to my no small contentment, though I was once or twice affraid of making you a Lady; but (I thank God) I got most dextrously off.

“The King did tell me as a Seacret, that he would be at Lond: on Thursday; & but for that, I had not sent this Boy to you: for considering that y^r Father (coming to morrow to Hampton Court from Oxford) will vndoubtedly follow his Ma^{tie} to Lond: & be in greate impatience for y^e Keys of his Lodging there, & happily in want of them for some Papers &c: I thought fit to send to you expressly for the Black-box I left wth you, in which he writes me word his Keys are: I suppose it is the same I gaue you out of my Trunke when I left Wotton last: I pray now send it by Jack, & see it safely put vp: I do (by y^e Grace of God) persist to send for you about the beginning of next Weeke; but whither by the conveniency of a Glasse Coach, I much doubt, Cap: Cock being at Lond: wth his Family, & I suppose vsing it: The Weather is not so cold, but that if it be a fine day & the Curtain cloasd, I hope you may passe the journey without danger of y^e Moppet: I shall then also find you Morys, but I pray let me first know what you expect:

“In y^e meane time prouide my number of Trees, y^t the Cart may bring them:

“Learne also of my Brother w^t course he takes for liverye to send to S^r Jo: Euelyn? where he buys the cloth? and when they must be ready to appear, wth that whole Equipage &c:

“You neede no more enquire concerning the generall

greate abatement of y^e Contagion, than to consider y^t his Ma^{tie} resolves for Lond: & I am of opinion will returne no more to Oxford, or Hampton - Court: Whitehall being fitting vp in all hast:

“This enclosed 2^d kind lett^r from my L^d Cornebury I send you, to let you see how well I am in y^t family, & what newes there is, & how they passe their time at Oxon: Also the Garrett from Oxon: for my Bro: who may possibly not haue seene it:

“And now I haue don, when you haue made my service acceptable to my deare Bro: Nephew, Niece, M^{rs} Bohun & all y^e good Company at Wotton from

“Dear, Dear,

Y^r most affectionate Husband
& humble servant,

J. EVELYN:”

“We are meeting afresh at Gressham Coll. & haue had purchasd for vs, since these days of separation, the fullest, & certainly noblest collection of naturall rarities of all kinds that is this day in Europ to be seene: Tell M^r Bohun, The Royall Society is not at an end yet, florit, floreat---

“Bring me my L: Cornberys lett^r againe.

“My Ld: Arundel of Warder presents his service to you; I belieue S^r Sam: may come ouer yet at last:

“M^{rs} Murden, Isabell, & y^e Doctor wth his Lady, kisse y^r hande. God send vs a joyfull meeting.”

(*Endorsed.*)

From J. E. the 29 Jan. 65
to M^{rs} Evelyn
his reception by the K. & Duke
of York at Hampton Court.
Escaped being knighted.

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO DR. BOHUN ¹

“WOTTON, 18th Jan. —9th.

“WORTHY D^r BOHUN,—Having been told that you have lately Inquir’d what is become of y^r now old ffriends of

¹ Given to the Bodleian Library by Mrs. Heygate.

Says-Court, the date hereoff will acquaint you where they are, and the sequel, much of what they do & think: I belieue I neede not tell you that after the Marriage of my Daughter, and the so kind offer of my good Bro: here (my then Circumstances and times consider'd) I had reason to embrace it; not onely out of Inclination to the place where I was born, & haue now an Interest in; but, by reducing my Family, to extricate my selfe out of some difficulties, which yet with all goode husbandry, I haue not ben able to do, as y^u y^rselfe (to my no small sorrow) haue ben sensible of: The Superfluities of the Wedding & apparatus's; the 200^l I haue pd. to M^r K. Pretymen on a Bond of S^r Richards; the full 300 for passing y^e renewing of my Lease wth some augmentation &c: of what I hold from the Crowne, which the *Duke of Leedes* was supplanting me of: The Insupportable Taxes, many Repaires, Removes & other vnavoydable expenses be added to the rest, keeping me hitherto to a Confinement, tho' not vngratefull; yet with much alloy,¹ so long as I remaind in yours other debts, which I am euery day endeauoring to contract, as fast as my circumstances will permitt; for as I am not here vpon free Cost, so with my necessary Servants & other accidents, I hardly yet bring the yeare about with a decency becoming vs: It is true, my L^d Godolphin (my euer noble patron & steady friend, now retird from a fatigud station) got me to be named Treasurer, to the Marine Colledge erecting at Greenwich, with the Sallary of 200^{li} p^r Aⁿⁿ: of which I haue neuer yet receiud one peny of the Tallies assignd for it, now two yeare at O^r Lady-day: The expense of Journeys, and necessity of being often at London to discharge that trust, has hitherto ben to my disadvantage, & the attendance so inconvenient & chargeable, that I am faine to put it off to my Son-in-Law Draper who is my Substitute; I haue onely had this opportunity to place my old (indeede faithfull) Ser^t J. Str^d, in an Employment at Greenewich, who complys with my other business, which is not small, among so many begerly Tennants, as y^u know I haue at Deptford; whilst

¹ Reading doubtful.

I haue let my House to Cap. Benbow, and haue the mortification of seeing euery day, much of my former labour & expense there impairing, for want of a more polite Tennant; but w^h I must comply with: But that which is to us a yet greater Affliction, is, the ill state of my Son, both before, & since his returne out of Ireland where the contracted Indisposition has taken such roote in him, that vnlesse the approaching Spring relieue him, I much feare the Consequences, & daily pray to God for him: Little *Jack* (my *Grand-son*) is in truth, a very good Child, of an honest, steady, & sweete nature; of a good Vnderstanding & I belieue will be a solid man, hauing already an extraordinary sense of things beyond my imagination: & as to Book-learning now in the fift forme at Eaton; so as there is no dealing wth him in *Homer*, *Vergil*, *Horace*, &c. In sum: M^r *Newbery* (the chiefe M^r of that Schoole) told me that this 20 years he neuer had any so forward and good a proficient as *Jack*, & D^r Bently, a friend of mine (& one known I believ to you) whom I causd to examine him severely, assurd me, he was fully ready for the Vniuersity, & told me he would but loose his time at Schoole: Howeuer, my own defects prompt me to fix him perfectly in the Greek tongue to w^h the child has greate Inclination: He is so delighted in Books, that he professes a Library is to him the greatest recreation, so as I giue him free scope here, wher I haue neere vpon 2000 (wth my Brother) & whither I would bring the rest, had I any volumes which I haue not to my greate regrett, hauing here so little Conversation with the Learned (vnlesse it be when M^r Wotton now and then comes to visit me, he being Tutor to M^r Finches son at Alban,¹ but w^h he is now leaving to go to his living) that without Books & the best Wife & Bro: in the World, I were to be pitied: But with those subsidiary and the Revising some of my old Impertinences, to which I am adding, a discourse I made on *Medals* (lying by me long before Obadiah Walkers Treatise appeard) I passe some of my Attic nights, if I may be so vaine as to name them, wth the Author of those Criticisms: for the rest, I

¹ Reading doubtful.

am planting an euer-green-Groue here, to an old house ready to drop, the Oeconomy & Hospitality of which my good old Bro: will not depart from, but *More Veterum*, kept a Christmas in w^h we had not fewer than 300 bumkins euery holy-day. Some account now I haue giuen you of my selfe, forgetting to acquaint you of a Scorbutic sorenesse in the spots vpon one of my legs, w^h, tho' without breaking, made me dog-lame aboue 6 monethes, but is, I thank God, remoud by *Taffys* (the famous Quacke) Elixir, & the change of air: My wife is now & then assaulted wth her inveterat Cough & defluxion but has ben in better health this Winter, than of many yeares: Her employment is most assiduous Reading, knitting knotts, and governing my Bro: Table, when y^e Regent Lady seldom appears 'til about 9 at night when the Sun rises in her quarters: S^r *Cyrill* comes once in 3 moneths to see her, and is willing she should continue as she is, as long as her father liues, who has made her executrix of his goods, w^h with all my heart I am glad of; we hauing much more than we know where to dispose of if the house were empty, of the most vselesse lumber that stuffs it: S^r *Cyrill* is a very worthy Gent: an ex^t Scholar & one to be valud extreemly: But wise men are now & then mistaken. Greate fortunes wth Wiues, do not allway make men happy:

"We haue here a very convenient Appartment of 5 roomes together, beside a pretty Closet, which we haue furnishd with the spoiles of Says-Court, & is the rare shew of the whole Neighborhood, & in truth live very easy as to all domestic cares; I haue a small Charriot to w^h I make vse of my Bro^s horses when we haue a mind to go abroad, w^h we very seldome do: Wednesdays & Saturdays night, we call *Lecture-Nights*, when my Wife and my selfe take our turnes to read the packets of all the Newes, sent constantly from London, w^{ch} serues vs for discourse 'til fresh ones come; & so you haue the History of a very Old man & his no young Companion, whose Society I haue enjoyd more to my satisfaction these 3 years here, than in almost 50 before, but am now euery day trussing vp to begon, I hope, to a better place; in the meane time that my Bro: (tho sometimes

afflicted wth the stone, & much impaired in his sight, & vse of his leggs) is as hearty as he has ben 20 year past, frequently wishing to see you here once before we part: And now I think I haue told you all I know, of o^r Concerns except it be of my Daughter Draper, who being brought to bed in the Christmas Holydays of a very fine Boy, has giuen an Heir, to her most deserving Husband, a prudent, well natur'd gent: a man of Buisinesse, like to be very rich & deserving to be so, among the happiest paires I think in England, and to my daughter, & our hearts desire: My wife could not be at the labour, by reason of a cold she had at that time, & severity of the Weather, which keeps vs close to the fire here; she has likewise a very fine Girle, and a Mother-in-Law (a *pictrisse*) exceedingly fond of my daughter & a most excellent Woman, charitable & of a very sweet disposition, they all live together, keepe each their Coach, & wth as suitable an Equipage as any in the Towne: but *Sue* says, you haue quite forgotten her—But so haue not I D^r Bohune, hauing no longer ago, than this very Day written to his Grace of Canterbury (as I haue don at least six or 7 times), continually minding him of his promise, w^h, tho' he still confirmes, puts off, wth many assurances, that he will not forget you, w^h doe not satisfie me. I receiud a lett^r from his Grace yesterday, giving me an account of their choosing one M^r *Gastrel*, to supply the Lecture of M^r Boyle the present yeare: D^r Williams, who was the last, being made (as you know) a B^{ip}: Vpon this Occasion (my Lord of Cant: doing me the honor to be my proxe) I againe renewd my old Request, with very greate Earnestness; so long promising me, that when the Bp of Lincolne came to Towne, he did not doubt of gratifying you with something worth y^r patience; this I urg'd wth as much zeale as if it had ben for my owne Bro: & do not a little wonder it has hitherto produc'd no effect; his Grace professing so very much kindnesse to me vpon all Occasions & frequent Correspondence; By a lett^r of the 24th ffeb: (now neare a yeare past) I wrot you word I would vse my vttmost Interest in this affaيرة, which I did more than once, going to Lambeth on purpose, nor haue I euer seene him since (& that has been often) but I haue

constantly spoken to him concerning you, of wh: my Son Draper, has sometimes ben Witnesse: But the Bip: of Salisbry I could neuer light conveniently vpon, & you gaue me Caution in that matter: Whether you euer receiu'd that lett^r I neuer heard:

“ This being the 16th or 17th letter I haue ben oblig'd to write this very day ; if it has not wearied me in writing I am sure must haue tir'd you in Reading, and therefore hoping you will excuse the Impertinences of so tedious a Scribbler desire you will belieue me to be

“ Worthy Dr, Y^r

most humble, faithfull
and Obliged Servant,

J. E.”

“ Natalis Christi toto semel advenit anno,
Illius adventus nos hilaresque facit :
Protinus haud aliter verò quam somnia vana
Vanescit, dicit longum abiensque vale,
Laudandus tamen est animus generosus amicos
Gaudentis putavi magnificè accipere.”

“ I do not praise him for his poetry ; for he seemes to affect a more solid talent, but the theame being giuen him almost the very moment he was going to take leave of his Vnkle, before S^r Cyr: Wych, he tooke pen & Inke, & wrot them downe before vs, (who gaue him y^e old Song) after 5 or six minutes pause (indeede none at all) w^h presenting to my Bro: return'd in a piece of broad gold: If y^u think me fond & foolish remember the Philosopher & Hoby-horse.”

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO MR WOTON ¹

“ TO MR WOTON.

DOVER-STR: I ffeb: 170³½.

“ Worthy S^r,—This trouble had not come so hastily vpon you, but to beg y^r pardon for so much as thinking you shuld not long since haue ben acquainted with those particulars concerning the Boglona Family, or that any-thing I could say on that subject should be new to you: Tho' you haue ben so ciuil as not to owne it, least it might looke like a

¹ Presented to the Bodleian Library by Mrs. Heygate.

reproach: Since all that I wrot to you, is Verbatim in a Funerall Sermon of the Countesse of Warwick (youngest daughter to the R^d E. of Corke), preacht and publishd by D^r Walker 1678, which I the more wonder I should not call to mind, who about the same time, lost the best friend of her sex I, or any man else had in the world adorn'd with all the perfection of that devout & ex^t Lady, & in most passages of her life so resembling her, as neuer pearles were more alike, than this Mary & my *Marguerite*, who were paragons, more valuable than those *Vnios* (if I may so call them) than a thousand of Cleopatras: I haue so much to say of my incomparable Friend vpon all accounts of a perfect & accomplishd a creature, as would take up Volumes: They departed both about the same time, The Lady Warwick in a Calme, the other in a storme, that is, *delirious*, occasioned by a feaver, after hauing left a sonne & heire to the best Man-friend I haue in the world, & the greatest & most worthy person, deservdly dignifyd wth the greatest Ministry this frail son¹ was blessd with, next her Ma^{tie}, I shall not neede to name him; farther than to let you know, that this young Gent: his son, Inherits the virtues of both his parents, was consign'd to my Care intirely, 'till he went at the Schoole at Eaton (where his Vnkle is now the worthy provost) w^h is no small honour to me: But of these things vpon some other occasion: This coming only, to beg y^r pardon for seeming to impose vpon you (as a service) what I am confident you knew before; the Mistake being from the Failing of my Memory, who hauing nothing of that passage in my memory tooke it out of what I found my late son, had transcribed out of this funeral Sermon, in which he says no more of S^r Geofrey Fenton than y^t he was a great Officer of state, but in w^t station, mentions not: This [²] & w^t else you tell me you haue to Inquire of I reserve to be informed of, if two of M^r Boyles Niesces, the Lady Frances Shannon & Katherine Fitz Gerald, both my Wifes Relations & my Acquaintance (are both now in Towne as we are informed) can giue you any light, if not, I shall aske my L^d Ranelagh, who is the most likly to inform me:

¹ Reading doubtful.

² Word undeciphered.

" & now whilst I cannot doubt but you will haue occasion to mention what you find amongst the papers of M^r Boile (not publishd) a Considerable bundle of something w^h he had written vpon the Existence of the Deity, w^h with other Tractates, he intended to haue deliuerd to a divine to peruse, & fit for y^e publisher : but this was so very little time before his last sickness, that it went no farther : His Booke (& I think y^e best of all his philosophical works) concerning y^e Original of Formes, a French stranger, desird his permission to let him put into Latine, & print at Geneva : whether it was so publishd, I cannot tell : Oldenburg (first Secretary to y^e R. Society) & who had ben Tutor to my L^d Ranelagh, & whose patron was M^r Boyle, got abundance of the most valuable papers of M^r Boyles as well as other original papers and a curious book, belonging to the Society, w^h he neuer restord, but were sold by his Widdow to the Earle of Anglesey, who prevented the search w^h ought to haue ben made by our president.

" Thus far you haue had a wearisome Talke, & yet I haue not quite don :

" Sins y^{rs} of the 23^d past, you acquaint me with the Enquirement of D^r Duncomb &c. in behalfe of [solicitude for] a son of M^r Banister whom y^u name.¹ Vpon w^h account the D^r Writ a letter to me on Sondy last, enclosed in another of M^r Hussys of y^e same Tenor : My Answer to them was, that vnderstanding M^r Wotton would be so kind as to use his Interest wth the M^r of Trinity, any Interposure of mine would be intirely needlesse : Howeuer, to show [how] much I was inclynd to promote so charitable a work, as [²] far as I might signify, I would write to the Master which I accordingly haue don, who am

" Worthy S^r

Y^r most faithful

humble Servant,

J. E. "

" Return my wifes humble
Service to y^r Lady."

¹ This sentence is interlineated and not very clear in the original.

² Interlineation, undeciphered.

COMPLINE¹

For the 31: *December*, or *Last Day* of
the *Yeare*, & *first* of the *New*:

ADVERTISEMENT :

“I haue long thought the setting some considerable portion of this day, and the following a part, for more than Ordinary Recollection, and the Calling of ones Selfe to an Accompt, for the passages, & Improvements of the past Yeare, to be of singular Vse ; and as it is a good preparation for the publique Solemnitie of the Day ensuing ; by Examining the State of our Soule, and how far we are advanc’d in the Spiritual Life : We should therefore do well to take a more serious review of the yeare which is now expir’d, and by the help of those private notices we haue daily taken, & Registr’d, call-to-mind what greater sins we may haue Committed, or what an accumulation of Frailties, & smaller Infirmities ; together with what we haue reform’d & mortified, by which to Judge of y^e Progresse & Condition of our Soules, and what method to proceede in the Yeare following ; that so we may be continually growing towards perfection, as we advance in Yeares : With this we shall do well likewise to Consider what signal Blessings we haue received, Spiritual especialy, & then Temporal ones ; what more conspicuous Acts of Piety we haue perform’d ; what Perils Escaped ; what Providences Observed, & accordingly to make our humble Addresses to Almighty God, in Acts of Repentance ; Prayers for what we Want ; Thanksgivings for what we haue *Receiv’d* ; *Renewing our Resolutions* [&] *Working-out our Salvation, with more Care & Vigilancy for the time to come, in some such forme of*

PRAYER :

“Ô Father of my Life & Being ! who are the same Yesterday, to-day & for-ever ; whose Yeares do never faile :

¹ Given to the Bodleian Library by Mrs. Heygate.

If euer Thou wert a Father to any Creature Thou hast ben a Father to Me, Depending vpon Thy Bountie, and Goodnes from the first moment of my breath : Day after day, & Yeare after Yeare, I haue eaten of Thy Bread, Lived vpon Thy Providence, euen when my Father & Mother (tender as they were) could take no more care of me, and that I was left to my owne vnsteady Conduct : Ever since I was Borne, hast Thou ben my God, my Guide, my Lord, my Saviour, my Friend, Father & Protector in the most obliging Instances & indulgent Compassions of all those indearing Relations ; and Thrô so many Perils, & Accidents to which thrô the Malice of *Satan*, Wickednesse of the Age, & my owne perverse Inclinations might haue exposd me, Yet, hitherto hast Thou brought me, and behold, I liue, to Magnifie Thy Mercy as this Day—Ah, that Thou wouldest Vouchsafe to superadd this one Grace to the multitude of Thy favours ; Bestow vpon me an heart truely Thankfull, Vpright, & Obedient, & such as by the fruites of an holy, & refin'd Life, may testifie that it is not in vaine, Thou hast continu'd to be thus Gracious to me : In the bitterness of my Soule I most sadly deplore the sinns, & follies of my whole Life, & in Particular — — Those Offences & Frailties which I haue accumulated to the rest of that monstrous heape, this Yeare past ; supplicating Thy Grace as freely to pardon them for the Lord Jesus Christ his sake ; so for the future, by the ayde of thy holy Spirit, to fortifie me against them ; that I may euerie Yeare see these deadly Enemyes of my Soule, not onely to be weakn'd but p[] fied, and the Victory compleated ; that so I [may] vpon the passages of my Life for the time to come, [] Comfort, & grow vp to the full measure of the stature of [] my Redeemer, 'til the Yeares of my Earthly Pilgrimage being accomplish'd, I may live with Thee in blisse for euer : We haue here no abiding Citty ; the Yeares of our Age are few, & euil, and there is no repose but with Thee, when our Yeares shall no more faile than thine ; because Thou hast promis'd us life euerlasting, and a state of Glory ; when we shall neither wax old, nor sorrow, nor sin any more : Ah happy State, how I Thirst, how I Languish for that Life,

for that Glory, that blessed Condition, that Eternity ! How, ah how slow are the Wheelles of that Charriot which Thou hast appointed to Conduct us thither ! Ô my Sweete Sauour, Giue me Patience, & Provision for that desired journey, that blessed state ; and whilst Thou hast determin'd that I shall abide in this Tabernacle, Assist me so to liue that I may be prepar'd for that glorious Translation, and blessed change. The Continuance of my Health, Competency, Friends, &, aboue all, the fruition of thy venerable Ord'nances ; the temporal, & spiritual refreshments which Thou still vouchsaf'st me, call perpetually on me to praise thy holy Name, & to Loue Thee infinitely, Particularly for ——— and that Thou hast this Yeare bestow'd vpon, & added to me ——— Let, ô let not my Vn-mindfullnesse of the least of thy favours, provoke thee either to deprive me of, or lessen them ! When I consider my demerits I am amaz'd at this Goodnesse of Thine : Make, ô make me humble, & Thankfull, and to Love Thee more for Thy-selfe, than for all that I either do, or can hope to Enjoy in this World.

“ I farther blesse thy Name, that Thou hast giuen me opportunitie, & made me successeful in ——— To Thy Glory be it intirely ascrib'd : Continue to render me in some measure, a faithfull, & sincere dispencer of the Talents, & Graces which Thou hast imparted to Thy Servant.

“ That Thou hast deliuer'd thy Creature from Sicknesse, Sad & Calamitous Accidents, Want, Ignominy, [and], Aboue all, from dying in Thy displeasure, and given me Hope of Glorying Thee in my Life, & Death, and all Conditions ; I magnifie Thy Grace. One external thing will I onely neuer cease from begging of the Lord my Father, & bountifull Benefactor, ô grant it me, if it be thy blessed will, namely ——— That so I may passe the residue of my time in thy Service, and the duties of my Condition, without distraction, or vn-worthy Compliances : For the rest (yea euen & for this & all I aske) dispose of me as Thou pleasest : Thy Will be don on Earth, as it is in Heaven : Continue Thy Loving-kindnesse to me, & I am sure of Thy Care : Preserve me

without Sin, & I am certaine of Thy Loue, & of all I can wish or desire: If in Submission to Thy all-wise Providence, I may yet obtaine this Mercy—, and that my Request proceedes from the motions of Thy *holy Spirit*, Thou wilt heare me; and, if not, Thou (who know'st my Heart, and for what end I beg it) wilt pardon me, and giue me something which is better: Lord Giue me Thy Selfe, & thy Loue, I Aske no more, nor Aske I this, or any thing else, but for that alone.

“And now holy Father, haue Reguard to thy Church Catholic to inlarge, protect, & refine it. To this National poore Church, to Cherish, defend & prosper it: To the King & his Throne, to establish it in Righteousnesse: To all Degrees of People in this Nation to preserne them in Piety, Obedience, & Charity. To all distressed Christians, & all Mankind suffering innocently, Support, Deliuerance, & Consolation according to the Yeares wherein they haue suffered affliction: To my Dearest Relations & Friends, especially ———. That Thou wilt improue their Graces, Continue their prosperity, & for any kindnesse shew(n) to me, Reward them an hundredfold:

“Let thy holy Angels (for whose ministrie & protection I blesse thee) Watch-ouer, Guard, & Defend me this . . .”

WILL OF JOHN EVELYN (SYLVA)

(P.P.C. Eides 60)

“The five and twentieth day of February 1705 I John Evelyn of Wotton in the County of Surrey Esq^{re} being weake in body but of perfect memory and understanding blessed be Almighty God and calling to mind the uncertainty of certaine death as to the time and manner doe make and ordaine this my last will and testament in manner and forme following First and especially I recommend my Immortall Soul into the hands of Almighty God &c. who living and fearing his name dye in the profession of the true ancient Catholic Christian Faith derived to us from our Blessed Saviour his Apostles and Suscessors according to the Scriptures com-

mitting my Body to be deposited at Wotton in said County of Surrey as I have ordered my Executor by my Codicil annexed to this my will together with the expenses of my Funerall. As to that of my Worldly Estate which God has most graciously been pleased to trust me with and in my power to dispose of I give devise bequeath and dispose the same as followeth, Imprimis I will and direct my Funerall Charges and all such my just debts and those of my late dear sonn John Evelyn Esq^{re} deceased as shall be oweing and unpaid at the time of my death and the payment thereof not otherwise provided for shall be paid and satisfied by my Executor hereinafter named with all convenient speed after my decease out of such personall Estate as I shall leave him by this my will. Item I leave and give unto Mary my deare Wife the Lease of the House wherein I now live situate and being in Dover Street in the Parish of St. Martins-in-the-Fields in the County of Middlesex, and the furniture of the same as it is now furnished Except such Furniture as is in or does belong to my daughter-in-law Evelyns Apartment in the same House which my will and meaning is she shall have and enjoy, And I give and devise the same to her my said daughter-in-Law accordingly. I alsoe Will order and direct That my said deare Wife shall have and take such and soe many pieces of my Plate as she shall choose and desire, And I also give to my said deare Wife my Coach and Horses and all such Rings and Jewells as she usually wore and are in her keeping and possession. Then I give to my Granddaughter Elizabeth Evelyn and to her Assignes One Annuity of fourteen pounds per Annum issueing and payable out of her Majesties Exchequer for and dureinge her naturall life. Then I give to my Grandsonn John Evelyn Esq^r all my Bookes both at Wotton and at my house in Dover Street aforesaid, And I doe hereby make declare nominate and appoint the said John Evelyn my Grandsonn whole and sole Executor of this my Will, And I doe give and devise to him my said Grandsonn All the rest and residue of my personall Estate undisposed of by this my Will, And Lastly revokeing all former Wills by me heretofore made I doe hereby make and declare this to be my last Will comprized in one sheet of paper. In Witness

whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seale the day and year above written.

(Signed) JOHN EVELYN.

Signed, Sealed, published and declared by the Testator as and for his last Will and Testament in the presence of us—

JOS. SHERWOOD, J^N STRICKLAND, THO: BEDINFIELD.
Prove 18 March 1705.”

(No Codicil annexed.)

MARY, DAUGHTER OF SIR RICHARD BROWNE AND WIFE
OF JOHN EVELYN

Mary Browne was the only daughter of Sir Richard Browne, Charles I's ambassador at Paris. He owned Sayes Court at Deptford. Her mother was Elizabeth Pretyman, daughter of Sir Pretyman of Dryfield, Gloucestershire. Sir Richard Browne, Knight and Baronet, was the only son of Christopher Browne and grandson of Sir Richard Browne. He was gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles I and Clerk of the Council to Kings Charles I and Charles II. He was ambassador to the Court of France from those monarchs from 1641 until the Restoration of King Charles II in 1660. It was while he was ambassador in Paris that he made the acquaintance in 1643 of John Evelyn, then a young man of twenty-three who was doing a tour on the Continent.

Three years later, on July 27, 1647, the marriage took place between the latter and Mary Browne, who was then only about twelve years old. John Evelyn mentions it in these words:

“*June 10.* We concluded about my marriage, in order to which I went to St. Germain, where his Majesty then Prince of Wales, had his Court, to desire of Dr. Earle, then one of his chaplains (since Dean of Westminster, Clerke of the Closet and Bishop of Salisburie) that he would accompany me to Paris, which he did and on Thursday 27 June, 1647, he married us in Sir Richard Browne's Chappell, betwixt the houres of 11 and 12, some few select friends being present; and this being Corpus Christi feast was solemnly observ'd



MARY BROWNE (AGED 4 YEARS)
WIFE OF JOHN EVELYN (THE DIARIST)



in this country ; the streetes were sumptuously hung with tapestry, and strew'd with flowers."

"Sept. 10. Being call'd into England to settle my affaires after an absence of 4 yeares, I tooke leave of the Prince and Queene, leaving my Wife, yet very young, under the care of an excellent lady and prudent mother."

Mary had been brought up almost entirely in France, as she had come over with her parents at the age of five, and cannot therefore have had much recollection of her native country. The marriage was a very happy one, as Mary testifies afterwards in her will, where she says that her husband was to her a father, lover, friend and husband, all in one.

Nearly two years after the marriage, on March 21, 1649, John Evelyn writes in his *Diary* :

"I receiv'd letters from Paris from my Wife, and from Sir Richard, with whom I kept a political correspondence, with no small danger of being discover'd."

On July 16 of this year, John Evelyn started for Paris with a party of which Lady Caroline Scott, whom he describes as "a very pleasant lady," was a member. It was an exciting journey, as they had some fear of highwaymen, and often had to get out of the coach and walk beside it with their guns. They arrived, however, in safety, and on September 7, Evelyn and his wife went to see the Queen-Mother, Henrietta Maria, at St. Germain, and kissed her hand.

On May 27, 1650, he took leave of his wife and returned to England, but on the following 13th of August again set out for Paris, where he stayed till January 29, 1652, when he went back to England. In June of this year he received the pleasing news that his wife had obtained permission to leave Paris, which was besieged by the Prince of Condé's army. On June 4 he writes thus :

"I set out to meet her now on her journey from Paris, after she had obtain'd leave to come out of y^e citty, wch had now ben besieged some time by ye Prince of Condé's armie in ye time of the rebellion, and after she had ben now neere twelve yeares from her owne country, that is since five yeares

of age, at wch time she went over. I went to Rie to meet her, where was an embargo on occasion of the late conflict wth the Holland fleet, the two nations being now in warr and which made sailing very unsafe."

On the 11th he writes again :

"About 4 in ye afternoone being at bowles on ye grene, we discover'd a vessel, which prov'd to be that in which my Wife was, and which got into ye harbour about 8 y^e evening to my no small joy. They had ben three days at sea, and escaped the Dutch fleete, thro' which they pass'd taken for fishers, wch was great good fortune, there being 17 bailes of furniture and other rich plunder, wch I blesse God came all safe to land, together with my Wife and my Lady Browne her Mother, who accompanied her. My Wife being discompos'd by having been so long at sea, we set forth towards home till ye 14th, when hearing the small-pox was very rife in and about London, and Lady Browne having a desire to drink Tunbridge Waters, I carried them thither, and staid in a very sweete place, private and refreshing, and tooke the waters myself till the 23rd, when I went to prepare for their reception leaving them for ye present in their little cottage by the Wells."

Mary was now seventeen.

On August 24, her first child, a son, was born and christened by the name of Richard.

In September she had the misfortune to lose her mother, Lady Browne, who was taken ill with scarlet fever. Evelyn writes :

"I went to Woodcot, where Lady Browne was taken with a scarlet fever and died. She was carried to Deptford, and interr'd in the church neere Sir Richard's relations with all decent ceremonie, and according to the church office, for which I obtain'd permission, after it had not ben us'd in that church for seven yeares. Thus ended an excellent and virtuous lady, universally lamented, having ben so obliging on all occasions to those who continually frequented her house in Paris, which was not only an hospital, but an asylum to all our persecuted and afflicted countrymen during eleven yeare's residence there in that honourable situation."

This must have been a terrible grief to the young wife of seventeen, who, being an only child, had probably been much indulged at home and accustomed to being a companion to her mother. She was in a strange country and had not had time as yet to make many friends.

The next year, on October 11, 1653, a second son was born and christened John Standsfield after Evelyn's maternal grandfather, that name having become extinct. Evelyn writes, October 11 :

“My Sonn John Standsfield was borne, being my second child, and christened by the name of my Mother's father, that name now quite extinct, being of Cheshire. Christen'd by Mr. Owen in my library at Sayes Court, where he afterwards churched my Wife, I always making use of him on these occasions, because the parish minister durst not have officiated according to the forme and usage of the Church of England, to wch I always adhered.”

This son only lived about three months. He died on January 25, 1654, of convulsions and was buried at Deptford.

On June 8 of this year Evelyn and his wife set out on a tour in Wiltshire and other parts in a coach with four horses in order to visit some of Mary's relations. They first visited Windsor, and went to see the chapel of St. George where Charles I is buried, and spent the night at Reading, where they saw the ruins of Lord Craven's house which had been felled by the rebels. They visited Bath and Bristol and then Oxford, where they went to see the different colleges. They also visited an uncle of Mary's, Sir John Glanville, whose seat was at Broad Hinton. John Evelyn describes him as a famous lawyer and formerly Speaker of the House of Commons. He also states that he was living in the Gatehouse, as he had burnt down his own dwelling-house to prevent the rebels from using it as a garrison. They visited Salisbury, and among other things went to see Stonehenge. They also went to Gloucester and Worcester, and then through Leicestershire to visit another uncle of Mary's. They visited York, Beverley, and Cambridge, and arrived back at Sayes Court on October 3, after a journey of 700 miles.

On January 19, 1655, Mary gave birth to another son,

who was christened John. Two years later she had the grief of losing her eldest son, Richard, aged five.

While the plague was raging in London in 1665, Mary Evelyn was at her brother-in-law's at Wotton with her son John (who was now her only child), his tutor, Mr. Bohun, and almost her whole household of servants, as her husband feared that as Deptford was so near London the infection might spread there. This must have been a time of anxiety for Mary, as her husband remained in London to attend to his duty in looking after the Dutch sick and wounded prisoners.

It was during this necessarily prolonged stay at Wotton that Mary gave birth to a daughter on October 1. This child, who was christened Mary, was born in the same room (now called the Pillared Room) as her father, and in the same month as himself, he having been born on the 31st. The news of her birth was brought to him in the afternoon on October 1 while he was engaged in evening prayers.

John Evelyn spent the following Christmas at Wotton. On January 12 he returned to Sayes Court, his wife remaining at Wotton, as her husband still feared for her as the plague continued, though very much diminished. On February 6 she and her son, who was aged eleven, and her infant daughter returned home. Evelyn writes :

“My Wife and family return'd to me from the country, where they had ben since August, by reason of the contagion, now almost universally ceasing. Blessed be God for his infinite mercy in preserving us ! I having gone through so much danger, and lost so many of my poore officers, escaping still myselfe, that I might live to recount and magnifie his goodnesse to me.”

Mary had had her portrait painted by Monsieur Bourdon before her departure from France, when she was little more than a child. This picture was stolen by pirates of Dunkirk in its transit in 1649, when John Evelyn was awaiting it in England, his wife being still in Paris at the time. It was recovered in 1652. Evelyn happened to be dining with Lord Wentworth and some banished royalists, at Calais, when he was informed that the Count de la Strade, Governor

of Dunkirk, who had bought his wife's picture, was in the town. He made his addresses to him, and the Count told him that he had the picture in his own bedroom among the portraits of other ladies, and explained how he came by it. It was arranged between them that it was to be sent to a French merchant at Dover known to Evelyn, there to await him. This picture is now in the library at Wotton. The Count de la Strade afterwards sent the picture at his own expense to Evelyn in a larger tin case. Evelyn says of it, "It is of Mr. Bourdon and is that which has ye dog in it, and is to the knees, but it has been something spoil'd by washing it ignorantly with soap-suds." There is also an etching of Mary Evelyn by Nanteuil which is at Wotton, with also that of her father and husband.

In November 1660, when Mary was about twenty-three, Charles II's mother arrived in England after her long banishment, bringing with her her daughter Henrietta. On November 23 Mary was introduced to them both. Her husband writes on November 23 :

"Being this day in ye bedchamber of ye Princess Henrietta, where were many greate beauties and noblemen, I saluted divers of my old friends and acquaintances abroad ; His Majesty carrying my Wife to salute the Queene and Princesse, and then led her into his closet, and with his own hands shew'd her divers curiosities."

On March 31 he again writes :

"This night His Matie promis'd to make my Wife Lady of the Jewels (a very honourable charge) to the future Queene (but which he never perform'd)."

Mary had presented the Princess Henrietta with *A Character of England* which is reprinted in Evelyn's *Miscellaneous Writings*. On December 22, 1660, her husband writes in his *Diary* :

"The Princesse gave my wife an extraordinary compliment and gracious acceptance for the *Character* she presented her the day before, and which was afterwards printed."

Mary was a skilful artist ; two pictures by her of some flowers remain at Wotton, which, although rather stiff and

conventional, are very well painted. In May 1661 she presented a miniature which she had copied to Charles II. John Evelyn writes :

“ May 11, 1661. My wife presented to His Majesty the Madona she had copied in a miniature from P. Oliver’s painting after Raphael, which she wrought with extraordinary pains and judgment. The King was infinitely pleas’d with it, and caus’d it to be placed in his cabinet amongst his best paintings.”

On September 13, 1667, between the hours of twelve and one (according to the *Diary*), Mary’s second daughter was born at Sayes Court and christened by the name of Elizabeth, and two years later, on May 20, 1669, her youngest child Susanna was born. Of her five sons all died in early infancy except the third son, John. Her eldest daughter, Mary, was only nineteen when she died of small-pox on March 14, 1685. The second daughter, Elizabeth, also died of the same disease, August 27, 1685, aged eighteen, very shortly after her marriage with the nephew of Sir John Tippet. The youngest daughter, Susanna, who married William Draper of Adscomb, was the only child who survived both her parents. She died August 24, 1754.

Towards the end of 1699 Mary’s brother-in-law, George Evelyn of Wotton, died, leaving no male heir, and her husband then inherited Wotton at the age of seventy-nine. Mary was then about sixty-four. Her father, Sir Richard Browne, died at Sayes Court at 10 a.m. February 12, 1683, and was buried at St. Nicholas, Deptford. It was through him that she inherited Sayes Court.

A CHARACTER OF MRS. EVELYN

BY DR. BOHUN

(*From the Original in his Handwriting*)

“ I had lately occasion to review severall Letters to me from Mrs. Evelyn of Deptford. After reading them, I found they were much to be valued, because they contained not only a compleat description of the private events in the

family, but publick transactions of the times, where are many curious and memorable things described in an easy and eloquent style.

“Many forgotten circumstances by this means are recalled afresh to my memorie; by so full and perfect a narration of them, they are again present to my thoughts, and I see them reacted as it were before my eyes. This made strong impressions on my mind, so that I could not rest till I had recollected the substance of them, and from thence some generall reflexions thereon, and from thence drew a character of their author, so farr only as by plain and naturall inferences may be gathered from their contents. This was not perform'd in a manner worthy of the design, but hastily and uncorrectly, which cost no more time than cou'd be employed at one sitting in an afternoon; but in this short model, Mrs. Evelyn will appeare to be the best daughter and wife, the most tender mother, and desirable neighbour and friend; in all parts of her life. The historicall account of matters of fact sufficiently set forth her prayes, wherein there cou'd be no error or self-conceit; and declare her to be an exact pattern of many excellent vertues; but they are concealed in such modest expressions, that the most envious censurers can't fix upon her the least suspicion of vanity or pride. Tho' she had many advantages of birth and beauty, and wit, yet you may perceive in her writings, an humble indifference to all worldly enjoyments, great charity, and compassion to those that had disobliged her, and no memory of past occurrences, unless it were a gratefull acknowledgement of some friendly office; a vein of good-nature and resignation, and self denial runs through them all. There's nothing so despis'd in many of these letters, as the fruitles and empty vanities of the Town; and they seem to pity the misfortune of those who are condemned by their greater quality or stations to squander away their precious time in unprofitable diversions, or bestow it in courtly visits and conversations. Where there happens to be any mention of Children or Friends, there's such an air of sincerity and benevolence for the one, and religious concern for the hapines of the other, as if she had no other design

to live in the world, than to perform her own duty, and promote the welfare of her relations and acquaintance.

“There’s another observation to be collected, not less remarkable than the rest, which is her indefatigable industry in employing herself, and more for the sake of others than her own ; This she wrote, not out of vain glory, or to procure commendation, but to entertain them with whom she had a familiar correspondence by letters, with the relation of such accidents or bysnes wherein she was engag’d for the month, or the week past.

“This was a peculiar felicity in her way of writing, that, tho’ she often treated of vulgar and domestic subjects, she never suffer’d her style to languish or flag, but by some new remark or pleasant digression kept it up to its usual pitch.

“The reproofs in any of these numerous letters were so softly insinuated, that the greatest punishment to be inflicted upon any disobligation was only to have the contrary vertue to the fault they had ben guilty of, highly applauded in the next correspondence, which was ever so manag’d as to pleas and improve.

“Scarce an harsh expression, much less an evill surmise or suspicion cou’d be admitted where every line was devoted to charity and goodnes. There is no effect of partiality, but appears in the particular instances, so that the same judgment must be made by all unprejudiced persons who shall have a sight of them.

“Any misfortune or disappointment was not mournfully lamented, but related in such a manner as became a mind that had laid in a sufficient provision of courage and patience before-hand to support it under afflictions. All unfortunate accidents are allaid by some consolatory argument taken from solid principles. No kind of trouble but one seems to interrupt the constant intention to entertain and oblige, but that is dolorously represented in many of the letters, which is the loss of Children or Friends. That being an irreparable separation in this world, is deplored with the most affectionate tenderness which words can express. You may conclude that they who write in such a manner

as this, must be suppos'd to have a sens of religion, becaus there can scarce be assign'd one act of a beneficent and charitable temper but has many texts of the Gospel to enforce it. So that all good Xtians must be very usefull and excellent neighbours and friends, which made this lady ever esteem'd so. Shee was the delight of all the conversations, where she appear'd she was lov'd and admir'd, yet never envy'd by any, not so much as by the women, who seldom allow the perfections of their own sex, least they ecclips their own. But as this very manifestly and upon all occasions was her temper, the world was very gratefull to her upon that account. This happines was gain'd and preserv'd by one wise qualification, for tho' no person living had a closer insight into the humours or characters of persons, or cou'd distinguish their merits more nicely, yet she never made any despising or censorious reflexions; her great discernment and wit were never abus'd to sully the reputation of others, nor affected any applaus that might be gain'd by satyirical jests. Tho' shee was extreemly valu'd and her friendship priz'd and sought for by them of the highest condition, yet she ever treated those of the lowest with great condescension and humanity. The memory of her vertues and benefits made such deep impression on her neighbours of Deptford and Greenwich, that if any one should bring in another report from this, or what was generally receiv'd among them, they'd condem as fals, and the effect of a slanderous calumny; either they wou'd never yield that any change shou'd happen to this excellent lady, or they'd impute it to sickness, or time, or chance, or the unavoidable frailtys of human nature. But I have somewhat disgress'd from my subject, which was to describe her person or perfections no otherwise than they may be gathered from the letters I receiv'd; they contain historical passages and accounts of any, more or less considerable, action or accident that came to her knowledge, with diverting or serious reflections as the subject requir'd, but generally in an equall and chaste style, supported by a constant gravity, never descending to affected sallys of ludicrous wit.

“It's to be further observ'd, that tho' she recites and

speaks French exactly, and understands Italian, yet she confines herself with such strictnesses to the purity of the English tongue, that she never introduces foreign or adopted words; that there's a great steadiness and equality in her thoughts; and that her sense and expressions have a mutual dependance on each other may be infer'd from—hence you never perceive one perplexed sentence or blot, or recalling a word in more than twenty letters.

“Many persons with whom she convers'd or were related to her, or had any publick part in the world, were honour'd by very lively characters confer'd on them, always just, and full of discernment, rather inclining to the charitable side, yet no otherwise than as skillfull masters who paint like, yet know how to give some graces and advantages to them whose pictures they draw. The expressions are clear and unaffected, the sentences frequent and grave, the remarks judicious, the periods flowing and long, after the Ciceronian way, yet tho' they launch out so far, they are strict to the rules of grammar, and ever come safe home at last without any obscurity or incoherence attending them.

“I'll only give one instance of a person who was characteris'd by her in a more favorable manner than he durst presume that he deserv'd; however, to shew the method of her writing, I shall set it down. I believe (such an one) to be a person of much wit, great knowledge, judicious and discerning, charitable, well natur'd, obliging in conversation, apt to forget and forgive injuries, eloquent in the pulpit, living according to known precepts, faithful to his friend, generous to his enemy, and in every respect accomplisht; this in our vulgar way is a desirable character, but you'll excuse if I judge unrefinedly, who have the care of cakes and stilling and sweetmeats and such usefull things.

“Mrs. Evelyn has been often heard to say concerning the death of her admirable and beloved Daughter, that tho' she had lost her for ever in this world, yet she wou'd not but that she had been, because many pleasing ideas occur to her thoughts that she had convers'd with her for so many years.

“Oxon, 1695, Sept. 20.”

The following letters were written by Mary :—

“ FOR M^R BOHUNE, AT NEW COLLEDGE, OXON ¹

“ 1667⁷/₈

“ March 22.

“ S^R,—I will Imagine the important and weighty Charge you haue to execute, your frequent conuersation with Books, yr constant appearance in the Chappell, emulating a Chamber-fellow in treating of Ladyes, and keeping the common fires with the witts, to be reasonable execuces for so long a silence in Methodicall M^r Deane. But when I remember M^r Bohune, a well natured person, a decrier of exactnesse, and formality ; one who easily dispences with Rule, and as soone executes, as starts a designe ; That he should take 3 weeks consideration to write an Epistle makes me admire. I am perswaded though you Drole upon Deptford inteligence, I could furnish you with some passages at Court, intrigues of state, and the names of newer playes then are yet arriued at Oxon : but you are taken up with latin Orations, and the pleasant diuersion of throwing Eggs in the scholars faces ; besides, I suppose Doctor Wren could not be so long absent, had you not vndertaken to supply his place in ouerseeing the Theater, and exercising your talent in architecture : I confesse I cannot avoid giuing those of the Continent their just praise for speaking their owne language correctly, which in this Country is so generall a defect, that the learned themselves take halfe their liues in searching after the criticisms of languages they neuer speake, and neglect the subject of their owne so vsfull upon all occasions : This without the assistance of Seneca, or Howell may be obseru'd ; for instance, *If I had went to Shotover where if I aren't deceiued I sh'd finde* kind wellcome, with other suchlike Elegancies. Well, to grow serious, I must giue you thanks for your care of Jack, and entreat you to let Doctor Bathurst and his Lady know, I am very sensible of their fauours and kindnesse to the deare boy, who I wish may gouerne himselfe so, as not to perswade them his failings proceed from our too great indulgence in keeping him at home, but partly from his naturall negligence, in what you say I call

¹ Given to the Bodleian Library by Mrs. Heygate.

outside ; and though you may be lesse scrupulous in this particular with persons whose goodnesse you are secure off ; yet I cannot but wish him very perfect amongst those very persons who possesse all desirable accomplishments, and are so capable Judges : You haue preuented me in all I could think of concerning your pupill ; I haue only to put you in mind of what I so largely discourced of to you at parting, which concerned you both, equally, and to assure you that I am

“ S^r,

Your humble seruant,

M. EVELYN.

“ SAYES-COURT,
the 22th.

“ certainly before this you are
out of paine for your boots,
which William gardner put
into the Carriers hands friday last
was sennight, with what was wanting
of Jacks : my seruice to my Nephew Glanuill
I haue nothing to object against the gowne
but as it may be a test to good purposes.”

“ FOR MR. BOHUN

“ 21 May 1668.

“ If it be true that wee are generally enclined to covett what wee admire, I can assure you my ambition aspires not to the fame of Balzac, and therefore must not thank you for entitling me to that great name. I do not admire his style, nor emulate the spirit of discontent which runns through all his letters. There is a lucky hitt in reputation whiche some obtaine by the deffect in their judges, rather than from the greatnesse of their merit ; the contrary may be instanced in Doctor Donne, who had he not ben really a learned man, a libertine in witt and a courtier, might have ben allowed to write well, but I confesse in my opinion, with these qualifications he falls short in his letters of the praises some give him.

“ Voiture seems to excell both in quicknesse of fancy,

easinesse of expression, and in a facile way of insinuating that he was not ignorant of letters, an advantage the Court ayre gives persons who converse with the world as books.

“I wonder at nothing more than at the ambition of printing letters; since, if the designe be to produce witt and learning, there is too little scope for the one, and the other may be reduced to a lesse compasse than a sheet of gilt paper, unlesse truth were more communicative. Buisnesse, love, accidents, secret displeasure, family intrigues, generally make up the body of letters, and can signifie very little to any besides the persons they are addressed to, and therefore must loose infinitely by being exposed to the unconcerned. Without this declaration I hope I am sufficiently secure never to runne the hazard of being censured that way, since I cannot suspect my friends of so much unkindnesse, nor myselfe of the vanity to wish fame on so doubtfull a foundation as the caprice of mankind. Do not impute my silence to neglect; had you seene me these tenne days continually entertaining persons of different humor, age and sense, not only at meales, or afternoone, or the time of a civill visit but from morning till night, you will be assured it was impossible for me to finish these few lines sooner; so often have I set pen to paper and ben taken off againe, that I almost despaired to lett you know my satisfaction that Jack [her son then at College under Mr. Bohun’s care] complies so well with your desires, and that I am your friend and servant,

“M. EVELYN to Mr. BOHUN.”

“1671.

“SR,—I must believe you are very busy, hearing so seldome from you, and that you are much in the esteeme of Dr. Bathurst,¹ since he judges so favourably of yr friends. It cannot be the effect of his discernment which makes him give sentence in my behalfe, being so great a master of reason as he is; but it is certainly a mark of his great kindnesse to you that he deffers to Yr judgment in opposition to his

¹ Dr. Ralph Bathurst, Dean of Wells, and President of Trinity College, Oxford, whose *Life and Literary Remains* have been published by Thomas Warton, Poetry Professor and Fellow of the same College.

owne. I should not question Yrs in other things, but the wisest may be allowd some grains, and I conclude you no lesse a courtier than a philosopher. Since my last to you I have seene *The Siege of Grenada*, a play so full of ideas that the most refined romance I ever read is not to compare with it ; love is made so pure, and valor so nice, that one would imagine it designed for an Utopia rather than our stage. I do not quarrell with the poet, but admire one borne in the decline of morality should be able to feigne such exact virtue ; and as poetick fiction has been instructive in former ages, I wish this the same event in ours. As to the strict law of Comedy I dare not pretend to judge ; some thinke the division of the story not so well as if it could all haue ben comprehended in the dayes actions ; truth of history, exactness of time, possibilities of adventures, are niceties the antient criticks might require ; but those who have outdone them in fine notions may be allowed the liberty to expresse them their owne way, and the present world is so enlightened that the old dramatique must bear no sway. This account perhaps is not enough to do Mr. Dryden right, yet is as much as you can expect from the leisure of one who has the care of a nursery.

“ I am, Sir, &c.,

M. EVELYN.”

“ TO MR. BOHUN AT OXFORD

“ SR,—Do not think my silence hitherto has proceeded from being taken up with the diversions of the towne, the eclat of the wedding, mascarades which trebled their number the second night of the wedding (so) that there was great disorder and confusion caused by it, and with which the solemnity ended ; neither can I charge the housewifry of the country after my returne, or treating my neighbours this Christmas, since I never finde any businesse or recreation that makes me forget my friends. Should I confesse the reall cause, it is yr expectation of extraordinary notions of things wholly out of my way ; Women were not borne to reade authors, and censure the learned, to compare lives

and judge of virtues, to give rules of morality and sacrifice to the Muses. We are willing to acknowledge all time borrowed from family duties is misspent; the care of children's education, observing a husband's commands, assisting the sick, relieving the poore, and being serviceable to our friends, are of sufficient weight to employ the most improved capacities amongst us. If sometimes it happens by accident that one of a thousand aspires a little higher, her fate commonly exposes her to wonder, but adds little to esteeme. The distaff will defend our quarrells as well as the sword, and the needle is as instructive as the penne. A heroine is a kind of prodigy; the influence of a blazing starre is not more dangerous, or more avoyded. Though I have lived under the rooffe of the learned, and in the neighbourhood of science, it has had no other effect on such a temper as mine, but that of admiration, and that too but when it is reduced to practice. I confesse I am infinitely delighted to meet with in books the atchievements of the heroes, with the calmnesse of philosophers, and with the eloquence of orators; but what charms me irresistably is to see perfect resignation in the minds of men let what ever happens adverse to them in their fortune; that is being knowing and truly wise; it confirms my beleefe of antiquity, and engages my perswasion of future perfection, without which it were in vaine to live. Hope not for volumes or treatises; raillery may make me goe beyond my bounds, but when serious, I esteeme myselfe capable of very little yet I am, Sr,

“Your friend and servant,

M. E.

“Jan. 4, 1672.”

“TO MY LADY TUKE, AFTER THE DEATH OF
SR SAM TUKE

“MADAME,—I acknowledge these are trialls which make Christian philosophy usefull, not only by a resignation to the divine decree, but by that hope which encourages us to expect a more lasting happinesse then any this world can give. Without this wee were extreemly wretched, since no felicity

here has any duration. Wee are solicitous to obtaine, wee feare whilst we possesse, and wee are inconsolable when wee loose. The greatest conquerors themselves are subject to this unsteady state of humane nature ; lett us not murmur then, for wee offend, and though in compliance to yr present sence of things I could joyne with you in greeving, having made as particular a losse as ever any did in a friend, I dare not indulge yr sorrows, especially when I consider how prejudiciall it will prove to yrselfe and those dear pledges that are left to your care ; but I do rather beg of you cease greeving, and owe that to reason and prudence which time will overcome. Were I in so good health that I could quitt my chamber, I would be dayly with you and assure you how really I am concerned for you. You cannot doubt the affection of your, &c.

“ *Jan. 28, 1672.*”

“ TO MR. BOHUN

“ SAYES-COURT, 29 *Jan. 1672.*”

“ SR,—If a friend be of infinite value living, how much cause have wee to lament him dead ! Such a friend was Sr Sam Tuke, who retired out of this life on St. Paul’s day Jan. 25 at midnight, and has changed the scene to him and us, and left occasion to all that knew him to bewaile the losse. You need not to be made sensible by a character of a person you knew so well, and you can enumerate virtues enough to lament and shed some teares justly ; therefore spare me the sorrow of repeating what effect it has wrought on such a minde as mine, who think no missfortune worth regretting besides the losse of those I love. Do not blame me if I beleieve it allmost impossible to meet with a person so worthy in himselfe, and so disposed to esteeme me againe ; and yet that is not the chieftest cause of my affliction ! I might wave much of my owne interest, had I not so many partners that will suffer equally. These are the trialls which make Christian philosophy usefull, not only by a resignation to the Divine decree, but by that hope which encourages us to expect a more lasting happinesse than any this world can give,

without which wee were extreemly wretched, since no felicity here has any duration. The greatest conquerors themselves are subject to this unsteady state of human nature, therefore well may I submitt, whose concerns are triviall in respect of others. Yet this I conclude, that wee dye by degrees when our friends go before us. But whilst I discourse thus with you, I should consider what effects melancholy reflections may have on a spleenetic person, one who needes not cherish that temper. I will only add that I am now able to quitt my chamber, which is more than I could do these 14 dayes, and that I am, Sr,

“Your Servant,

M. EVELYN.”

“TO MR. BOHUN, FELLOW OF NEW COLLEGE, OXFORD

“SR,—When I have assured you that my usuall indisposition has treated me so severelly this winter that I have had little leisure to think of any thing but the meanes of gaineing health and ease, I am perswaded you will excuse me if I have not decided in my thoughts which was the greatest captaine, Cæsar or Pompey; whether Mr. De Rosny were not a great politician, a brave soldier, and the best servant that ever Prince had for capacity, fidelity and steadinesse, a man strangely disinterested, infinitely fortunate, and every way qualified to serve such a master as was Henry the Great, who notwithstanding humane frailties, was worthy to be faithfully dealt with, since he knew how to judge and to reward. But why do we allwayes look back into times past? wee may not reproch our owne, since heere is at this present a scene for galantrie and merit, and whilst wee may hope, wee must not condemne. Should I tell you how full of sorrow I have ben for the losse of Dr. Bretton, [minister of Deptford; he died in February 1672] you only would blame me; after death flattery ceases, therefore you may beleieve there was some cause to lament when thousands of weeping eyes witnessed the affliction their soules were in; one would have imagined every one in this parish had lost a father, brother, or husband, so great was the bewailing; and

in earnest it dos appeare there never was a better nor a more worthy man. Such was his temper, prudence, charity, and good conduct, that he gained the weeke and preserved the wise. The sudenesse of his death was a surprise only to his friends ; as for himselfe it might be looked upon as a deliverance from paine, the effect of sicknesse, and I am almost perswaded God snatched him from us, least he might have ben prevailed with by the number of petitions to have left him still amongst us. If you suspect kindness in me makes me speake too much, Doctor Parr¹ is a person against whome you cannot object ; it was he who preached the funerall sermon, and as an effect of truth as well as eloquence he himselfe could not forbear weeping in the pulpit. It was his owne expression that there were three for whome he infinitely greeved, the martyred King, my Lord Primate (Archbishop Usher) and Doctor Bretton ; and as a confirmation of the right that was done him in that oration, there was not a drie eye nor a dissenting person. But of this no more.

“M. EVELYN.

“SAYES COURT, 2 March 1671-2.”

“TO LADY TUKE

“April 1685.

“How to expresse the sorrow for parting with so deare a child is a difficult task. She was welcome to me from the first moment God gave her, acceptable through the whole course of her life by a thousand endearments, by the gifts of nature, by acquired parts, by the tender love she ever shew'd her father and me : a thred of piety accompanied all her actions, and now proves our greatest consolation. The patience, resignation, humility of her carriage in so severe and fatall a disease, discover'd more than an ordinary assistance of the Divine goodness, never expressing feare of death, or a desire to live, but for her friends sake. The seaventh day of her illnesse she discoursed to me in particular as calmly as in health, desir'd to confesse and receive

¹ Richard Parr, D.D., Vicar of Reigate and Camberwell. Died, November 2, 1691. The funeral sermon alluded to was printed in 1672. See Manning and Bray's *History of Surrey*, vol. i. 9, 323.

the blessed Sacrament, which she perform'd with great devotion, after which, tho' in her perfect senses to the last, she never signified the least concerne for the world, prayed often, and resigned her soule.—What shall I say ! She was too great a blessing for me, who never deserved any thing, much lesse such a jewell. I am too well assured of yr Lps kindnesse to doubt the part you take in this losse ; you have ever shew'd yrselfe a friend in so many instances, that I presume upon yr compassion ; nothing but this just occasion could have hindered me from wellcoming you to towne, and rejoyceing with the best friend I have in the world—a friend by merit and inclination, one I must esteeme as the wife of so worthy a relation and so sincere a friend as Sr Sam: (Tuke) was to me and mine. What is this world, when we recall past things ! What are the charms that keep our minds in suspence ! Without the conversation of those we love, what is life worth ! How did I propose happinesse this sum'er in the returne of yr Ld and my deare child—for she was absent almost all this winter !

“ She had much improved her selfe by the remarks she had made of the world and all its vanities—What shall I add ! I could ever speake of her, and might I be just to her without suspition of partiality, could tell you many things. The papers which are found in her cabinet discover she profited by her readying—such reflections, collections out of Scripture, confessions, meditations, and pious notions, evidence her time was not spent in the trifling way of most young women. I acknowledge, as a Christian, I ought not to murmur, and I should be infinitely sorry to incur God's further displeasure. There are those yet remaining that challenge my care, and for their sakes I endeavour to submitt all I can. I thank my poore Cousin a thousand times for her kind concerne, and wishe she may live to be the comfort you deserve in her, that God will continue the blessing to both, and make you happy—which is the prayer of her who is

“ Yrs Most affectionately,

M. E.”

"TO HER SON JOHN

"I haue received yr letter, and request for a supply of mony ; but none of those you mention which were bare effects of yr duty. If you were so desirous to answer our expectations as you pretend to be, you would give those tutors and overseers you think so exact over you lesse trouble than I feare they have with you. Much is to be wished in yor behalfe : that yr temper were humble and tractable, yr inclinations virtuous, and that from choice not compulsion you make an honnest man. Whateuer object of vice comes before you, should haue the same effect in yr mind of dislike and aversion that drunkenesse had in the youth of Sparta when their slaves were presented to them in that brutish condition, not only from the deformity of such a sight, but from a motive beyond theirs, the hope of a future happinesse, which those rigorous heathens in morall virtue had little prospect of, finding no reward for virtue but in virtue itselfe. You are not too young to know that lying, defrauding, swearing, disobedience to parents and persons in authority, are offences to God and man : that debauchery is injurious to growth, health, life, and indeed to the pleasures of life : therefore now that you are turning from child to man endeavour to follow the best precepts, and chuse such wayes as may render you worthy of praise and love. You are assured of yr Father's care and my tendernes : no mark of it shall be wanting at any time to confirme it to you, with this reserve only, that you strive to deserve kindnesse by a sincere honest proceeding, and not flatter yrselke that you are good whilst you only appeare to be so. Fallacies will only passe in schools. When you thoroughly weigh these considerations, I hope you will apply them to your owne advantage, as well as to our infinite satisfaction. I pray dayly God would inspire you with his grace, and blesse you.

"I am,

Yr Louing mother,

M. EVELYN."

Mary outlived her husband three years. She died at her house in Dover Street, London, February 9, 1709, aged seventy-four, and was buried at Wotton, February 14. By her will, dated February 9, 1708, she desired to be buried in a stone coffin near that of "my dear husband, whose love and friendship I was happy in 58 years 9 months, but by God's Providence left a disconsolate widow the 27 day of February, 1705, in the 71st year of my age. His care of my education was such as might become a father, a lover, a friend, for instruction, tenderness, affection and fidelity to the last moment of his life; which obligation I mention with a gratitude to his memory, ever dear to me; and I must not omit to own the sense I have of my Parents care and goodnesse, in placing me in such worthy hands."

In the year 1666 the second edition of John Evelyn's *Kalendarium Hortense, or the Gard'ner's Almanack*, had been published and dedicated to his friend Abraham Cowley the poet. This called forth from Cowley a poem entitled "The Garden," addressed to Evelyn. In the first verse Mary Evelyn is mentioned in very flattering terms. It is printed in *Evelyn's Miscellaneous Writings*, edited by William Upcott in 1825. The original manuscript in the handwriting of Abraham Cowley was given to William Upcott by Lady Evelyn, who died in 1817 and was the widow of Sir Frederick Evelyn.

FIRST VERSE OF "THE GARDEN"

BY ABRAHAM COWLEY

Happy art Thou whom God does bless
 Wth ye full choice of thine own happinesse !
 And happier yet, becaus thou'rt blest
 Wth prudence how to choos the best !
 In Books and Gardens thou hast plac'd aright
 (Things wch thou well dost understand,
 And both dost make wth thy laborious hand)
 Thy noble, innocent delight :
 And in thy virtuous Wife, where thou again dost meet
 Both pleasures more refin'd and sweet :
 The fairest garden in her looks,
 And in her mind the wisest books.

Oh who would change theis soft, yet solid joys,
 For empty shows and senceless noise,
 And all wch rank Ambition breeds,
 Wch seem such beauteous flowers, and are such poisonous weeds ?

WILL OF MARY EVELYN, WIDOW OF JOHN EVELYN

(P.C.C. 32 Lane)

“ The 9th day of February 1708, I Mary Evelyn Widow of John Evelyn late of Wotton in Co. Surrey Esquire being weake in Body but of perfect memory . . . Do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament in manner and sence following First and Especially I recommend my immortall Soul into the hands of Almighty God. . . .

“ My Body to be deposited in the Parish Church of Wotton aforesaid in a Stone Coffin and sett near that of my dear Husband whose love and Friendshipp I was happy in fifty-eight yeares nine Monthes but by God’s Providence left a Disconsolate Widow the Seaven and twentyeth day of February 1705 in the seventy first year of my age. His care of my Education was such as might become a Father a Lover a Friend and Husband for Instruction Tenderness Affection and Fidelity to the last moment of his Life which Obligation I mention with due Gratitude to his Memory ever dear to me And I must not omitt to own the sense I have of my Parents care (*sic*) and Goodness in placing me in such worthy hands As to my personall Estate I Give devise bequeath and dispose of the same as followeth : Imprimus I will and direct that the Charges of my Funerall which I desire may be only decent and all such just debts as shall be oweing and unpaid at my Death shall be paid and satisfyed by my Executor hereinafter named with all convenient speed after my decease Item I Give to the Poor of the Parish of Wotton the sume of 5^{li} Item I give to the poor of the Parish of Deptford £5 Item I give and bequeath to my daughter Martha Evelyn the Lease of my House in Dover Streete I give her alsoe the Goods and Furniture in the said House belonging to me at my Death as Beds Hangings Pictures Cabinetts Chaires Stooles Tables Pewter Brass either in Kitchen Parlours or Chambers Table

Linnen also Sheets and Kitchen Linnen Looking Glasses China the choice of what pieces of Plate may be usefull out of my little stock the Stairs Clock all to use during her Life then to returne to my Grandson John Evelyn I give her my Ring given me by my Lady Stonehouse at her Death also my Ebony Toylett Box and Toylett Looking Glass with a narrow Border and what remaines in the drawers of the Black Cabinett when things are disposed of being particularly expressed I give her my share in the new Coach and a browne Leather purse with 7 pieces of Gold I desire her to dispose of my small Wardrobe according to the Particulars mentioned in a Letter directed to her Item I give to my son William Draper Esquire 20 Guineas to bestow in a Ring or Piece of Plate which he pleases I give to my Daughter Susanna Draper an Orang Colour Silk Purse with 22 pieces of Gold the particular Coins sett doune in a paper in my own hand in the Purse Also a pair of Enamel Pendants with red drops I give my Grandson Draper a Purse with six Dozen of Silver Counters French Coin I give Susan Draper a Bracelett of Moucca stones sett in Gold in a Tortoise Shell Box alsoe a Gold Box for sweets enamelled with a Turquoise Stone sett in the Lidd I give my Goddaughter Evelyn Draper a Moucca stone Bracelet sett in Gold in a Tortoise Shell Box Alsoe a Mantle of Angaria Goats Haire to lay on a Bed I give Sarah Draper 10 halfe Guineas in a purse to buy her a Ring Item I give my Grandson John Evelyn a chased two ear'd Cupp Cover and Salver Alsoe a chased little Sugar Dish I give him what plate remains when my daughter Evelyn has chose for her use which is to returne to him after her death I give him a Crimson and Gold Purse with 51 pieces of Gold Coins sett doune in a paper in my hand in the Purse accompanied with the Blessing of increase as it was given me Alsoe a nett purse with 129 Silver Coins as appears in a Note of Particulars in the Purse Alsoe a Tortoise Shell Box with a Gold Medall of Andrea Doria in a Box and 36 Medalls and Coins Silver and Silver Gilt Alsoe my Wedding Ring and a little Gold Ring with a Toad stone my Fathers Alsoe a Sardonix Seale engraved with my Arms only finely sett Alsoe an Onix Seal with both Coats engraved sett in Gold

and my Table Clock Item I give my Granddaughter Anne Evelyn my Japan Cabinett and Frame all the China that stands upon it and the three large China Basons under it alsoe the great China Jarr Alsoe a Japan lacre Card box shap'd like a Fann in it two Dozen of Mill'd Queen Elizabeth sixpences in a nett Purse Alsoe what small china miniature Pictures or little Curiosities are in the Cabinet an approved Bloudstone some unsett Moucca Stones alsoe a Feather Mantle to lay on a Bed in a black and white Chint Cover Alsoe a Chest of Drawers and Dressing Box in the dineing room at Wotton Item I give my Granddaughter Elizabeth Evelyn a silver chased round Box with 17 pieces of Gold Coins and 13 Silver Coins besides one Vigo Medall of the Queenes in Silver Alsoe a sett of Japan Boxes trays salvers Looking glass all fitted to a Wainscott Case lin'd Alsoe an Indian Baskett and Frame Alsoe a Gold and silk floured Gawse Upper Toilett with a silk Fringe I give her a white flourished upper Toilett upon Muslin and the Toylett to set about the Table and one for the Baskett all of a sort Also a stitched white India Bed Gowne Wastcoate and Table Toilett all of the same sort of stitching in scales I give her a white stitch's Indian Quilt for a Bed a colour'd flower'd Indian Quilt for a Bed a White Fur Mantle to lay on a Bed Alsoe a suite of Holland Napkins wrought and three Table Cloaths I give my Goddaughter Frances Glanville a Metie Gold purse with 10 pieces of Gold the particulars in a note in my hand in the purse I give Mrs. Mary Fowler my sable muff and Tippet I give my Goddaughter Anne Sherwood 5 pounds I give Mr. Strickland 10 pounds I give Mr. Bedingfield 5 pounds I desire if Mrs. Bruskell is with me at my Death she may have 10 pounds I desire Jean Hinge may have 10 pounds I give Mrs. Billingsley 2 guineas I give Mrs. Alexander 2 guineas I desire those Servants who have no Legacies exprest may have halfe a yeares Wages over and above what is due to them And I doe hereby make declare nominate and appoint the said John Evelyn my Grandson whole and sole Executor of this my Will and I doe give and devise to him my said Grandson All the rest and residue of my Personall Estate undisposed of by this my Will And

lastly Revoking all former Wills I do hereby make and declare this to be my last Will comprized in five sheets of paper. In Witness whereof I have hereunto sett my Hand and Seale the day and Yeare above written

MARY EVELYN.

Witnesses, ANN STRICKLAND.

MARY FOUNES."

"Proved 26 February 1708."

CHILDREN OF JOHN EVELYN (SYLVA)

JOHN EVELYN had eight children, five sons and three daughters, but of the sons four died in infancy and only one lived to succeed his father. The names of the children were—Richard, the eldest son, born at Sayes Court, August 24, 1652; John Stansfield, second son, born at Sayes Court, October 11, 1653, died there January 25, 1654, and buried in St. Nicholas, Deptford; John, third son, born at Sayes Court, January 19, 1655; George, fourth son, born at Sayes Court, June 7, 1657, died February 15, 1658, and buried at St. Nicholas, Deptford; Richard, fifth son, born at Sayes Court, January 10, 1644, died March 26, 1664, and buried at St. Nicholas, Deptford; Mary, eldest daughter, born at Wotton, September 30, 1665; Elizabeth, second daughter, born at Sayes Court, September 14, 1667; and Susanna, the youngest child, born at Sayes Court, May 20, 1669.

RICHARD, ELDEST SON OF JOHN EVELYN (SYLVA)

The following account of Evelyn's eldest son Richard, who died at the age of six (January 27, 1658), is taken from *The Golden Book of St. John Chrysostom, concerning the Education of Children*, which was translated from the Greek by John Evelyn and published in 1659. It was written by him as a consolation for the loss of his son, who was an extraordinarily promising boy, and it was dedicated to his two brothers George and Richard, who had both lost children of their own.

"I cannot, with St. Augustine, say of my son, as he of his, *Annorum erat fere quindecim, and ingenio proeveniebat*

multos graves and doctos viros. But this I can truly affirm ; he was little above five years old, and he did excel many that I have known of fifteene. *Tam brevi spatio tempora multa compleverat.* He was taught to pray as soon as he could speak, and he was taught to read as soon as he could pray. At three years old he read any character or letter whatsoever used in our printed books, and, within a little time after, any tolerable writing hand, and had gotten (by heart) before he was five years of age seven or eight hundred Latine and Greek words, as I have since calculated out of his *ὀνομασκον*, together with their genders and declensions. I entered him then upon the verbs, which in four months time he did perfectly conjugate, together with most of the irregulars excepted in our grammar. These he conquered with incredible delight, and intelligence of their use. But it is more strange to consider, that when from then I thought to set him to the nouns, he had in that interim (by himself) learned both the declensions and their examples, their exceptions, adjectives, comparisons, pronouns, without any knowledge or precept of mine, insomuch as I stood amazed at his sedulity and memory. This engaged me to bring him a *Sententiae Pueriles*, and a *Cato*, and of late *Comenius* ; the short sentences of which two first, and the more solid ones of the last, he learned to construe and parse, as fast as one could well teach and attend him : for he became not onely dextrous in the ordinary rules by frequent recourse to them (for indeed I never obliged him to get any of them by heart as a task, by that same carnificine *puerorum*) upon occasions, but did at this age also easily comprehend both the meaning and the use of the relative, and ellipsis, and defects of verbs and nouns unexpressed. But to repeat here all that I could justly affirm concerning his promptitude in this nature, were altogether prodigious, so that truly I have been sometimes even constrained to cry out with the father, as of another Adeodatus, *horrori mihi est hoc ingenium.* For so insatiable were his desires of knowledge, that I well remember upon a time hearing one discourse of Terence and Plautus, and being told (upon his enquiring concerning these authors) that the books were too difficult for him, he

wept for very grief, and would hardly be pacified ; but thus it is reported of Thucydides, when these noble Muses were recited in his hearing, from whence was predicted the greatness of his genius. To tell you how exactly he read French, how much of it he spake and understood, were to let you onely know that his mother did instruct him without any confusion to the rest. Thus he learned a catechism and many prayers, and read divers things in that language. More to be admired was the liveliness of his judgment, that being much affected with the diagramms in Euclid, he did with so great facility interpret to me many of the common postulata and definitions, which he would readily repeate in Latine and apply it. And he was in one hour onely taught to play the first half of a thorough basse, to one of our Church psalmes, upon the organ. Let no man think that we did hereby crowd his spirit too full of notions. Those things which we force upon other children were strangely natural to him ; for as he very seldome affected their toys, to such things were his usual recreations as the gravest man might not be ashamed to divert himself withal. These were especially the *Apologues of Æsop*, most of which he could so readily recount, with divers other stories, as you would admire from whence he produced them ; but he was never without some book or other in his hand. Pictures did afford him infinite pleasure ; above all, a pen and ink, with which he now began to form his letters. Thus he often delighted himself in reciting of poems and sentences, some whereof he had in Greek, fragments of comedies, divers verses out of Herbert, and, amongst the psalmes, his beloved and often repeated *Ecce quam bonum* : and indeed he had an ear so curiously framed to sounds, that he would never misse infallibly to have told you what language it was you did read by the accent only, were it Latin, Greek, French, Italian, or Dutch. To all I might add, the incomparable sweetness of his countenance and eyes, the clean fabric of his body and pretty addresses : how easily he forgot injuries, when at any time I would break and crosse his passions, by sometimes interrupting his enjoyments, in the midst of some sweet or other delicious things which allured

him, that I might thereby render him the more indifferent to all things, though these he seldom quitted without rewards and advantage. But above all, extremely conspicuous was his affection to his younger brother, with whose impertinencies he would continually bear, saying, he was but a child, and understood no better. For he was ever so smiling, cheerful and in perfect good humour, that it might be truly verified of him, as it was once of Heliodorus, *gravitatem morum hilaritate frontis temperabat*. But these things were obvious, and I dwel no longer on them : there are yet better behind ; and those are, his early piety, and how ripe he was for God. Never did this child lye in bed (by his good will) longer than six or seven, winter or summer ; and the first thing he did (being up) was to say his French prayers, and our Church Catechism ; after breakfast that short Latine prayer, which having encountered at the beginning of our Lillie's Grammar, he had learned by heart, without any knowledge or injunction of mine, and whatsoever he so committed to memory, he would never desist till he perfectly understood ; yet with all this, did he no day employ above two houres at his book by my order ; what he else learned was most by himselfe, without constraint or the least severity, unseene, and totally imported by his own inclination. But to return, wonderful was it to observe the chapters which himselfe would choose, and the psalmes and verses that he would apply upon occasion, and as in particular he did to some that were sick in my family a little before him, bidding them to consider the sufferings of Christ, how bitter they were, and how willingly he endured them. How frequently would he pray by himself in the day time, and procure others to joyn with him in some private corner of the house apart ? The last time he was at church (which was, as I remember, at Greenwich), at his return I asked him what he brought away from the sermon ; he replied, that he had remembered two good things, *bonum gratiae*, and *bonum gloriae*, which expressions were indeed used, though I did not believe he had minded them.

“ I should even tire you with repeating all that I might

call to mind of his pertinent answers upon several occasions, one of the best whereof I will only instance. When about Christmas a kinsman of his related to us by the fire side some passages of the presumptuous fasting of certain enthusiasts about Colchester, whilst we were expressing some admiration at the passage, That, sayes the child (being upon the gentleman's knee, and, as we thought, not minding the discourse), is no such wonder, for it is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, &c.' But more to be admired was his perfect comprehension of the sacred histories in the method of our Golden Author, so as it may be truly affirmed of this child, as it was once said of Timothy, *Quod a puero sacras literas noverat*. Nor was all this by rote only (as they term it), for that he was capable of the greater mystery of our salvation by Christ I have had many infallible indications. And when the Lord's day fortnight before he died, he repeated to me our Church Catechism, he told me that he now perceived his godfathers were disengaged; for that since he himself did now understand what his duty was, it would be required of him, and not of them for the future. And let no man think, that when I use the term dis-engaged, it is to expresse the child's meaning with a fine word, for he did not only make use of such phrases himself, but would frequently in his ordinary discourse come out with such expressions as one would have admired how he came by them; but upon enquiry he would certainly have produced his authority, and either in the Bible or some other booke, shewed you the words so used. How divinely did this pious infant speake of his being weary of this troublesome world (into which he was scarcely entred), and whilst he lay sick, of his desires to goe to Heaven; that the angels might conveye him into Abrahams bosome, passionately perswading those that tended him to dye with him; for he told them that he knew he should not live; and, really, though it were an ague which carried him from us (a disease which I least apprehended, finding him so lively in his interval), yet the day before he took his leave of us, he call'd to me, and pronounced it very soberly; Father (says he), you have often told me that you would give me your house, and your land,

your bookes, and all your fine things ; but I tell you, I shall have none of them ; you will leave them all to my brother. This he spake without any provocation or passion ; and it did somewhat trouble me, that I could not make him alter this conceit, which in another would be esteemed prophetick. But that I may conclude, and shew how truly jealous this child was least he should offend God in the least scruple, that very morning, not many houres before he fell into that sleepe which was his last, being in the midst of his paroxysme, he called to me, and asked of me whether he should not offend, if in the extremity of his pain he mentioned so often the name of God calling for ease ; and whether God would accept his prayers if he did not hold his hands out of bed in the posture of praying ? which when I had pacified him about, he prayed, till his prayers were turned into eternal praises. Thus ended your nephew, being but five years five monethes and three dayes old, and more I could still say, *Nam quem corpore non valemus rebordatione teneamus, et cum quo loqui non possumus de eo loqui nunquam desinamus.* But my tears mingle so fast with my inke, that I must breake off here, and be silent—I end therefore with that blessed Saint : *Munera tua tibi confiteor, Domine Deus meus, Creator omnium, multum potens reformare nostra deformia ; nam ego in illo puero, praeter delictum nihil habebam. Quod enim enutriebatur a nobis in disciplina tua. Tu inspira veras nobis, nullus alius. Munera tua tibi confiteor—Cito de terra abstulisti vitum ejus, et securior eum recordor.* Deare Brothers, indulge me these excesses. It is not a new thing which I doe. St. Hierom wrote divers Epistles, which he inscribed his Epitaphs ; and never was a Paula or Estochium dearer to him then this your nephew was to

“ Dear B. B.,

Your most affectionate brother and most
humble servant,

J. E.”

"GROT. AD PATREM.

"CARERE LIBERIS DURUM NON EST, NISI HIS QUI HABUERUNT."

In Evelyn's *Diary* there is another description of this child in very much the same words. It ends in these words :

"In my opinion he was suffocated by ye women and maids that tended him, and cover'd him too hot with blankets as he lay in a cradle, near an excessive hot fire in a close roome. I suffer'd him to be open'd, when they found that he was what is vulgarly call'd liver-growne. I caused his body to be coffin'd in lead, and repositied on the 30th at 8 o'clock that night in the church at Deptford, accompanied with divers of my relations and neighbours, among whom I distributed rings with this motto : *Dominus abstulit* ; intending, God willing, to have him transported with my own body to be interr'd in our dormitory in Wotton Church in my dear native county of Surrey, and to lay my bones and mingle my dust with my fathers, if God be gracious to me and make me as fit for Him as this blessed child was. The Lord Jesus sanctify this and all other my afflictions, Amen. Here ends the joy of my life and for which I go even mourning to the grave."

In St. Nicholas Church, Deptford, there is a monument of white marble to the memory of Richard, with a Latin inscription of which the following is the English translation :—

"R., son of John Evelyn, rests under this stone ; and with him rests everything that father's love can cherish, and lament when deprived of. That fair face no longer as of old, bright with the smile of intelligence ; the unusual grace of manner which few can attain, which all who knew him will miss ; the simple talk in French or Latin languages which he took in with his mother's milk—all silent now. He had begun the study of the arts, and with the principles of the arts had learnt those of piety as well ; and was so fond of his books that only death could tear him from them. His example showed how much natural quickness, discipline, and labour, when united, could achieve. Marvellous as a child what would he have been when old, had fate allowed him length of life ? But God decreed otherwise. A slight fever carried him off after he had lived five years, eight

months, and a few days. He was the only child of his parents, and alas! how brief was their enjoyment! What mortals love, let them beware never to love too well!"

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO SIR RICHARD BROWNE ¹

"SIR,—By the reverse of this medall, you will perceive how much reason I had to be affraid of my felicity, and how greatly it did import me to do all that I could to prevent what I have apprehended, what I deserved, and what I now feele. God has taken from us that deare Childe, your Grandson, your Godsonn, and with him all the joy and satisfaction that could be derived from the greatest hopes. A losse, so much the more to be deplored, as our contentments were extraordinary, and the indications of his future perfections as faire and legible as, yet, I ever saw, or read off in one so very young: You have, Sir, heard so much of this, that I may say it with the lesse crime and suspicion. And indeede his whole life was from the beginning so greate a miracle, that it were hard to excede in the description of it, and which I should here yet attempt, by sum'ing up all the prodigies of it, and what a child of 5 yeares old (for he was little more) is capable off, had I not given you so many minute and particular accounts of it, by several expresses, when I then mentioned those things with the greatest joy, which now I write with as much sorrow and amasement. But so it is, that it has pleased God to dispose of him, and that Blossome (Fruit, rather I may say) is fallen; a six days Quotidian having deprived us of him; an accident that has made so great a breach in all my contentments, as I do never hope to see repaired: because we are not in this life to be fed with wonders: and that I know you will hardly be able to support the affliction & the losse, who beare so greate a part in every thing that concernes me. But thus we must be reduced when God sees good, and I submitt; since I had, therefore, this blessing for a punishment, & that I might feele the effects of my greate unworthynesse. But I have begged of God that I might pay the fine heare, and if to such belonged the

¹ From *Evelyn's Memoirs*, edited by William Bray.

Kingdome of Heaven, I have one depositum there. *Dominus dedit, Dominus abstulit* : blessed be his name : since without that consideration it were impossible to support it : for the stroke is so severe, that I find nothing in all Philosophy capable to allay the impression of it, beyond that of cutting the channell and dividing with our friends, who really sigh on our behalfe, and mingle with our greater sorrows in accents of piety and compassion, which is all that can yet any ways alleviate the sadnesse of, Deare Sir, Your &c.

“ SAYES COURT, 14 Feb: 1657-8.”

DESCRIPTION FROM EVELYN'S *DIARY* OF HIS DAUGHTER
MARY, WHO DIED OF SMALL-POX, MARCH 14, 1685

“ *March 7, 1685.* My daughter Mary was taken with the small-pox, and there soon was found no hope of her recovery. A very greate affliction to me ; but God's Holy will be done.

“ *March 10.* She received the blessed sacrement ; after which, disposing herselfe to suffer what God should determine to inflict, she bore the remainder of her sicknesse with extraordinary patience and piety, and more than ordinary resignation and blessed frame of mind. She died the 14th, to our unspeakable sorrow and affliction, and not to ours onely, but that of all who knew her, who were many of the best quality, greatest and most virtuous persons. The justnesse of her stature, person, comeliness of countenance, gracefullnesse of motion, unaffected tho' more than ordinary beautifull, were the least of her ornaments compared with those of her mind. Of early piety, singularly religious, spending a part of every day in private devotion, reading, and other virtuous exercises ; she had collected and written out many of the most usefull and judicious periods of the books she read in a kind of common-place, as out of Dr. Hammond on the New Testament, and most of the best practical treatises. She had read and digested a considerable deale of history and of places. The French tongue was as familiar to her as English ; she understood Italian, and was able to render a laudable account of what

she read and observed, to which assisted a most faithful memory and discernment ; and she did make very prudent and discrete reflections upon what she had observ'd of the conversations among which she had at any time ben, which being continually of persons of the best quality, she thereby improved. She had an excellent voice, to which she play'd a thorough-bass on the harpsi-chord, in both which arived to that perfection, that of the schollars of those two famous masters Signors Pietro and Bartholomeo she was esteem'd the best ; for the sweetness of her voice and management of it added such an agreeableness to her countenance, without any constraint or concerne, that when she sung, it was as charming to the eye as to the eare ; this I rather note, because it was a universal remarke, and for which so many noble and judicious persons in music desired to heare her, the last being at Lord Arundel's of Wardour. What shall I say, or rather not say, of the cheerfullness and agreeableness of her humour ? condescending to the meanest servant in the family, or others, she still kept up respect, without the least pride. She would often reade to them, examine, instruct, and pray with them if they were sick, so as she was exceedingly beloved of everybody. Piety was so prevalent an ingredient in her constitution (as I may say), that even amongst equals and superiors she no sooner became intimately acquainted, but she would endeavour to improve them, by insinuating something of religious, and that tended to bring them to a love of devotion ; she had one or two confidants with whom she used to passe whole dayes of fasting, reading and prayers, especialy before the monethly communion and other solemn occasions. She abhorr'd flattery and tho' she had abundance of witt, the raillery was so innocent and ingenuous that it was most agreeable ; she sometimes would see a play, but since the stage grew licentious, express'd herselfe weary of them, and the time spent at the theater was an unaccountable vanity. She never play'd at cards without extreme importunity and for the company, but this was so very seldome that I cannot number it among any thing she could name a fault. No one could read prose or verse better or with more judgment ; and as she read, so

she writ, not only most correct orthography, with that maturitie of judgment and exactnesse of the periods, choice of expressions, and familiarity of style, that some letters of hers have astonish'd me and others to whom she has occasionally written. She had a talent of rehersing any comical part or poeme, as to them she might be decently free with; was more pleasing than heard on ye theater; she daunc'd with the greatest grace I had ever seene, and so would her master say, who was Monsr Isaac; but she seldome shew'd that perfection, save in the gracefullnesse of her carriage, which was with an aire of spritely modestie not easily to be described. Nothing affected, but natural and easy as well in her deportment as in her discourse, which was always materiall, not trifling, and to which the extraordinary sweetness of her tone, even in familiar speaking, was very charming. Nothing was so pretty as her descending to play with little children, whom she would caresse and humour with greate delight. But she most affected to be with grave and sober men, of whom she might learne something, and improve herselfe. I have been assisted by her in reading and praying by me; comprehensive of uncommon notions, curious of knowing every thing to some excesse, had I not sometimes repressed it. Nothing was so full delightfull to her as to go into my study, where she would willingly have spent whole dayes, for as I sayd she had read abundance of history, and all the best poets, even Terence, Plautus, Homer, Virgil, Horace, Ovid; all the best romances and modern poemes; she could compose happily, and put in pretty symbols, as in the 'Mundus Muliebris,' wherein is an enumeration of the immense variety of the modes and ornaments belonging to the sex; but all these are vaine trifles to the virtues which adorn'd her soule; she was sincerely religious, most dutifull to her parents, whom she lov'd with an affection temper'd with greate esteeme, so as we were easy and free, and never were so well pleas'd as when she was with us, nor needed we other conversation; she was kind to her sisters, and was still improving them by her constant course of piety. Oh deare, sweete and desireable child, how shall I part with all this goodness and virtue without the bitterness of sorrow

and reluctancy of a tender parent ! Thy affection, duty, and love to me was that of a friend as well as a child. Nor less deare to thy mother, whose example and tender care of thee was unparallel'd, nor was thy returne to her lesse conspicuous ; Oh ! how she mourns thy loss ! how desolate hast thou left us ! To the grave shall we both carry thy memory !

“ God alone (in whose bosom thou art at rest and happy) give us to resigne thee and all our contentments (for thou indeede wert all in this world) to his blessed pleasure ! Let him be glorified by our submission, and give us grace to blesse him for the graces he implanted in thee, thy virtuous life, pious and holy death, which is indeede the onely comfort of our soules, hastening thro' the infinite love and mercy of the Lord Jesus to be shortly with thee, deare child, and with thee and those blessed saints like thee, glorifye the Redeemer of the world to all eternity. Amen !

“ It was in the 19th year of her age that this sickness happened to her. An accident contributed to this disease ; she had an apprehension of it in particular, which struck her but two days before she came home, by an imprudent gentlewoman whom she went with Lady Falkland to visite, who after they had ben a good while in the house, told them she had a servant sick of the small-pox (who indeede died the next day) ; this my poore child acknowledg'd made an impression on her spirits. There were four gentlemen of quality offering to treat with me about marriage, and I freely gave her her owne choice, knowing her discretion. She showed greate indifference to marrying at all, for truly, says she to her mother (the other day), were I assured of your life and my deare father's, never would I part from you ; I love you and this home, where we serve God, above all things, nor ever shall I be so happy : I know and consider the vicissitudes of the world, I have some experience of its vanities, and but for decency more than inclination, and that you judge it expedient for me, I would not change my condition, but rather add the fortune you designe me to my sisters, and keepe up the reputation of our family. This was so discreetly and sincerely utter'd that it could not but proceede from an extraordinary child, and one who lov'd her parents beyond example.

“At London she tooke this fatal disease, and the occasion of her being there was this; my Lord Viscount Falkland’s Lady having ben our neighbour (as he was Treasuere of the Navy), she tooke so greate an affection to my daughter; that when they went back in the autumn to the citty, nothing would satisfie their incessant importunity but letting her accompany my Lady, and staying sometime with her; it was with ye greatest reluctance I complied. Whilst she was there, my Lord being musical, when I saw my Lady would not part with her till Christmas, I was not unwilling she should improve the opportunity of learning of Signr Pietro, who had an admirable way both of composure and teaching. It was the end of February before I could prevail with my Lady to part with her; but my Lord going into Oxfordshire to stand for Knight of the Shire there, she express’d her wish to come home, being tir’d of ye vaine and empty conversation of the towne, ye theatres, the court, and trifling visites wch consum’d so much precious time, and made her sometimes misse of that regular course of piety that gave her ye greatest satisfaction. She was weary of this life, and I think went not thrice to Court all this time, except when her mother or I carried her. She did not affect shewing herselfe, she knew ye Court well, and pass’d one summer in it at Windsor with Lady Tuke, one of the Queene’s women of the bed-chamber (a most virtuous relation of hers); she was not fond of that glittering scene, now become admirably licentious, though there was a designe of Lady Rochester and Lady Clarendon to have made her a maid of Honour to the Queene as soone as there was a vacancy. But this she did not set her heart upon, nor indeede on any thing so much as the service of God, a quiet and regular life, and how she might improve herselfe in the most necessary accomplishments, and to wch she was arriv’d at so greate a measure.

“This is ye little history and imperfect character of my deare child, whose piety, virtue, and incomparable endowments deserve a monument more durable than brasse and marble. Precious is the memorial of the just. Much I could enlarge on every period of this hasty account, but that I ease and discharge my over coming passion for the present,

so many things worthy an excellent Christian and dutifull child crowding upon me. Never can I say enough, oh deare, my deare child, whose memory is so precious to me !

“ This deare child was born at Wotton, in the same house and chamber in which I first drew my breath, my Wife having retir'd to my Brother there in the great sickness that yeare upon the first of that moneth, and neere the very houre that I was borne, upon the last : viz. October.

“ *March 16th.* She was interr'd in the south-east end of the church at Deptford, neere her grandmother and severall of my younger children and relations. My desire was she should have ben carried and layed among my own parents and relations at Wotton, where I desire to be interr'd mysele, when God shall call me out of this uncertaine transitory life, but some circumstances did not permit it. Our vicar Dr. Holden preach'd her funeral sermon on 1 Phil. v. 21 : ‘ For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gaine,’ upon which he made an apposite discourse, as those who heard it assur'd me (for griefe suffer'd me not to be present), concluding with a modest recital of her many virtues and signal piety, so as to draw both teares and admiration from the hearers. I was not altogether unwilling that something of this sort should be spoken, for the edification and encouragement of other young people.

“ Divers noble persons honour'd her funeral, some in person, others sending their coaches, of wch there were six or seven with six horses, viz. the Countesse of Sunderland, Earle of Clarendon, Lord Godolphin, Sir Stephen Fox, Sir Wm. Godolphin, Viscount Falkland, and others. There were distributed amongst her friends about 60 rings.

“ Thus liv'd, died and was buried the joy of my life, and ornament of her sex and of my poore family ! God Almighty of his infinite mercy grant me the grace thankfully to resigne mysele and all I have, or had, to his divine pleasure, and in his good time, restoring health and comfort to my family : ‘ Teach me so to number my days that I may apply my heart to wisdom,’ be prepared for my dissolution, and that into the hands of my blessed Saviour I may recommend my spirit ! Amen !

“ On looking into her closet, it is incredible what a number of collections she had made from historians, poetes, travellers, &c., but above all devotions, contemplations and resolutions on these contemplations, found under her hand in a booke most methodically dispos'd ; prayers, meditations, and devotions on particular occasions, with many pretty letters to her confidants ; one to a divine (not nam'd) to whom she writes that he would be her ghostly father, and would not despise her for her many errors and the imperfections of her youth, but beg of God to give her courage to acquaint him with all her faults, imploring his assistance and spiritual directions. I well remember she had often desir'd me to recommend her to such a person, but I did not think fit to do it as yet, seeing her apt to be scrupulous, and knowing the great innocency and integrity of her life.

“ It is astonishing how one who had acquir'd such substantial and practical knowledge in other ornamental parts of education, especially music both vocal and instrumental, in dauncing, paying and receiving visites, and necessary conversation, could accomplish halfe of what she has left ; but as she never affected play or cards, which consume a world of precious time, so she was in continual exercise, which yet abated nothing of her most agreeable conversation. But she was a little miracle while she liv'd, and so she died ! ”

The monument to Mary Evelyn in St. Nicholas' Church, Deptford, has the following words :—

“ MARY EVELYN,

Eldest daughter of John Evelyn, and Mary his wife, borne the last day of September, 1665, at Wooton, in the County of Surrey ; a beautiful young woman, endowed with shining qualities both of body and mind, infinitely pious, the delight of her parents and friends. She died the 14th of March, 1685, at the age of nineteen years, five months, seventeen days, regretted by all persons of worth that knew her value.”

ELIZABETH EVELYN

In the same year, 1685, and only a few months after the death of his eldest daughter, Mary, John Evelyn lost his

second daughter, Elizabeth, who died of the same disease as her sister. He writes on August 27 :

“ My daughter Elizabeth died of the small-pox soon after having married a young man, nephew of Sir John Tippet, surveyor of the Navy, and one of the Commissioners. The 30th she was buried in the church at Deptford. Thus in lesse than six moneths were we deprived of two children for our unworthinesse and causes best known to God, whom I beseeche from the bottom of my heart that he will give us grace to make that right use of all these chastizements, that we may become better, and entirely submitt in all things to his infinite wise disposal. Amen.”

SUSANNAH EVELYN

John Evelyn writes of his daughter Susannah on her marriage with William Draper of Adscomb, near Croydon, Surrey, on April 27, 1693 :

“ My daughter Susannah was married to William Draper, Esq. in the chapel of Ely House, by Dr. Tenison, Bishop of Lincoln (since Archbishop). I gave her in portion £4000, her jointure is £500 per annum. I pray Almighty God to give his blessing to this marriage. She is a good child, religious, discreet, ingenious, and qualified with all the ornaments of her sex. She has a peculiar talent in designe, as painting in oil and miniature, and an extraordinary genius for whatever hands can do with a needle. She has the French tongue, has read most of the Greek and Roman authors and poets, using her talents with greates modesty ; exquisitely shap'd, and of an agreeable countenance.

“ This character is due to her, tho' coming from her father.

“ *May 11.* We accompanied my Daughter to her husband's house, where with many of his and our relations we were magnificently treated. There we left her in an apartment very richly adorn'd and furnish'd and I hope in as happy a condition as could be wish'd, and with the greates satisfaction of all our friends ; for wch God be prais'd.”

Susannah is again mentioned by her father in a letter written by him to Dr. Bohun, dated Wotton, January 18, 1697 :

"My daughter Draper being brought to bed in the Christmas holidays of a fine boy, has given an heire to a most deserving husband, a prudent well-natur'd gent, a man of businesse, like to be very rich, and deserving to be so, among the happiest paires I think in England, and to my Daughter's and our hearts' desire. She has also a fine girle, and a Mother-in-law exceedingly fond of my Daughter, and a most excellent woman, charitable and of a very sweete disposition. They all live together, keepe each their coach, and with as suitable an equipage as any in towne."

John Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, June 27, 1702 :

"I went to Wotton with my family for the rest of the Summer, and my son-in-law Draper with his family came to stay with us, his house at Adscomb being new building, so that my family was above 30."

On July 11, 1703, Evelyn writes :

"I went to Adscomb, 16 miles from Wotton, to see my Son-in-law's new house, the outside, to the coveing, being such excellent brick-work, bas'd with Portland stone, with the pilasters, windows and within, that I pronounced it in all the points of good and solid architecture to be one of the very best gentlemen's houses in Surrey, when finish'd. I returned to Wotton in the evening tho' weary."

There is a picture painted by Susannah Evelyn in the picture gallery at Wotton entitled "The Flight into Egypt."

She died August 24, 1754, and was buried in Wotton churchyard. Her daughter died January 12, 1772, and was also buried in Wotton churchyard. Susannah's husband was nephew to Sir Thomas Draper of Sunninghill, Bart.

LETTER FROM SUSANNAH EVELYN TO HER FATHER,
JOHN EVELYN¹

July y^e 25.

"July 25, 1691. I hope dear papa you will not Impute my silence to any want of y^t Duty and respect I am sensible I owe to so good a Father on all occasions, but will rather

¹ Add MSS., 15,949, fo. 128.

believe I forebore writing out of a feare to trouble you with my nonsense knowing how ill I should acquit myself, but in obedience to y^r commands I shall venture with the more assurance to acquainte you with the maner of spending my days since our coming heither, but in the first place must not omitt my thanks to you for the leave you are so kindly pleased to give me to make a longer stay heare then was our first intention to doe. In order to my health I shall do my endeavour to keep to those rules in diet and all other things y^t may contribute towards it, thoe if I dide not hope my Mother would receive good by the Bath should very unwillingly consent to spend so much money & time mearely on my account, espescially when I consider I shall not be able to say much for myself, bathing and drinking watters not allowing me any time to paint or draw, but I hope if it please God to give me health I shall at my returne make up all my idle hours. My Mother haveing informed you of our travells heitherto, it will be needles to repeate what she has expressed in so much better termes then I durst have hoped to doe. I will therefore onely say y^t after hearing so much of the dull cittuation, heat and ill smells of this place, I expected to finde it much less tollerable then it has proved, & I am so far from dislikinge the hills y^t suround it y^t I chuse rather then the greene or lottery where the ladys in the evenings meete, to walke in the Medows frome whence I enjoy the prospect of them. I have in my walks found a very preety Landscape which I intend to draw but dare not promise how well I shall performe, my designe being in some want of the tiffany. I believe I shall returne with the same inclinations towards marrieing a conterry Esqr. as when I left London, & heare being onely married men, & having no ambition to make anye conqueste amonge them, then my heart is in a very secure way at present, & I am full perswaded I shall returne with it as whole as I brought it. We have made some few acquaintance as Sir Richard Franckling & his Lady & one Mr. Bancks & his wife. Besides theese, heare are not many people of quality, my Lord Macklesfield & a Scoch Lord whome they call Alundell being all the noble men. We have had two balls where I bore a part therefore

neede not take great paines to perswade you they were extraordinarye ones, and now I think I have said all I can muster up either of my owne or other peoples affaires & am very sorry the sparks and Ladys have produced no adventures worth sending the relation of. So far the place is in itself very baren of news besides what comes by the news books twice a week from London. I will not presume to add any more but y^t I wish it had bin in my power to informe you of any thing which might have recompensed the pains you will take to reade my scrible, but I hope dear Papa you will accept of the endeavors of her who desires nothing more earnestly then y^t you would believe her to be what she truly is y^r

Dutyfull

Daughter,

S. E.

“Pray doe me the favour to let doctor Bohun know I have received his letter & give him many thanks for his wholesome advise which I shall endeavour to follow. I must not forget to wish you a good journey to Wotton where I hope we shall ere longe all meete.”

(*Addressed.*)

for John Evelyn Esq^r att his
House att Says Court att
Deptford
In Kent.

(*Endorsed.*)

From my Daughter
Susanna

Bath. July 25

1691.

Account of the Bath. J. E.

The following account of Addiscombe is taken from Brayley's *History of Surrey* :—

“This place, formerly called Adgcomb and Adscomb, is about one mile and a half from the town of Croydon on the road to Wickham. In the reign of Henry VIII, this estate belonged to Thomas Heron, who died in 1518, leaving two sons, who held it in succession. Sir Nicholas Heron, the younger, died in 1568, and was interred in Heron's Chapel

in the parish church. Addiscombe afterwards became the residence of Sir John Tunstal, Gentleman Usher to Anne of Denmark, consort of James I; and his eldest son, Henry, who dwelt here, was in 1647 appointed one of the Committee of Inquiry concerning the conduct of the clergy in Surrey. Sir Purbeck Temple, Knt., a member of the Privy Council of Charles II, held this estate; and, as he died without issue in 1695, it came into the possession of his widow, who died in 1700, having left Addiscombe to her nephew, William Draper, son-in-law of the celebrated John Evelyn. Mr. Draper rebuilt the mansion in 1702, the masonry consisting of brick-work cased with Portland stone. Sir John Vanburgh is said to have been the architect and the walls and ceilings of the staircase and saloon were ornamented by the pencil of Sir James Thornhill. In the course of the eighteenth century Addiscombe House was successively occupied by the Lord Chancellor Talbot, who died here in 1737; by Lord Grantham, who died in 1786; and by Charles Jenkinson, first Earl of Liverpool, who had a lease of the estate for life, and died in 1808.]

“The Addiscombe estate had previously become the property of Charles Clarke, Esq., through an heiress of the Draper family; and his grandson, Charles John Clarke, lost his life in consequence of the fall of a scaffold at Paris, whither he had gone after the peace of Amiens. He was married, but, as he left no issue, his estates devolved on his sister, Anne Millicent Clarke, wife of Emilius Henry Delmé, who assumed the name of Radcliffe. This gentleman was Master of the Stud to George IV and his successor. In 1809, Mr. Radcliffe sold Addiscombe to the East India Company, who founded there a Military College for the education of cadets for the Engineers and Artillery, and in 1825 the plan of the institution was extended so as to furnish instruction for candidates for the infantry service in general. After the transfer of the government of India to the Crown, by the old East India Company, in 1858, Addiscombe College was broken up, and its site has been utilised for building purposes.”

CHAPTER III

JOHN EVELYN

(SON OF SYLVA EVELYN)

JOHN EVELYN, the third son of John Evelyn (author of *Sylva*) was born at Sayes Court, January 19, 1655, and was baptized on the 26th of the same month at St. Nicholas' Church, Deptford. At the time of his birth, his elder brother, Richard, was three years old. There had been another son after him, christened John Standsfield, who had, however, only lived a few months, and so the third son was also called John. He was the only one of John Evelyn's five sons who survived his infancy. The eldest boy, Richard, died at the age of five. John therefore cannot have had in after life any recollection of him and must have always remembered himself as the eldest child. The two brothers who were born after him, George and Richard by name, only lived a few months, so his childhood remained practically unenlivened by brothers and sisters till he was ten years old, when his sister Mary was born.

In the winter of 1659, John, who was not quite five years old, was very ill. His father records in his *Diary* :

"Sept. 10, 1659. I came with my wife and family to London, tooke lodgings at the 3 Feathers in Russell Street, Covent Garden, for all the winter, my sonn being very unwell."

On December 13, 1660, at the age of five, his father presented him to Queen Henrietta Maria. He says :

"I presented my Son John to the Queen Mother, who kissed Him, talked with and made extraordinary much of him."

John passed some years of his early childhood with the children of Mr. Henry Howard, who lived at Albury Park in

Surrey, but not later than the age of seven, for his father reluctantly took him away, as the Howards were Catholics, and he was afraid of their perverting his son. While on a visit to Mr. Henry Howard at Albury, John Evelyn writes in his *Diary* :

“*July 3, 1662.* My wife met me at Woodcott whither Mr. Howard accompanied me to see my son John, who had been much brought up amongst Mr. Howard’s children at Arundel House, til for feare of their perverting him in the Catholic religion, I was forced to take him home.”

In April, 1665, at which time John was ten years old, his father wished to engage a tutor for him, and wrote the following letter to Dr. (afterwards Sir) Christopher Wren, to ask him to recommend one to him :—

“SIR,—You may please to remember that some tyme since I begg’d a favour of you in behalf of my little Boy : he is now susceptible of instruction, a pleasant, and (though I speake it) a most ingenious and pregnant child. My designe is to give him good education ; he is past many initial difficulties, and conquers all things with incredible industry : Do me that eternal obligation, as to enquire out and recom’end me some young man for a preceptor. I will give him £20 per annum Sallary, and such other accom’odations as shall be no ways disagreeable to an ingenious spirit ; and possibly I may do him other advantages : In all cases he will find his condition with us easy, his scholar a delight, & the conversation not to be despised : This obliges me to wish he may not be a morose, or severe person, but of an agreeable temper. The qualities I require are, that he be a perfect Grecian, and if more vulgarly Mathematical, so much the more accomplish’d for my designe : myne owne defects in the Greeke tongue and knowledge of its usefulness, obliges me to mention that particular with an extraordinary note : in sum I would have him as well furnish’d as might be for the laying of a permanent and solid foundation : The Boy is capable beyond his yeares ; and if you encounter one thus qualified, I shall receive it amongst the

greate good fortunes of my life that I obtain'd it by the benefit of your friendship, for which I have ever had so perfect an esteeme. There is no more to be said, but that when you have found the person, you direct him im'ediately to me, that I may receive, and value him.

"Sir, I am told by Sir Jo: Denham that you looke towards France this somer: be assur'd I will charge you with some addresses to Friends of mine there, that shall exceedingly cherish you; and though you will stand in no neede of my reccom'endations, yet I am confident you will not refuse the offer of those civilities which I shall bespeake you.

"There has layne at Dr. Needham's a copy of the Parallel bound up for you, & long since design'd you, which I shall intreate you to accept; not as a recompence of your many favours to mee, much lesse a thing in the least assistant to you (who are yourselfe a Master), but as a toaken of my respect, as the Booke itselfe is of the affection I beare to an Art which you so hapily cultivate.

"Deare Sir, I am

Your &c.

"SAYES-COURT, 4 Apr. 1665."

The tutor provided was Mr. Bohun, Fellow of New College, Oxford, and nephew of the learned Doctor Bathurst, President of Trinity College, Oxford. He was recommended not by Sir Christopher Wren, but by Doctor Wilkins and the President of New College, Oxford. Mr. Bohun proved a great success, and remained with the family until the beginning of 1671 when he went to reside at Oxford. John Evelyn speaks in his *Diary* of his having "well and faithfully perform'd his charge." In 1701, John Evelyn gave him the living of Wotton on the death of Mr. Wye, the former rector. In mentioning this fact in his *Diary*, John Evelyn describes Dr. Bohun as "a learned person and excellent preacher, who had ben my son's tutor, and liv'd long in my family."

In this year, 1665, the plague was raging in London, and on August 4, John, accompanied by his newly acquired tutor, was taken by his father to Wotton in order to stay there till all danger of its spreading to Deptford was over.

His father had to remain in the danger in order to attend to his duty in looking after the Dutch sick and wounded prisoners, and his mother remained at Sayes Court until the 28th of the month, when she also came to Wotton with nearly her whole household of servants. John Evelyn, in a letter to Viscount Cornebery, written on September 9 from Sayes Court, says :

“ After 6978 (and possibly halfe as many more conceil'd) which the pestilence has mow'd downe in London this Weeke ; neere 30 houses are visited in this miserable Village, whereoff one has beene the very neerest to my dwelling : after a servant of mine now sick of a swelling (whom we have all frequented, before our suspicion was pregnant) & which we know not where will determine ; behold me a living monument of God Almighty's protection and mercy ! It was Saturday last 'ere my courageous Wife would be persuaded to take the alarme ; but she is now fled, with most of my Family ; whilst my conscience, or something which I would have taken for duty, obliges me to this sad station, 'till his Majestie take pittie on me and send me a considerable refreshment for the comfort of these poore creatures, the sick and wounded Seamen under mine inspection through all the ports of my district. For mine owne particular, I am resolv'd to do my duty as far as I am capable.”

In another letter to Lord Cornebery, written three days later, John Evelyn mentions “ that his servant whom he had sent out of his house for fear of the worst, will recover, and proves sick only of a very ougly surfeit ; which not only frees me fro' infinite apprehensions, but admitts me to give my Wife a visite, who is at my Brother's, and within a fortnight of bringing me my seaventh sonne ; and it is time, my Lord, he were borne ; for they keepe us so short of mony at Court, that his Majesties Commissioners had neede of one to do Wonders, and heale the Sick and Wounded by Miracle, 'till we can maintaine our Chyrurgeons.”

On the following first of October, John's sister, Mary, was born at Wotton during this necessarily prolonged visit. At Christmas, John Evelyn joined the family party, and on January 12, 1666, he writes in his *Diary* :

"After much, and indeede extraordinary mirth and cheere, all my brothers, our wives and children being together, and after much sorrow and trouble during this Contagion, which separated our families as well as others, I returned to my house, but my Wife went back to Wotton, I not as yet willing to adventure her, the Contagion, tho' exceedingly abated, not as yet wholly extinguished amongst us."

On February 6, he writes in his *Diary* :

"My wife and family return'd to me from the country, where they had ben since August, by reason of the contagion, now almost universally ceasing. Blessed be God for his infinite mercy in preserving us ! I having gone thro' so much danger, and lost so many of my poore officers, escaping still myselfe, that I might live to recount and magnifie his goodnesse to me."

The plague, however, was by no means over, as on April 15 John Evelyn writes : "Our parish was now more infected with the plague than ever, and so was all the countrie about, tho' almost quite ceas'd at London." And on July 29 he writes : "The pestilence now afresh increasing in our parish, I forebore going to church." During August the plague still continued, and on the 26th the family had their church service at home instead of going to church, and even as late as September, the pestilence was not over in Deptford.

On November 17, 1666, John is again mentioned at the age of eleven in these words :

"I returned to Chatham. My charriot over-turning on the steepe of Bexley Hill, wounded me in two places on the head ; my sonn Jack being with me was like to have ben worse cutt by the glasse, but I thanke God we both escaped without much hurt, tho' not without exceeding danger."

In the year 1667 John's father sent him to Oxford. He was then only twelve years old, but extremely clever for his age. He was placed under the learned Dr. Bathurst of Trinity College. John Evelyn writes on January 29 :

"To London in order to my Son's Oxford journey, who being very early enter'd both in Latin and Greek, and prompt to learn beyond most of his age, I was persuaded to trust

him under ye tutorage of Mr. Bohun, Fellow of New College, who had ben his preceptor in my house some years before ; but at Oxford under ye inspection of Dr. Bathurst, President of Trinity College, where I plac'd him, not as yet 13 years old. He was newly out of long coates."

In the Easter term of 1668, John was admitted a gentleman commoner. Although he inherited in a certain degree the literary tastes of his father, he does not appear to have taken a degree at Oxford.

It is supposed that it was during his residence at Trinity, and when he was not over fifteen years of age, that he wrote an elegant Greek poem which is prefixed to the second edition of *Sylva*.

In 1672 he was admitted to the Middle Temple. His father writes, May 2 :

"My sonn John was specially admitted of the Middle Temple by Sir Fra. North his Majesties Solicitor General, and since Chancellor. I pray God bless this beginning, my intention being that he should seriously apply himself to the study of the law."

In January 1673 he published his first work, a treatise *On Gardens* in four books, which was a translation of a book in Latin verse by Renatus Rapinus. His father annexed the second book of this translation to his *Sylva*.

John's other works were : *The Life of Alexander the Great*, translated from the Greek of Plutarch, printed in the fourth volume of *Plutarch's Lives* by several hands ; *The History of the Grand Viziers Mahomet and Achmet Coprogly ; of the three last Grand Signiors, their Sultanas and chief favourites ; with the most secret intrigues of the Seraglio*. This was a translation from the French, and has been considered an interesting history.

He also wrote some original poems.

On March 29, 1673, John Evelyn writes to his son :

"I carried my Sonn to the Bishop of Chichester, that learned and pious man, Dr. Peter Gunning, to be instructed by him before he receiv'd the holy sacrament, when he gave him most excellent advice, which I pray God may influence and remain with him as long as he lives ; and O that I had

been so blessed and instructed when first I was admitted to that sacred ordinance !

“ 30th. Easter Day. Myself and Son receiv'd the blessed Communion, it being his first time, and with that whole week's more extraordinary preparation. I beseech God to make him a sincere and good Christian, whilst I endeavour to instil into him ye feare and love of God, and discharge the duty of a father.”

On May 25 of the same year, John Evelyn writes :

“ My sonn was made a younger brother of the Trinity House. The New Master was Sr. Jer. Smith, one of the Commissioners of the Navy, a stout seaman who had interpos'd and saved the Duke from perishing by a fire-ship in the late warr.”

In November 1675, John set out at the age of twenty for Paris, with Lord Berkeley, Ambassador to the French Court, and returned home the following May. John Evelyn writes, November 10 :

“ Being ye day appointed for my Lord Ambass^r to set out, I met them with my coach at New Crosse. There were with him my Lady, his wife and my deare friend Mrs. Godolphin, who out of an extraordinary friendship would needs accompany my Lady to Paris, and stay with her sometime, which was the chiefe inducement for permitting my Sonn to travel, but I knew him safe under her inspection, and in regard my Lord himselfe had promis'd to take him into his special favour, he having intrusted all he had to my care.

“ Thus we set out, 3 coaches (besides mine), 3 waggons, and about forty horse. It being late, and my Lord as yet but valetudinarie, we got but to Dartford the first day ; the next to Sittingbourne. At Rochester, the major, Mr. Cony, then an officer of mine for the sick and wounded of that place, gave the ladies a handsome refreshment as we came by his house.

“ 12th. We came to Canterbury, and next morning to Dover.

“ There was in my Lady Ambassadors company my Lady Hamilton, a sprightly young lady, much in the good

graces of the family, wife of that valiant and worthy gentleman Geo. Hamilton, not long after slaine in the warrs. She had been a maid of honour to the Dutchesse, and now turn'd Papist.

"14th. Being Sunday, my Lord having before he deliver'd to me this letter of attorney, keyes, seale, and his will, we took solemn leave of one another upon the beach, the coaches carrying them into the sea to the boats, which deliver'd them to Capt. Gunman's yacht the Mary. Being under saile the castle gave them 17 gunns, which Capt. Gunman answered with 11. Hence I went to church, to beg a blessing on their voyage."

On May 13, 1676, he again writes :

"Returned and found my Son come from France, prais'd be God."

When John was twenty-two his father began to consider his marriage, and set about to arrange a match between him and the step-daughter of Sir John Stonehouse, a Miss Martha Spencer, daughter and co-heir of Richard Spencer, a Turkey merchant of Derbyshire. On November 27, 1679, John Evelyn relates that he went to see Sir John Stonehouse, with whom he was arranging the marriage which subsequently took place at St. Andrew's, Holborn, February 24, 1680. John Evelyn mentions the wedding in these words :

"Feb. 21. Shrove Tuesday. My sonn was married to Miss Martha Spencer, daughter to my Lady Stonehouse, by a former Gentleman, at St. Andrew's Holborn, by our Vicar, borrowing the church of Dr. Stillingfleet, Deane of St. Paul's, the present incumbent. We afterwards din'd at a house in Holborn ; and after the solemnity and dauncing was don, they were bedded at Sir John Stonehouse's lodgings in Bow-street, Covent Garden."

Nearly eight years later, on December 10, 1687, John Evelyn writes : "My son was return'd out of Devon, where he had ben on a Commission from the Lords of the Treasury about a concealment of land." John was then nearly thirty-three. He had three children living, a boy and two girls, his eldest son, Richard, having died before his second birthday.

The next year, 1688, Martha Evelyn had an alarming coach accident. Her father-in-law, John Evelyn, mentions it in his *Diary*, February 12, 1688 :

“ My daughter Evelyn going in the coach to visite in the Citty, a jolt (the door being not fast shut) flung her quite out in such manner as the hind wheeles passed over her a little above her knees. Yet it pleased God, besides the bruises of the wheeles, she had no other harme. In two days she was able to walke, and soon after perfectly well, thro’ God Almighty’s greate mercy to an excellent wife and a most dutiful and discreete daughter-in-law.”

In December 1688, John was introduced to the Prince of Orange (who came over that year) at Abingdon by Colonel Sidney and Colonel Berkeley, and was one of the volunteers in Lord Lovelace’s troops when the latter secured Oxford for the Prince.

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN (SYLVA) TO HIS SON,
JOHN EVELYN

“ Dec. 18, 1688.

“ SON,—I just now receiv’d the narrative of the Princes march, and the political remarks you have made upon the occurrences where you hav ben. My Lord Clarendon would gladly have conferred with you on several points seasonable at that juncture ; but all have now it seemes submitted, and the bells and the bonfires proclaims as much joy & satisfaction as those are capable of, who have beheld so many changes & revolutions, without being able to divine how all this will conclude at last, & remembering that precept of the *wisest of kings*, (Proverbs, ch. xxiv. 21) which I neede not repeate to you. It will be no newes (I perceive) to you, to acquaint you with his Majesty’s late recesse, nor of his being stop’t at Feversham, &c. But of his coming back to Whitehall, and what has since intervened, you may not yet have heard. On Friday last there went thither my Lord Midleton, Earle of Alesbury, Lord Feversham, Sir Steph. Fox, and Mr. Grahame, where the rabble had detain’d the King (the vessel wherein he was embark’d with Sir Ed. Hales, & Ralph

Sheldon, which were all his attendance, coming in for want of balast), till the newes of it being brought to the Lords of the Council, those Lords and Gents: I named were sent to perswade his Majesty to returne, or if not prevailing, to conduct and waite upon him with two troopes of horse, to what other part or place he should please to go. The King, at last induced to come back to London, arrived at White-Hall on Sunday Evening, went to Masse at his Chapel on Monday, three priests officiating ; the usual number of Roman Catholics, & a world more, filling the bedchamber and all the roomes with extraordinary acclamation. In this manner his Majesty went thence to dinner (a Jesuite saying grace), and all things seemed to passe in such order, as the *eclipse* the Court suffered, by his Majesties four dayes absence, was hardly discernable, all the clouds (as we thought) were vanishing, and a bright day againe appearing. So soone as he was retired, he sent my Lord Feversham with a letter under his owne hand to invite the P: of Orange to St: James's ; the message was accepted, but the *messenger* arested & made prisoner at Windsor ; upon which politicians made reflexions. But 'tis pretended, that a *general* of an enemy ought not by law of armes to come into the quarters of his antagonist without a trumpet & a passport : others say, that his Highnesse was much displeased at the Earle's disbanding his Majesty's forces under his co'mand, without disarming them, and unpaid, as thereby leaving them in danger of seeking some desperate resolution, of disturbing the measures he had taken ; and there are who believe upon some other account, which time will discover. Tuesday morning came the Marq: of Halifax (who with the Lord Godolphin had ben sent commissioner to the Prince) from Windsor, to let his Majesty know, the Prince would be the next day at St. James's ; but withall (foreseeing it might be dangerous to have his army quarter'd about the towne, so necessary to his safety whilst the King's guards were so neere) he desires his Majesty that he would make choice of Hampton Court, or some other place about that distance, to repaire to, for the avoiding jealousies & inconveniencies, which might happen between the guards of different interests. You will easily believe

this was not very kindly taken, after so generous an invitation; and that it was the more surprizing for its coming to him at one o'clock in the morning, when he was weary and fast asleepe. The King upon this rises and goes immediately to Council, where severall things being propos'd (but what I undertake not to say) & altogether rejected; and whilst by this time White-Hall and all its environs were crowded with Dutch souldiers, his Majestie put himself into his barge, accompanied with my Lord Alesbury (now in waiting), the Lords Dumbarton, Arran, & one or two more, follow'd with three other barges and small boates, filled with a Dutch guard, & a troop of horse by land, steering their course towards Rochester againe, from whence he had so lately return'd. Thus have you the second recesse, or something more *dismaly boading*: which, whilst I myselfe, with Sir Chas: Cotterell & Sir Step: Fox, beheld from one of the windows of the new buildings—*vix tempero a lachrymis*. I should have told you that the Prince being yesterday at Syon sent Sir Rob: Howard & Hen. Powle with a letter to the Citty, acquainting them with his approach, with other complements of course. This was read before the Lord Mayor & Com: Council, and was answer'd with all submission and respect, & with an invitation that his Highness would honour their Citty by vouchsafing to lodge in it, rather than at St. James's. On this there stood up an Alderman, & moved that an Adresse might first be made to congratulate his Majesty's gracious returne to White-Hall. But the proposal was not approv'd of, one of them saying, '*They had given a good pail of milke, and that this were to kick it downe againe.*'

"Thus, Son, I have given you as minute an account of the *Proteus* here as I am able for the present. The hero is now at St. James's where I have seene him, and severall of my old acquaintance. I dined at the E: of Clarendons, whom I did not find altogether so well satisfied as I expected, considering that his son my Lord Cornebery tooke so considerable a stroke in this turne. I wish he do not *πρόεκέγτρα λακτιζειν*. By what I collect, the ambitious and the covetous will be canvassing for places of honour, and rich employment;

and that my Lord will withstand the mercat, and neglect, if not slight his applications, upon confidence of his neere relation, & the merites of my Lord his son, if not upon other principles. If none of this happen, and that successe do not quite alter the principles of men in power, we are to expect *Astrea* upon earth againe: But as I have often told you, I looke for no improvement of mankind in this declining age & Catalysis. A Parliament (legaly cal'ed) of brave & worthy *Patriots*, not influenced by faction, nor terrified by power, or corrupted by selfe interest, would produce a kind of new creation amongst us. But it will grow old, and dissolve to *chaos* againe, unlesse the same stupendious Providence (which has put this opportunitie into men's hands to make us happy), dispose them to do just & righteous things, and to use their empire with moderation, justice, piety & for the public good. Upon the whole matter, those who seeke employment, before the grandees are served, may suspend their solicitation, the Queene having ('tis sayd) carried away the Great *Seale*: most of the writs being burnt by his Majesty, it will cost time, & excogitation of expedients how legaly to supply them, if his Majesty should designe to travell againe, or the doore (which I feare most likely) be shut after him. These, and sundry other difficulties will render things both uneasy and uncertaine. Onely I think Popery to be universaly declining, and you know I am one of those who despise not *propheying*: nor, whilst I behold what is daily wrought in the world, believe miracles to be ceas'd.

"Sir Ed: Hales & Obadiah (his old tutor) are both in gaole at Maidstone. C. Justice Herbert, Rob: Brent, & Peters above all, are not yet heard of. Poore *Roger* (for want of better *observation*) is carried to New-gate, and every houre is pregnant of wonders.

"ANN. MIRABIL., LOND., 18 Dec. 1688."

In 1690 John purchased the place of Chief Clerk of the Treasury, but in the next year he was by some means removed from it by Mr. Grey, who succeeded him in that office.

He became in 1692 one of the Commissioners of the Revenue of Ireland. His father writes, March 20, 1692 : " My Son was made one of the Commissioners of the Revenue and Treasury of Ireland, to w^{ch} employment he had a mind, far from my wishes." On August 11, John set out for Ireland accompanied by his wife and daughter, Elizabeth, who was not quite eight years old. Her brother John, who was ten years old, was left behind in England, as he had been sent to Eton just two months before.

John remained in this appointment in Ireland not quite seven years, or he might have been advanced to higher posts.

He died at his house in Berkeley Square, London, March 24, 1699, aged forty-four. His father writes, March 24 :

" My only remaining Son died after a tedious languishing sickness contracted in Ireland, and increased here, to my exceeding grief and affliction ; leaving me one Grandson, now at Oxford, who I pray God to prosper and be the support of the Wotton family. He was aged 44 years and about 3 months. He had been 6 years one of the Commiss^{rs} of the Revenue in Ireland, with great ability and reputation."

His wife died September 13, 1726, and was buried at Wotton.

POEMS COMPOSED BY JOHN EVELYN (SON OF SYLVA)¹

REMEDY OF LOVE

WOULD you be quite cur'd of love ?
 From your mistress' sight remove.
 To the open fields repair ;
 Cool'd with absence, and with air,
 You will soon be eas'd of care.
 Seek out in another place
 Something fit for your embrace ;
 Perhaps in a less charming face
 You may find a pleasing grace,
 Wit, or motion, dress, or art,
 Thousand things that may divert
 The torments of your throbbing heart.

¹ From Nichol's *Collection of Poems*, published in 1780.

If in this no ease you find,
But constant love still plagues your mind,
To your former flame return,
See if still her eyes do burn
With equal force ; you'll find, perchance,
Less warmth in every amorous glance :
Seeing oft what we desire,
Makes us less and less admire,
And will in time put out the fire.
Visit her betimes each morn,
Stand by her when she does adorn
Her head ; perhaps some borrow'd hair,
Some ill-contriv'd affected snare,
Lewd song on table found, or prayer
Nonsensical, may let you see,
That what you thought divinity
Is but a piece of puppetry.
If still thy passion does remain,
And unseen charms thy heart inchain,
If she break thy sleep by night,
Fly again the witch's fight ;
Opium take, that may invite
The gentle god to charm thy soul ;
Peaceful slumbers love control.
Have a care of purling brooks,
Of silent groves, and awful shade,
They but to thy torment add,
Love does there with ease invade,
No music hear, no dying looks
Behold, read no romantic books ;
Books and music turn the head,
Fools only sing, and madmen read :
They with false notions fill the brain,
Are only fit to entertain
Women, and fops that are more vain.
Love and folly still are found
In those to make the deepest wound,
Who think their passions to allay,
By giving of them leave to sway
A-while ; but they like winter torrents grow,
And all our limits overflow.
Never trust thyself alone,
Frequent good company and wine ;
In generous wines thy passion drown,
That will make thee all divine.
Better 'tis to drink to death,
Than sigh and whine away our breath,

In friends and bottles we may find
 More joys than in womankind.
 After enjoyment women pall,
 Intolerable plagues they're all,
 Vain, foolish, fond, proud, whimsical,
 Dissembling, hypocritical.
 Wines by keeping them improve,
 And real friends more firmly love.
 If one vintage prove severe,
 We're doubly recompens'd next year.
 If our dearest friends we lose,
 Others may succeed to those ;
 Women only of all things
 Have nothing to assuage their stings.
 Curs'd is the man that does pursue
 The short-liv'd pleasures of their charms ;
 There is no hell but in their arms ;
 For ever damned, damning sex, adieu.

ON VIRTUE, TO MR. S. G.

FAIR Virtue, should I follow thee,
 I should be naked and alone ;
 For thou art not in company,
 And scarce art to be found in one.

Thy rules are too severe and cold,
 To be embrac'd by vigorous youth ;
 And Fraud and Avarice arm the old
 Against thy justice and thy truth.

He, who by light of reason led,
 Instructs himself in thy rough school,
 Shall all his life-time beg his bread,
 And, when he dies, be thought a fool.

Though in himself he's satisfied
 With a calm mind and cheerful heart,
 The world will call his virtue pride,
 His holy life design and art.

The reign of Vice is absolute,
 While good men vainly strive to rise ;
 They may disclaim, they may dispute,
 But shall continue poor and wise.

Honours and wealth are made by Fate
 To wait on fawning Impudence,
 To give insipid coxcombs weight,
 And to supply the want of sense.

Mighty Pompey whose great soul
 Design'd the liberty of Rome,
 In vain did Cæsar's arms control,
 And at Pharsalia was o'ercome.

His virtue, constant in distress,
 In Ptolemy no pity bred,
 Who, barely guided by success,
 Secur'd his peace with his friend's head.

Brutus, whom the gods ordain'd
 To do what Pompey would have done,
 The generous motion entertain'd,
 And stabb'd the tyrant on his throne.

This god-like Brutus, whose delight
 Was Virtue, which he had ador'd,
 Haunted by spectres over-night,
 Fell the next day on his own sword.

If, when his hope of victory lost
 This noble Roman could exclaim,
 Oh Virtue, whom I courted most,
 I find she's but an empty name !

In a degenerate age like this,
 We with more reason may conclude,
 That Fortune will attend on Vice,
 Misery on those who dare be good.

TO ENVY

OVID, *AMOR.*, BOOK I. ELEG. xv.

ENVY, how dar'st thou say that I in vain
 Have spent my years, or with false names profane
 The sacred product of my fertile brain ?

'Tis true, in th' art of war I am not skill'd,
 No trophies did I e'er attempt to build
 By gaining grinning honour in the field.

I never try'd to learn the tedious laws,
Or fought, in pleading of a desperate cause,
To fell my breath for interest or applause.

Such little things I scorne ; I nobly aim
At that which may secure a lasting fame,
And through the world immortalize my name.

Old Chaucer shall, for his facetious style,
Be read and prais'd by warlike Britons, while
The sea enriches, and defends their isle.

While the whole earth resounds Elisa's fame,
Who aw'd the French, and did the Spaniard tame,
The English will remember Spenser's name.

While flatterers thrive and parasites shall dine,
While commonwealths afford a Catiline,
Laborious Jonson shall be thought divine.

Thee, Shakespeare, poets ever shall adore.
Whose wealthy fancy left so vast a store,
They still refine thy rough but precious ore.

So long shall Cowley be admir'd above
The crowd, as David's troubles pity move,
Till women cease to charm, and youth to love.

While we the fall of our first parents grieve,
And worship him who did that fall retrieve,
Milton shall in Majestic numbers live.

Dryden will last as long as wit and sense,
While judgement is requir'd to excellence,
While perfect language charms an audience.

As long as men are false, and women vaine,
While gold continues to be Virtue's bane,
In pointed satire Wicherley shall reign.

When the aspiring Grecian in the East,
And haughty Philip is forgot i' th' West
Then Lee and Otway's works shall be supprest.

While fathers are severe, and servants cheat,
Till bawds and whores can live without deceit,
Sedley and easy Etherege shall be great,

Stones will consume, age will on metals prey,
But deathless verse no time can wear away ;
That stands the shock of years without decay.

When kingdoms shall be lost in sloth and lust,
When treasures fail, and glorious arms shall rust,
Verse only lifts itself above the dust.

Come, bright Apollo ! then, let me drink deep
Of that blest spring thou dost for poets keep,
While in ignoble ease the world's asleep.

Let wreaths of tender myrtle crown my head,
Let me be still by anxious lovers read,
Envy'd alive, but honour'd when I'm dead.

Till after death, desert was never crown'd,
When my ashes are forgotten under ground,
Then my best part will be immortal found.

MARTIAL, BOOK VIII. EPIG. LVI.

ALL other ages since our age excells,
And conquering Rome to so much greatness swells,
You wonder what's become of Maro's vein,
That none write battles in so high a strain.
Had Wit its patrons, Flaccus, now-a-days,
As once it had, more would contend for praise,
Thy villa would a mighty genius raise.
When Virgil was oppress'd by civil hate,
Robb'd of his flocks, and stripp'd of his estate,
On Tityrus' dress beneath a beach he sate.
Weeping in shades thus was the poet found
Till brave Mæcenâs rais'd him from the ground ;
Knowing that want would greatest minds betray,
He fear'd a Muse so God-like should decay.
And drove malicious Poverty away.
Freed from the want that now oppresses thee,
Thou shalt for ever prince of poets be.
In all my pleasures thou a part shalt bear,
Thou shalt with me my dear Alexis share.
The charming youth stood by his master's board
And with his ivory hands black Falern pour'd :
With rosy lips each cup he first assay'd,
Of such a draught Jove would himself be glad,
And for Alexis change his Ganymed
Down go the rude Bucolics on the floor,
Of bees and harvest now he writes no more,
Whose humble Muse had sung the great when poor.

Straight he exalts his voice to arms and Kings,
 The Roman story and his hero sings.
 Mean thoughts upon a narrow fortune wait,
 The fancy is improv'd by an estate,
 Favour and pension make a Laureat.

HORACE, BOOK I. ODE VIII.

LYDIA, I conjure you, say,
 Why haste you so to make away
 Poor Sybaris with love ?
 Why hates he now the open air ?
 Why heat, and clouds of dust to bear,
 Does he no more approve ?
 Why leaves he off his martial pride ?
 Why is he now afraid to ride ?
 Upon his Gallic steed ?
 Why swims he not the Tiber o'er ?
 Or wrestles as he did before ?
 Whence do his fears proceed ?
 Why boasts he not his limbs grow black
 With bearing arms, or his strong back
 With which he threw the bar ?
 Is he like Thetis' son conceal'd,
 And from all manly sports with-held,
 To keep him safe from war ?

THE PUNISHMENT

ON Hebrus bank as Orpheus sate,
 Mourning Euridice's hard fate,
 The birds and beasts did on his music wait,
 And trees and stones became compassionate ;
 Yet he, who all things else could move,
 Was quite insensible to love.
 Therefore, ye Gods, ye justly did ordain,
 That he, who love and women did despise,
 To the fair sex should fall a sacrifice,
 And, for contempt of pleasure, suffer pain.

PART OF AJAX'S SPEECH

OVID, *Metam.*, BOOK XIII.

THE princes sate, whom martial throngs inclose,
 When Ajax lord o' th' sevenfold shield arose.

With just disdain and untam'd passion swell'd,
 Sigæum and the navy he beheld.
 Then lifting up his hands, Oh Jove ! said he,
 Before this fleet, can my right question'd be ?
 And dares Ulysses too contend with me ?
 He, who, when Hector all our ships had fir'd,
 Far from the danger cowardly retir'd ;
 While I alone the hostile flame sustain'd,
 And sav'd the burning navy with this hand ?
 He'll therefore find it much his safest course,
 To trust to tropes and figures, not to force.
 His talent lies in prating, mine in war ;
 And yet you so unequal judges are,
 That you prefer his pedantry and art,
 Before my conquering arm and generous heart.
 Of my exploits I nothing need to say,
 For they were all perform'd in open day,
 You saw them ; his, if any, were all done
 By night, told of himself, but seen by none.

OUT OF SANNAZARIUS

NEPTUNE saw Venice on the Adria stand,
 Firm as a rock, and all the sea command.
 Think'st thou, O Jove ! said he, Rome's walls excell ?
 Or that proud cliff whence false Tarpeia fell ?
 Grand Tyber best, view both ; and you will say,
 That men did those, Gods these foundations lay.

WRITTEN ON A LADY'S MASK

WELL may'st thou, envious mask, be proud,
 That dost such killing beauties shroud !
 Not Phœbus, when behind a cloud,
 Of half those glories robs our eye,
 As behind thee concealed lie.
 I would have kept thee ; but I find
 My fair Elisa so unkind,
 Thou wilt better service do
 To keep her charms from human view :
 For she is so strangely bright,
 So surprising, so divine,
 That I know her very sight
 Soon will make all hearts like mine.

CHILDREN OF JOHN EVELYN

John had two sons and three daughters, of which only two, a son and a daughter, survived their infancy.

RICHARD, the eldest son, was born at Sayes Court, December 17, 1680, but he died before he was a year old on September 6, 1681, and was buried at St. Nicholas' Church, Deptford.

JOHN, the second son, was born the following year, 1682, of whom presently.

MARTHA MARY, the eldest daughter, was born June 28, 1683, at Sayes Court. She died there August 28 of the same year, and was buried at St. Nicholas', Deptford.

ELIZABETH, the second daughter, was born November 26, 1684. She was married at the age of twenty-four at Chelsea Church, July 21, 1709, to Simon Harcourt, son and heir of Simon, Viscount Harcourt of Stanton Harcourt, Oxfordshire, late Lord Chancellor of Great Britain. He died in 1720 at Paris. She survived him and died April 6, 1760, aged seventy-six. Their son was Simon, Earl Harcourt, and their daughter Martha married George Venables, Lord Vernon, whose second son Edward, Lord Archbishop of York, eventually succeeded to the Harcourt estates, and took the name of Harcourt, and whose grandson was Edward William Harcourt of Nuneham and Stanton Harcourt.

Elizabeth's portrait is at Wotton.

The following was a letter written by her ¹ to her brother in 1700 :—

" August 25, 1700.

" This is to assure my dear Brother I answered his letter long sence tho' by negligence of the post I hear you did not receive it, but I should not have stood upon ceremony but have wrote to you again had I not been in hopes of seeing you at Wotton this summer, which we should all have been glad of, company being very acceptable in this place, and that of friends especially. I hope if you deny us your company now, you will continue your resolution of coming to us at

¹ This letter is preserved at Wotton.

Christmas. I am glad to hear Oxford has proved so entertaining this year by reason of the act and the singing of famous Mr. Abel who I suppose you had the curiosity of hearing, and I doubt not but you obliged my Aunt Stonhouse by waiting on her to all the sight worth seeing. I hear you have been but once at Radley this summer, and that sence my aunt Harcourt came thither, so that my grandmother doth not take that as a visit to her but expects while you are so neer to se you oftner. Pray when you do give my duty and service to all my friends there. We are in so much disorder yet at Wotton as ever, if not more, everything being begun and nothing finished, but in the way of being so we hope before winter. I believe my aunt and uncle Draper and Cousin Jukes who are with them this summer, will spend some time with us as soon as we can get up beds for them. My mother and grandmother give theyr love to you and be assured, Dear Brother,

“ I am your affectionate

sister,

ELIZA EVELYN.”

JANE, third daughter, was born December 25, 1691, in the Parish of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, London. She died an infant and was buried at Kensington.

LETTER FROM MRS. HARCOURT TO HER MOTHER,
MRS. EVELYN ¹

“ COCKTHORP,

“ June y^e 10th, 1716.

“ DEAR MADAM,—We gott very well to our journeys end a Saturday before five o'clock, tho' the weather happen'd to be exceeding hot both the days that we were upon the Road & the dust very troublesome to us, I was afraid Bettys eyes wou'd have beene the worse for it, but I don't find that they are & both she & the Boy bore the journey mighty well, it will be a very great satisfaction to me to heare from Wotton, how all my Friends do there, & that you got well thither, I was very sorry that it was so necessary upon the Childrens

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 59.



ELIZABETH EVELYN (1684-1760)
WIFE OF SIMON HARCOURT

account to hasten out of town, & that I cou'd enjoy your Company there no longer, & return you many thanks for the favour of your kind visit, & hope you will excuse the freedom with which you were treated, & that things were not in such order as I wished or as they ought to have been, when I had the happines of your Company, which I find the want of very much here, & shou'd have been very glad if you could have been prevail'd with to have spent some time with me at Cockthorp tho' this place is now very pleasant, I want the good Company very much that I left at London, & shall be in a very solitary way till some of my Friends come down, I live in hopes that it wont be long before some of them do, & wish nothing may happen to hinder. I was this evening to visit Patt, I found her very well, & very good humour'd & by what I hear of her she is seldom other ways, she goes mighty strong & well, tho' she is pretty fatt still, her hair is almost as white as the Boy's, and her complexion I think fairer than his, but I fear I shall tire you Madam with this long discription of your Goddaughter, & will therefore beg leave to add my humble service to my Brother and sister, & to M^{rs} Boscawin, & am, Dear Madam,

“ Your Most Obedient &
Dutifull Daughter,
E. HARCOURT.”

“ Betty desires her duty &
humble service may not
be forgott.”

(Addressed.)

To M^{rs} EVELYN.

(Endorsed.)

June 10, 1716.

CHAPTER IV

JOHN EVELYN

(AFTERWARDS SIR JOHN EVELYN, 1ST BART.)

JOHN, the second son of John Evelyn and Martha Spencer, and grandson of Sylva Evelyn, was born at Sayes Court, Deptford, March 1, 1682, and baptized the next day, March 2, at St. Nicholas' Church.

On June 9, 1692, when he was not yet ten years old, he was sent to school at Eton. His father, mother, and sister Elizabeth, who was about two years younger than himself, went to Ireland about two months later, owing to the former's appointment as a Commissioner of the Revenue there. He held this appointment for nearly seven years. We do not know whether his son joined him in Ireland during this period for his holidays or whether he remained in England, or whether his mother and sister may have come over sometimes and lived for a time in their house in Berkeley Square. John's grandfather writes on June 9 :

"I went to Windsor to carry my Grandson to Eton School, where I met my Lady Stonehouse and other of my Daughter-in-law's relations, who came on purpose to see her before her journey into Ireland. We went to see the Castle which we found Furnish'd and very neatly kept, as formerly, only the arms in the guard chamber and keep were remov'd and carried away. An exceeding greate storm of wind and rain, in some places stripping the trees of their fruit and leaves as if it had ben winter ; and an extraordinary wet season with greate floods.

"*June 23.* I went with my Wife, Son, and Daughter to Eton to see my Grandson, and thence to my Lord Godolphin's at Cranburn, where we lay, and were most honorably enter-

tain'd. The next day to St. George's Chapel, and return'd to London late in the evening."

John was sent to Oxford when nearly seventeen. His grandfather says, February 17, 1699, "My Grandson went to Oxford with Dr. Mander, the Master of Baliol College, where he was entered a Fellow-commoner." On March 24 of the following year his father died.

The next year John had an attack of small-pox at Oxford. This alarmed his grandfather very much, all the more as he had himself lost two of his daughters by the disease. On November 5, 1700, he writes in his *Diary* :

"Came the news of my deare Grandson (the only male of my family now remaining) being fallen ill of the small-pox at Oxford, wch after the dire effects of it in my family exceedingly afflicted me, but so it pleas'd my most merciful God that being let blood at his first complaint, and by the extraordinary care of Dr. Mander (head of the College and new Vice-Chancellor) who caus'd him to be brought and lodg'd in his own bed and bed-chamber, with the advice of his physician and care of his tutor, there were all faire hopes of his recovery, to our infinite comfort. We had a letter every day either from the Vice-Chancellor himselfe or from his tutor."

LETTER FROM DR. ROGER MANDER, MASTER OF BALIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD, TO JOHN EVELYN, ESQ., NOVEMBER 4, 1700¹

"S^r,—I am greivously frighted upon y^r account of Mr. Evelyn who has been these 2 dayes complaining of a giddy-ness & some pain in his head, & this day y^e small pox begin a little to appear upon him : as soon as he complained I sent for Dr. Hay but it seems he is not in Town, they say he's in London : in his absence I sent for Dr. Breach who is recon'd y^e best physition in this place, together wth Dr. Shapcott of o^r own Coll y^t has all along been acquainted wth Mr. Evelyn : both w^{ch} have taken y^e best method y^t can be wth him, who I hope y^e best & as yet see noe ill symptoms for any one to fear his recovery, yet considering how brittle human nature

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 37.

is, and how lyable psons in his condition are to unforeseen accidents, & withall how dear he is to his relations as well as to us & all y^t know him, I cannot but wish y^t some of his relations for y^r better satisfaction at least as well as for or justification were here, it may be y^r prsence might heart'n him y^e more chearfully to goe through his distemper: I pray you y^rfore wth all speed to dispatch a messenger to Mr. Evelyn or his mother wherever they are, this messenger hath promised to be with you this evening whom I send on purpose not being willing to trust a matter of this consequence to y^e post: I am

“ Dear S^r !

“ y^e messenger is to
have 20s.”

Yo^r afflicted servant,

Ro: MANDER.”

“ BALL. COLL.

Nov. 4, 1700.”

In the following year, 1701, and while he was still nineteen and had not yet left Oxford, a proposal was made for John's marriage with Anne Boscawen, a daughter of Edward Boscawen of Worthivill, Cornwall, younger brother of Hugh Boscawen of Tregothnan, and sister to Hugh, 1st Viscount Falmouth. On July 8, 1701, John's grandfather writes:

“ My Grandson went with Sir Simon Harcourt, the Solicitor Gen., to Windsor, to wait on my Lord Treasurer. There had been for some time a proposal of marrying my Grandson to a daughter of Mr. Boscawen, sister of my Lord Treasurer, weh was now far advanc'd.”

It was at this time that John was made by the Lord Treasurer one of the Commissioners of the prizes, with a salary of £500 a year.

A few months later, on December 27, 1701, John left Oxford, and about two years later the Lord Treasurer, Lord Falmouth, procured him the office of Treasurer of the Stamp Duties, with a salary of £300 a year.

His marriage with Anne Boscawen took place the following year on September 18, 1705, when he was twenty-three years of age. The ceremony was performed in the private chapel of Lambeth Palace by the Archbishop of Canterbury.

On the 27th of February in the following year, 1706,

John's grandfather died, leaving him at the age of twenty-four sole heir to the Wotton and Deptford estates. His father had died when he was seventeen, but his mother was still alive.

He became M.P. for Helston 1708-10, and on August 6, 1713, at the age of thirty-one, he was created a baronet by Queen Anne.

Like his grandfather, he became a Fellow of the Royal Society. He was also first Commissioner of the Customs for some time. His love of learning caused him to build a library at Wotton, which is now the entrance hall, 45 feet long, 14 feet wide, and as many high, for the reception of the large collection of books made by his grandfather and himself. He also made a complete copy in a clear hand of the *Diary* of his grandfather, which latter is at Wotton.

He died July 15, 1763, aged eighty-one. His wife had died eleven years before, on January 15, 1752, aged sixty-seven.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO LADY EVELYN

“COCKTHORP, *Sep*^r 1st, 1718.

“Not to omit the first opportunity of thanking my Dear for her kind, pretty, entertaining letter of y^e 29th past I write this to carry with me to Oxford to-morrow morning : I went this to Cornbury, where I was well entertain'd with the pictures & the library in which I spent above an hour, my brother was not well enough for a ride of seven miles, but I had M^r Harcourts company. We had a fine air going but it was very hott coming back, & yesterday was here a very warm day. I have been very successfull at picquet this afternoon, having beaten all the family, won five or six pools & thereby clear'd above a guinea, my Lord Harcourt says you shall be Housekeeper att Newnham, tho' he is hardly in charity with you for not coming this time, & I dont know how I shall come off for leaving them next fryday, when I am so much press'd to stay longer : I propose to dine that day with my aunt Jennings, lye at Hetley, & meet you att Eton Saturday, & I hope I shall be at home

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 68.

time enough to receive my L^d Rialton. I am sorry to hear my uncle Draper is no better, you did very well to invite his son so much by Bedingfield, & were in the right to persuade M^r Howard to goe to Albury without me, where I dare say he wanted no Introducer, tho' shou'd have been glad to have waited upon him if I had been at home. We had nothing but prayers yesterday & no D^r Hammond, because the house was not full enough, Harvey Cross came to night, & Phil Harcourt will be here tomorrow & Dr. Bletchington is expected very suddenly. tho' it be near eleven & we are to be in ye coach by eight I must not conclude without making the complements from hence to all att Wotton, & my duty & humble service to y^r Onbre (?) player, & assuring you

"I am,

y^{rs} entirely,

J. E."

(*Addressed.*)

For the Lady Evelyn
At Wotton near Dorking
in Surrey.

(*Endorsed.*)

1718
Sep^r 1st.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS OF
HORSLEY PLACE, GUILDFORD

"EDINBURGH, Oct. 24, 1723.

"DEAR SIR,—I have your favour of the 11th instant, and hope you have received my letter in answer to your first about Mr. Dawson's death. I believe as much application has been made to me for his place, as to the Ministry for the Teller's; besides your recommendation, which must always have a very great weight with me, I am solicited for this considerable employment by Mr. Richardson, of whom I have a very good opinion, and the three attornies, Mr. Bonwicke, Mr. Heath, and Mr. Sturt; but as I have no present occasion for keeping courts, I do not think it necessary to come to any determination in this affair before my return,

which I begin to reckon not far off, and count with pleasure upon seeing my friends again in South Britain before the Christmas holidays are over. In the mean time, it is some comfort to have the weather continue fine so much longer than one had reason to expect, especially in this country, betwixt which and England, in that particular, I have not hitherto perceived the least difference. Saturday last my Lord Advocate Dundass, who is a great opposer of the Argathelion party, entertained the English part of our commission at his house four miles off, and one of our number hunted with him in the morning. The plenty of hares, as well as of stones, is no small hindrance to that sport in this country. I take it to be better for shooting, there being no want of moor-game and partridges; and to-day I saw woodcocks in my ride to Dalkith-park, a sweet spot of ground, encompassed with two rivers meeting at one corner, and having wood enough to make it resemble an English park more than any thing I have seen in Scotland.

“Last week my wife and I had the curiosity to see Duke Hamilton’s lodgings in Holyrood-house, which are very handsome, and have some good pictures; one of Philip II, another of Duke James that was beheaded. But the chief sight was the little room in a corner tower, the remains of the old palace, where David Rizzio was at supper with Queen Mary when he was murdered; and there are still some marks of blood, said to be his, in the passage beyond the outer room, to which place he was dragged. Having lately received a letter from Wastell, signifying his acceptance of the place in my gift, the presentment of him was signed yesterday, and he shall have notice when his warrant comes down. I believe his security may be taken in London; and therefore he will do well to get two housholders ready to be bound in a bond of 100*l* for his good behaviour. I am very sorry you continue to give so indifferent an account of Mrs. Nicholas, and hope for a better in your next. My wife joins with me in humble service and good wishes for her recovery; and I am, dear Sir, your most humble and obedient servant,

“J. EVELYN.”

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS¹

“ EDINBURGH, *Nov^r 7th*, 1723.

“ DEAR S^R,—I hope this will find you safe return’d to Horseley with Mrs. Etrick, & that Mrs. Nicholas, of whose being well enough to goe abroad we were very glad to hear, is still better for so doing the weather having continued fine even in this Country till monday last ; since which we have had a pretty deal of rain, & the wind very high at South West a point our Lodgings are much exposed to.

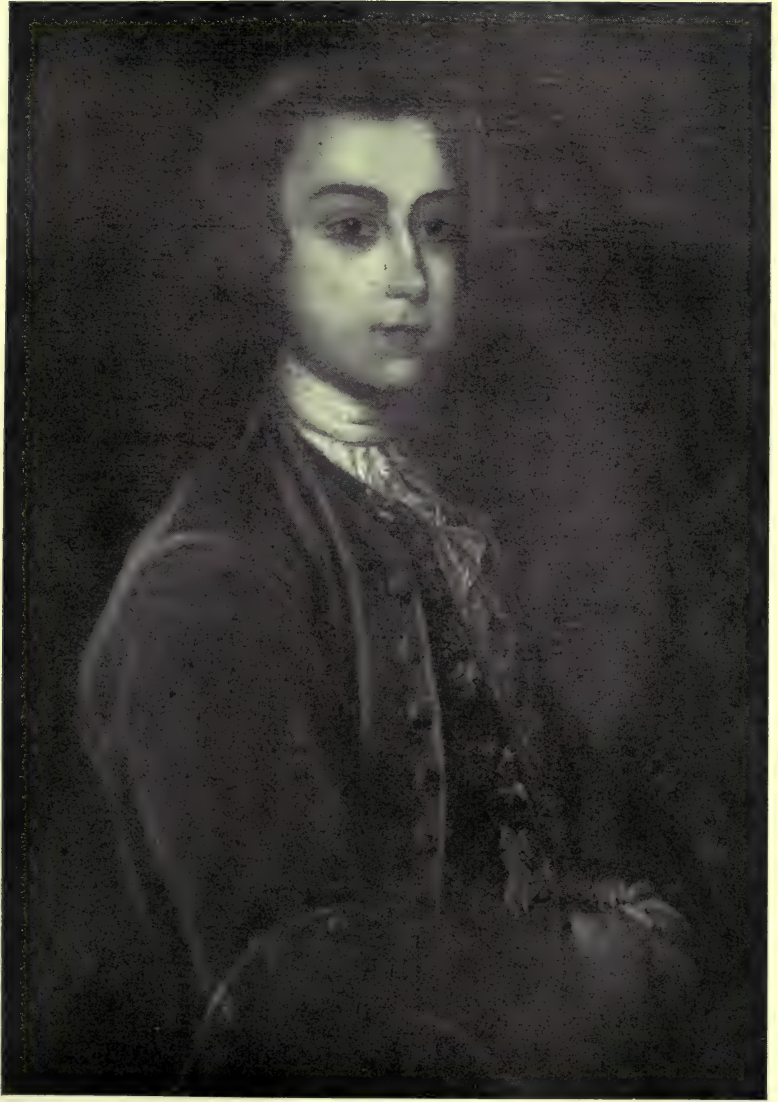
“ I dont wonder to hear M^r Bonwick acquits himself so much to your satisfaction, & am very much disposed to think him in the right about M^r Tryons heriots, since you doe whose recommendation of him I never in the least imagined to proceed from anything but y^e friendship & kindness I have experienced from you on all occasions.

“ I thank you for the account of the Comet which I have not yet had the good fortune to see, nor any one else in this Country that I can hear of, & Mr. Rose in a letter I lately received from him complains of his not being able to discover it with his glasses. I hope it will be more visible at my return to London.

“ Lord Onslow has paid dear for his impatience to be at Newmarket, where I hear L^d Godolphin has been obliged to pay his forfeit by his horses laming himself the day before he was to run with one of the Duke of Devonshires.

“ We are to have another race at Leith before the end of this month, & the Assembly was opened again to night, the business of our board hindered me from being at it, but my Wife is gone with Mrs. Hamilton one of the dancers, daughter of the President of the Sessions Lady, & M^r William Gordons eldest daughter the reigning beauty of this place called upon us in her way. I have lately seen Hatton a pretty seat of my L^d Lauderdale six miles from hence, where there is a fine Cascade, & S^r James Dalrimples near Musselburgh, in a dry sandy soil on a hill at a little distance from y^e Firth, he has lately built a library there very near as big as the great rooms at Albury, & ’tis filled with books almost to the top,

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 227.



SIR JOHN EVELYN (1682-1763)

but the best Collection of British History is at Heriots hospital, & belongs to one Mr. Anderson, who among other curiosities shew'd me t'other day a grant of Drumbonrig to this Duke of Queensberrys Ancestor writt all with K James y^e first of Scotlands own hand, & dated from Croydon where he was Prisoner 1412.

"I hope this time you have gott as many beech plants from Wotton as you wanted, & for fir seed in my opinion you need goe no farther, the trees of my raising being to the best of my observation as flourishing as any I have seen in this Country.

"L^d Isla is lately come down to prosecute before the L^{ds} of Sessions his Law Suit on a South Sea bargain with my Lord Kinnoul, who is here likewise, as he has been several times before from Duplin since we came to prepare for his defence y^e bond the other has from him is said to be for £7000. The Comm^{rs} for forfeited estates, which by the claims upon them come to nothing in these parts have been here a good while, but are preparing to leave us.

"When y^r friend the Provost was at Ombre t'other night with my Wife I made y^r complem^{ts} to him as I hope you will ours to Mrs. Nicholas, & believe me ever S^r

"y^{rs} most sincerely,

J. EVELYN."

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS ¹

"EDINBURGH, Dec^r. 5th, 1723.

S^r John Evelyn to

M^r Edw^d Nicholas of

Horsley Place, near Guildford.

"DEAR S^r,—I have both your favours of the 7th and 25th of last month, for which I am very much obliged to you, and particularly for the kind expression in them relating to our return, which we shou'd still be more impatient for, if we thought it cou'd any ways contribute to Mrs. Nicholas's health, which we hope will not want us, for we are not like to have the pleasure of seeing you so soon as I expected when I

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 233.

wrote last, we shall set out next month but not time enough to reach London before Feby. since 'tis so difficult to find the Comet in England I despair of seeing it here Astronomy being very little regarded here or anything else besides the bottle.

"The Warrant for Wastell being sign'd I acquainted him with it, and directed him how to proceed. I shou'd be more sorry to loose Mr. Owen out of Surrey were it not so much for his advantage, and am afraid All Souls will not send a better in his roome. You were not misinformed about the Purchaser of Chilworth, but since you give it so good a character, I hope 'tis design'd by her Grace for the trust, and not for herself. I forgot to mention as great a curiosity as any I saw at Heriots hospital the solemn League & Covenant sign'd by King Charles y^e seconds own hand, when he was here in 1651.

"My Wife is under some concern about taking y^e Oaths which I never thought necessary for her till very lately, & she must now doe it as a Scotch Woman, since the time for taking them in England will soon be over.

"We had very stormy weather last month & the wind was so high on the 27th that it putt me in mind of ye tempest in England that night 20 years agoe, but we now begin to feel the sharpness of this climate, & had snow today, which lies upon the highlands. Lord Isla, & L^d Kinoul are fighting their way thro' the Court of Sessions here, in order to bring their South Sea Cause to a decision in the House of Lords. I saw them both this day sennight at the Assembly, which had a great deal of good Company for this place among y^e rest Duke Hamilton, & his Dutchess a pretty creature y^e late L^d Dundonalds daughter the other beautys were his Graces Sister Lady Charlotte, Grace Lockhart daughter of the Memoirs writer, a Mrs. Gordon whom I mention'd formerly, her father has a house at Rowhampton. It will be time to release you, when I have made my Wife's complem^{ts} to Mrs. Nicholas & Mrs. Etrick, & assured you of my being ever Dear S^r

"Y^{rs} most sincerely,

J. EVELYN."

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS¹

“DUKE STREET, *Febr*^y 3^d, 1725.

“DEAR S^R,—I’m sorry you gave yourself the trouble of writing, when it was so uneasy for you, & the fear of being the occasion of your doing so has made me forbear you longer than I shou’d have done, tho’ I can’t say the town has of late afforded much news besides what is doing at Westm^r which you have a much better account of from Mr. Clark & your other friends of the House of Commons, than I can pretend to give you. His Grace of Bedford had a fine ball at Southampton house monday night, which lasted till six the next morning, & did the honours very well particularly what related to drinking of healths. There was not quite so much company at the Opera of Elisa the next night, the Audience not amounting to above thirty besides the Royal Family, so ’tis to be laid aside, & O’tho with some new songs to be perform’d Saturday next, for my part I shall be very indifferent after the fine entertainment I had last night at y^e Dutchess of Marlboroughs concert, where Seresino sung better than ever I heard him, & Bononcini made such musick with the Violoncello as I had no notion of, Currani was not well enough to be there.

“The Prince and Princess went to Lincolns Inn to see seven Judges & the Chancelor of the Exchequer dance at the Revels, as I suppose my Lord Chancelor did at the Temple.

“L^d Blanford has sent over two cases of books which he says is half the collection he has made at Paris, & a bill of lading for some pictures which are coming from Venice, the Dutchess of Newcastle told me last night he had in a letter to her named next month for his coming himself, but she seemed to be of opinion he wou’d alter his mind.

“I’m in some pain for my Son Charles who has had a fever at Neufchatel & I have not had a letter from thence this good while, his brother the Oxonian is gone to the new

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 570.

play of Hembra said to be writt by Southern, he saw the Duke of Bedford, Lord Lauderdale & some others playing pretty deep last night at Mrs. Kemps Assembly. My wife who presents her humble service to you, & Mrs. Nicholas, & is always very solicitous to know how you doe has a kind of one above stairs & the Directors complain of Quadrille for ruining the Operas. I hope you continue to mend apace & am Dear S^r

“ y^r most Obedient Serv^t

JN. EVELYN.

“ L^d Stanhope had an acco^t of his fathers death this morning by an express.”

(*Endorsed.*)

1725.

3 feb.

5 rec.

9 ans. S^r Jn^o Evelyn to
Mr. Edw^d N.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS¹

“ DUKE STREET, *Aug^t 19th, 1725.*

“ DEAR S^R,—Lord Castlemain kept me & my company Sir J. Stanley & M^{rs} Walker so long in his gardens tuesday last to shew us what alterations he design’d to make that I came home too late to thank you by that post for your favour of the 17th, which I found the night before at my return from making a visit at Eton where I had the pleasure of seeing M^r Hill looking extremely well after his progress, which seems to have sett him up again he came thither but the day before with his fellow Traveller, who went in the afternoon to Henley in his way to Oxford. Mr. Hill was full of the praises of the fine things he saw at Wiltons, & of the Lady of the place, but wou’d not own she had been ill in y^e way I heard.

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 431.

“The news of M^{rs} D. going into Gloucestershire does not hold by a letter from M^r Mann I find Charles set out for Lions monday was sennight, tho’ he says he believes he cou’d have been contented to have made a longer stay at Paris, if his Governor had not persisted to carry him away, for which I have not the worse opinion of him. However in y^e little time he staid he saw the King at Supper at Versailles, & had the honour to be so much taken notice of by the young Monarch as for him to enquire who he was & M^r Mann believes he might have stood fair for one of his Playfellows, cou’d he have talk’t French, the same letter says bills were lately sett up in the night all over Paris threatning a rising of 12,000 men, if bread now at 4^d sterling p^r pound was not cheaper, which ’tis thought is more owing to the ill managem^t of the people in power, than to any scarcity of corn, as the Courts being so much behind in the payment of pensions is the effect of the same cause rather than of want of money. I hope you will forgive my troubling you with so much French news, when I cou’d learn none at home, tho’ I was at S^r Rob. Walpoles levee this morning, and afterwards at Georges new Chocolate house, where Grinda was, which he has much improved.

“I’m told L^d Bolingbroke has purchas’d L^d Torkewils seat & y^e estate about it for £22000, & intends to show there the skill in gardening he has learnt in France.

“I wish you good Success from the letter you have wrote to your great Neighbour & dont think it the less likely, for the application being made directly to him.

“I hear the Noble L^d who went so well attended to dine with him, is gone to Winchester races with his Lady, & his Neighbours of Parford, & will proceed from thence to those at Oxford which my son writes me word were to be this week.

“I’m very glad to hear your Stomach is so good, & hope this fine weather will contribute every way to your recovery & enable you to continue a good account of yourself in y^r next directed to Wotton where I count upon being the beginning

of next week. My Wife desires her complem^{ts} & I
am S^r

“ Y^r most humble
& Obedient Serv^t

J. EVELYN.

“ I hope my brother
Antiquary is well, &
beg my humble service
to him.”

(*Endorsed.*)

1725.

19 Aug.

21 Rec^d

23 ans.

Jn^o Evelyn

to Mr. Edw^d N.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS¹

“ DUKE STREET, Nov^r 6, 1725.

“ DEAR S^R,—I ought much sooner to have acknowledged your favour of the 27th of last month, and exprest the pleasure I took in reading the good account you give of yourself, but the last three or four days of my stay at Wotton prolonged to yesterday, as you rightly guess’d were entirely taken up in settling my affair there.

“ Lord Harcourt has been in town long enough to wonder what I could doe in the countrey, and was beginning this evening to fall upon me by virtue of his Flagship for not coming sooner, when I stopt his mouth by saying his Excellency had little to doe, if that was all his business, and made my peace by admiring the finery of his new crimson Damask furniture, and promising to wait upon him monday next to Leicester fields. My Wife begins now to think a little of her new employment tho the joyners are not out of Dr. Blanford’s house, but your faith is stronger than ours in believing he will be here so soon as Christmas and I’m

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 493.

afraid the bill of £300 brought me to day is not to pay off his lodging at Paris.

“I’m sorry you are so much imposed on in the matter of Woodcocks, which if you were nearer Wotton might be had at a much easier rate, & that the Ladys have had so ill a run. The Dutchess of Marlborough won’t allow that the Duke of Bedford has been so great a sufferer by the Gamesters, & makes his losses under £1000. I find his Grace is no enemy to good liquor of all kinds, especially strong beer, & that L^d Clarendon makes quite another figure in Oxfordshire since his Lady’s death, I wish I cou’d say a better.

“Sr Cecil Bishop is dead at last, & I believe the new one will have the Lady you mention, but not presently. He proposes I hear to clear y^e debts his father has left by selling part of the estate, after which he will have 1500 a year in present & 1800 a year more after his mother but then he has brothers & sisters to provide for. Mr. Clark has answer’d L^d Blanford’s request in a very obliging manner, but I wonder a little at his Lordship’s choice of so melancholy a piece of furniture. Our Peripatetick Coll: has not yet had Mr. Bridgman, & I don’t think the place deserves the hand of such a Master in his profession. I’m sorry you had so much trouble between Mrs. Budgen & Mr. Heath, & wish Thomas James cou’d have been of any use to you in it. I was told the Lady was gone to be admitted at your Court yesterday sennight. I found Shawfields son to day in our new Board room at the Custom house instead of Sr James Campbell, who sett out for North Britain last week. I don’t know how matters goe with his father, but the young man does not seem to like that the Glasgow Rioters are come off so easily. Wottrell is a good Sollicitor, but he might have spared you, tis not so easy to advance him so fast as he thinks he deserves, but I shan’t forgett to putt Mr. Hale in mind of him, to whom he is obliged for y^e good post he is now in, tho’ he does not reckon it equal to his merits.

“Admiral Norris told the Prince to day he had orders to goe for his Majesty who is expected the first light nights in Dec^r. My Wife desires me to present her humble service to you & tell you, that Mrs. Hall whom we met at St. James

place to night was much more wellcome to her for the good news she told her of your late recovery, & design of being shortly in town. She wou'd have writt to Mrs. Nicholas how much she is her humble servant. I beg my Complements to her, & wishing you a daily improvement in your health am ever

“ Dear Sr,

“ my writing tackle is
none of y^e best.

Y^r most humble & obedient

Serv^t

J. EVELYN.”

(*Addressed.*)

For

Edward Nicholas Esq^{ro}
at Bath.

(*Endorsed.*)

1725

6. Nov.

8 Rec.

10 An.

S^r Jⁿ^o Evelyn
to Edw^d N.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN¹

“ WOTTON, y^e 29 of June 1743.

“ I have the pleasure of my Dears letter writt last night and the satisfaction of hearing that there is an express come with perticulars but still I want to know what has happened since the first account, I hate to think of the French Army so near his Majesty and his good subjects, and think it a vast while to know nothing new of them, 700 of the French deserting to us is a very extraordinary circumstance. the Girls were att Horsly last night and saw the Nichollas's and the Fox's who all wanted to know more, then comes to any of our shares. this Neighbourhood, att least the lower class of them amuse themselves with seeing poor Lady Donnegall lye in state, and by what I hear it is as stately as it is possible in that House. Mrs. Evelyn is buisy putting up his Tent to entertain Lady Onslow with sherries and tea in the

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 138.

afternoon, and talks of carrying me thither but I dont find my self much dispos'd.

"I am very sorry I was not in Town to receive the Dutchess of Newcastle's favour, and wish she may come again, when I am in the next time I beg my compliments to Lord Godolphin, and all friends. the young people desire their duty to you, and I am ever my Dearest intirely yours

"I hope you'l write to me

J. EVELYN.

tomorrow night that it may come seasonably to raise my

spirits for my journey, I hope the Darking sightsees did not forget my letter last night, I trusted it to Mr. Dean to carry it all our own servants being gone to Abinger too."

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS ¹

"EDINBURGH, *Sep^r 3^d*, 1743.

"DEAR S^r,—I was ashamed to receive a second favour from you last night, before I had returned you my thanks for that of the 16th of last month, my Wife who desires her best complements to you & Mrs. Nicholas is as well as myself extremely concerned at the sad account you give of poor Lady Aylesfords condition, & not at all surprised at the melancholy scene you saw at Albury. I hope in God her Ladyship will recover since her convulsions were over, & that to morrows post will bring us the agreeable news of her being like to doe well.

"I am very sorry for the terrible misfortune befallen L^d Onslow, & wish he may escape the danger he must needs be in from such a wound. I think no punishment bad enough for a Villain, that cou'd be guilty of such a fact, & show no remorse for it; & can't but be of opinion that tis a defect in our Law not to make such attempts death.

"I shou'd not have deferr'd writing to you so long, but that I might be able to give you some account of y^e seats in this Countrey, as you were pleased to desire. Those I have seen are Hamilton Place as tis called situated in a fine Countrey within eight miles of Glascow, which is a fine City on the river

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 204.

Clyde. it has a noble gallery full of good pictures joyning the two wings of apartments, but the front to y^e garden is old. y^e gardens if well kept wou'd be fine & y^e plantations about it are large. Kinross an handsome house in Fife belonging to S^r Tho: Bruce built by his Grandfather S^r William the great Architect of this Countrey, who built Holyrood house. the situation of this is uncommon being on Loch Levin eleven miles round, in which is an Island with a Castle where Mary Queen of Scots was confined for some time till she made her escape by y^e help of her Keeper, to whom 'tis said she was not unkind. I was last week also at Duplin, where are vast plantations of Scotch fir with all sorts of other trees and hedges particularly one of Oak of a great length, the house which looks upon a fine valley with y^e river airr in it is very well & has some fine pictures in it, & ye offices lately built are extremely good. my L^d Kinnoul pass'd thro' this town fry-day last in his way home. L^d Marrs garden of 40 Acres, & his wood of above 100 cutt into Vistas terminating on the river Forth is a vast design well laid out but not finish't. I saw in ye same progress no less than five palaces of the Scotch King, Dumferling, Falkland, & Lithgow in ruins, Skuin which belonging to my Lord Stormont is kept up, & has a fine apartment, where the Pretender lodged, & Sterling Castle, where the hall Chapel & rooms of state were very noble, & y^e prospect from it pretty near as fine as that of Windsor. besides Sheriffmuir, Bannockburn & Falkirk all famous for battles, & the Roman Temple commonly call'd Arthurs oven at y^e bounds of y^e Roman Empire in shape like an eg with one end cutt off & built of stones without mortar.

"The Duke & Dutchess of Queensborough with whom we had the honour to dine staid but ten days, they made a ball at which there was a great appearance of good company as my Wife told me, for I was gone that day to Glasgow.

"I'm sorry I was not at Wotton when you & Mr. Fox took y^e pains to goe so far, & I wish I had made one at y^e Astronomical party at y^e Parsonage.

"I dare say by this time you are more tired with my description of my late expedition, than I was in performing it & shall therefore trouble you with nothing more than my

humble service to Mrs. Nicholas, & y^e assurances of my being,
Dear S^r,

Y^r most faithfull & Obedient Serv^t,

J. EVELYN.

(*Endorsed.*)

Edinburgh 3d Sep^r.

S^r Jⁿ Evelyn 10 r^d

to Mr. Edw. Nicholas 10 an^r.

instead of ye thunder & lightning you complain of we have had nothing here these three weeks but fine warm weather, & I eat good grapes today. I supt at Perth a pretty town on y^e banks of Tay Wednesday last with Sabine, who went ony^e next day towards the Highlands to receive y^e rest of y^e Forces.

“The ruins of St. Andrews Cathedral shew it to have been very stately & Arch Bishop Sharps Monument is a fine thing the Universitys three Colleges are little better than y^e Halls at Oxford & it being Vacation time not a soul appears in them.”

(*Addressed.*)

For Edward Nicholas Esq^{re}

at West Horsley near Pipley in Surrey.

LETTER FROM SIR JOHN EVELYN TO MR. NICHOLAS ¹

“EDINBURGH, Oct^r 3^d, 1743.

“DEAR S^r,—I have two of your favours to acknowledge which want nothing to make them complete but a better account of Mrs. Nicholas. She was very good to visit our little boy at Dorking, when such an hill was in the way but after what you have said in his praise, there can be no occasion for her giving herself the trouble to write on that subject.

“Mr. Hornbys situation must by your description be very fine, & I believe you will allow L^d Hoptons tho’ in this Countrey to be so too, when you hear that from the hall door there is a prospect of 20 miles down the Firth & of 3 miles cross it to y^e coast of Fife from a noble grass terrace in his garden, & of

¹ Egerton MSS., 2540, fo. 208.

15 miles up the river to Sterling Castle, the parterre has a large fountain in it, & is very neatly kept, & the hedges with the greens within them are as flourishing as those in Kensington Garden tho not yet so tall, you have his house in the Vitruvius Britannicus, but he is making a considerable addition to it by two semicircular wings in the front to ye Court, in short 'tis much the finest place I have seen in North Britain & may view with many if not most in the South. I shou'd not have thought Balganoon too farr, cou'd I have been absent long enough for such an expedition a Gentleman who was with me this morning, & came by it lately says tis a verry pretty place in a pleasant countrey & much improved of late, but Mr. Ross's woods are a great distance from it, there being nothing but shrubs & young planting near his house. our weather continued extremely fine to the end of last week, & my wife & I were troubled with the heat but Saturday last in going to dine at L^d Raglans an agreeable place with a good house four miles off, & within a mile of L^d Annandales Villa where besides bust & urns I saw several good pictures he brought from Italy, but miss'd the sight of his books said to be very curious by his Lordsh^{ps} having carried away the key of his Library

“That the fruit at Horseley shou'd be good this year is no wonder to us, who have tasted very ripe grapes so far North, & eat frequently pears & golden pepins not inferior to those of England.

“We have heard abundance of our Landlords odd match, & I can't blame his first Wive's relations for being angry with him, shou'd he make any difficultys in providing handsomly for her children to whom his fortune is in a great measure owing.

“I'm sorry for Mr. Fieldings death, & am afraid his Successor at Ashstead will not be so well to be liked, it must be no small mortification to Mr. Hill & Mr. Clark to come at such a time to L^d Lexingtons who by our account of his will he has provided well for ye D: of Rutlands second son.

“I'm very glad L^d Aylesford was so agreeably surprised as to find my Lady like to doe well, at his coming to Albany upon so melancholy a summons, & Surrey is happy in the

recovery of her L^d Lieutenant. Your acquaintance Campbell & Member for this City was tuesday last unanimously chose Lord Provost again, an honour I dont despair of after having my freedom given me ten days agoe & an entertainment by the Magistrates of Leith in company with my brethren. I'm told the Magistrates are not so easily chosen in other parts but here the Argathelions carry all before them.

"Thursday next we are to have a race on the sands at Leith, & the first of Nov^r the term begins, which will fill this town again, & renew the Assemblys in the mean time my Wife has taken possession of the room our board sits in in the morning for tea & Ombre in the evening & is glad to play with some of the Commission the Ladys of this town not playing at this or any other game, whether for fear of offending the Kirk, or because they can employ their time better I will not take upon me to determine.

"I'm afraid I have tired you with the length of this epistle, & shall end it with our best complements to Mrs. Nicholas & the assurance of my being very sincerely, Dear S^r,

"Y^r most humble & Obedient Serv^t,

J. EVELYN."

(Endorsed.)

1743. Edinburgh. 3: oct.

S^r Jn Evelyn 10 rec.

Mr. Edwd. Nicholas ans. 10 & 11.

CHILDREN OF SIR JOHN EVELYN, 1ST BART.

Sir John had six sons and three daughters, viz. :—

1. SIR JOHN EVELYN, 2nd Bart. Born August 24, 1706; died September 15, 1749, of whom presently.

2. CHARLES, second son. Born in the parish of St. Mary, Woolnoth, London, January 3, 1709; he was of St. James's, Westminster, and of Yerlington, Somersetshire. Died, January 15, 1748; he was buried at Yerlington. He married Susannah,¹ daughter and heir of Peter Prideaux, Esq., of Solden, Devonshire, brother of Sir Edmund Prideaux, Bart.; Marriage settlement, dated November 17-18, 1732;

¹ Chan. Pro., 1714-58, Evelyn v. Cheethe, 58.

died June 4, 1747, and buried at Yerlington. Charles¹ had three sons, two of whom died in infancy. Charles, the eldest son, married Philippa, daughter of Captain Fortunatus Wright of Liverpool, captain of the *Fane* and *King George*, Privateers. The latter perished at sea in 1757. He had nine children, four sons and five daughters, viz. :—

Sir John Evelyn, 4th Bart. Born 1757. Died May 11, 1833, of whom presently.

Edward, who died an infant.

Charles, born November 23, 1765; was a lieutenant in the H.E.I. Co.'s service at Calcutta. He died on a voyage from India to Bassora, Persia, in April 1784, unmarried.

Sir Hugh Evelyn, 5th Bart. Born December 31, 1769. Died August 28, 1848.

Susannah Prideaux Evelyn. Born about 1765. Married at St. James's, Westminster, February 21, 1785, Lieutenant John Elsworthy Fortunatus Wright, R.N., Master of St. George's Dock, Liverpool. Died 1798. They had two sons and four daughters.

Martha Boscawen Evelyn. Born 1759. Married 1786 to Nicholas Vincent, captain of a ship trading between Charleston and England. She died in America, 1794.

Philippa Evelyn. Born 1760. Died October 27, 1824. Buried at Bexhill, Sussex. Married (1) Major Daniel Francis Houghton, late of the 69th Regiment, Fort-Major of the garrison of Goree, West Africa, by whom she had two sons and one daughter. He was a celebrated traveller. She married (2) Wilbraham Liardet, by whom she had one son and two daughters.

Maria Evelyn. Born March 21, 1766. Died, unmarried, before 1818 in a convent in France.

Francis Louisa. Born 1767. Married, 1785, the Rev. John Griffith of Manchester.

3. GEORGE EVELYN, third son. Born July 25, 1713. Died, March 6, 1714, at St. Margaret's, Westminster. Buried, March 11, at Deptford.

4. GEORGE EVELYN, fourth son. Born April 19, 1716. Died September of the same year.

¹ Chan. Pro., 1714-58, Evelyn v. Evelyn, 592.

5. SYDNEY EVELYN, fifth son. Born April 17, 1718. Was of Upton Gray, Hampshire. Died *s.p.* January 19, 1782, aged sixty-three. Buried at Upton Gray Church. Married Elizabeth, daughter of . . . Hill. She died, March 8, 1762, in her fortieth year. Buried at Upton Gray Church, near Basingstoke.

6. WILLIAM EVELYN, sixth son. Born February 10, 1723; he was in the Guards; Lieut.-General in Army; and Colonel, 29th Foot; M.P. for Helston, 1767-74. Died, unmarried, at Send Grove, Surrey, August 13, 1783. Buried at Send. Left his estates to be sold and divided between the children of his nephew Charles, except Mrs. Wright, who was otherwise provided for.

1. ANNE EVELYN, eldest daughter. Born at Wotton, August 27, 1707. Died young.

2. ANNE EVELYN, second daughter. Born, September 18, 1710. Died, unmarried, 1771. Buried at Wotton.

3. MARY EVELYN, third daughter. Born, 1711. Died, unmarried, 1779.

The following is an extract from an account of the last descendants of John Evelyn by William Bray, and refers to William Evelyn, youngest son of Sir John Evelyn:—

“After the death of his father, he and his two unmarried sisters bought a cottage and a small quantity of ground in the Parish of Send, in Surrey. This gentleman had his great-grandfather’s taste for gardening, which he exhibited by purchasing pieces of land adjoining the house and turning them into a beautiful *ferme ornée*; he at length added to the house, so as to make it a very comfortable and beautiful residence. Here he spent the greatest part of his time, having also a house in London. On the death of his brother John, he was brought into Parliament for the borough of Helston, in Cornwall, by Lord Godolphin, the old friend of the family, and he continued to represent it till his death in 1783.”

CHAPTER V

SIR JOHN EVELYN, 2ND BART.

SIR JOHN EVELYN, 2nd Baronet, eldest son of Sir John Evelyn, 1st Baronet, and Anne Boscawen, and great-grandson of Sylva Evelyn, was born at Wotton, August 24, 1706, and was baptized there on September 1. Of him very little is known, but he must have been a good deal about the Court as he was Groom of the Bedchamber and Clerk of the Green Cloth to Frederick, Prince of Wales, and to George III.

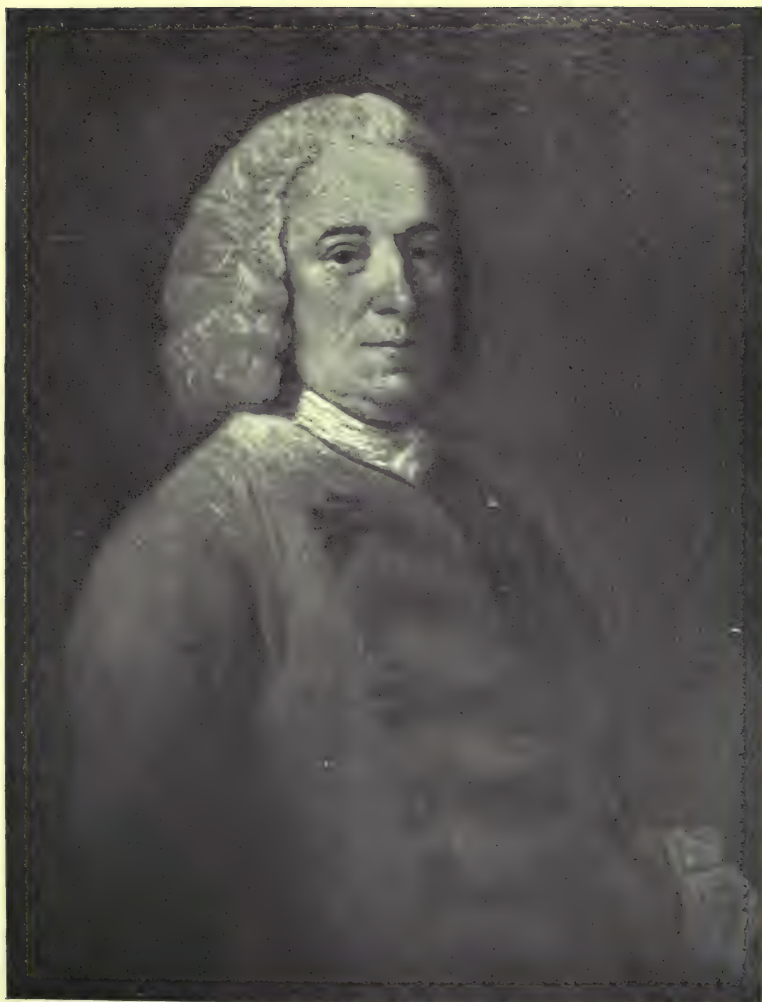
He married¹ on August 17, 1732, his first cousin, Mary, daughter of Hugh, 1st Viscount Falmouth, his mother's brother. She was twenty-seven, having been born on March 12, 1705, and John was a year younger than she. There is a portrait of her at Wotton. Through her mother, Charlotte Godfrey, Lady Evelyn was great-niece of John, Duke of Marlborough, and this accounts for the presence of so many Churchill portraits at Wotton.

He served in Parliament three times, viz., for Helston, 1727-41; for Penryn, 1741-47; and again for Helston from 1747-67.

His wife died, September 15, 1749, aged forty-four, and was buried at Wotton, September 21. His father died on July 15, 1763, and his son then succeeded him as Baronet when he was nearly fifty-seven.

Sir John Evelyn died June 11, 1767, aged nearly sixty-one, and was buried at Wotton on the following 19th of June.

¹ Faculty Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Marriage Licenses.
"To be married at the Collegiate Church of St. Peter, Westminster."



SIR JOHN EVELYN (1706-1767)

LETTER FROM J. EVELYN TO HIS FATHER, SIR JOHN
EVELYN, BART.¹

“CLATFORD, *Novr. y^e 9th*, 1738.

“DEAR S^R,—I had the favour of your letter with Mr. Hoares note of £100, for which I give you many thanks.

“I went to Bath friday last and return’d hither tuesday & left my Wife much better than she was before her going there, tho’ I can hardly think the waters have been of any service to her as her cold has prevented her drinking ’em constantly.

“Their Royall Highnesses were in very good health but appear’d a little tired of the place & have fixt y^e 1st of Dec^r for leaving it, they go tomorrow to Bristol, where great preparations are making for their reception; there was a great crowd att y^e rooms att Bath of an evening tho’ not much good company, but every body seem’d pleased with their Royal Highnesses behaviour, which is designed to be as little troublesome as possible;

“I went one morning to see Mr. Allen the Postmasters great stone Quarry, and new house he is building near it, upon one of y^e high hills about a mile from y^e town; the stone works easier than wood when first cutt out of the Quarry but hardens they say by the weather; ’tis conveyed in a very cleaver manner down to y^e town upon carriages with low broad wheels, covered with iron, which run upon a wooden frame made y^e length of y^e hill, so that when y^e machine is sett agoing it runs down y^e hill without any help, only one man behind to steer it, & in this manner above three hundred Tunn of stones are carried down at one load; I visited Mrs. Godolphin who sem’d pretty well but I believe seldom goes into y^e crowd of the Place; Lady Sundon I heard was so bad that ’tis doubtfull whether she will ever be able to come from thence;

“I’m glad Mr. Edwardses goods sold so well & I wish his estate may do y^e same to make Lady Marys loss y^e less considerable, I hope L^d Godolphin is well, &, if in town, beg

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 102.

my best respects to him & I am, with my duty to my Mother
& compliments to y^e rest of y^e family,

“Y^r most dutifull & affectionate son,

J. EVELYN.”

(*Addressed.*)

For

S^r John Evelyn Bar^t

in Duke Street,

Westminster.

Free

J. Evelyn.

(*Endorsed.*)

Mr. Evelyn,

Nov^r 9th

1738.

LETTER FROM J. EVELYN TO HIS FATHER, SIR JOHN
EVELYN, BART.¹

“NOTTINGHAM, *November* 1738.

“DEAR S^r,—Since I wrote last to you I have made a Tour allmost round this county taking the opportunity of going with a Gentleman that went to receive the Land tax, for his father a Banker here that returns it to London.

“We went Wednesday last about 6 o'clock, & after about 4 miles ride came to the banks of the Trent, leaving Shelford on the opposite side, an old stone house about the size of Milton court at present inhabited by a Grazier but very pleasantly situated, the road from hence on a flat by the Trent side is reckon'd the most beautiful ride in the country, great part of the way you have a sloping bank on the other side cover'd with wood that reaches almost to the water this wood is part of the ancient estate of the Hoekers, which family is extinct, for at present it belongs to a Mrs. Disney, on the left hand you see the spire of Southwell, upon the banks of the Trent I saw two or three Cranes which are pretty common here, we cross'd the Trent about 4 mile off Newark in a boat with a rope, though the river is there wider I believe than the

¹ Add. MSS., 15,949, fo. 100.

Thames at Hampton Court being 140 yards over, leaving the river on the left we came to Stoke 3 mile from Newark, where Henry the 7th defeated the Imposter Lambert Symnel in 1487. between this & Newark is a fine Champaign country surrounded with beautiful Spires in the other parts of this country very scarce, that of Newark is the finest I remember to have seen, the ruins of the castle make a great show, & so does the Duke of Rutlands Lodge & woods in his Park at Averham about a mile from Kelham both on the other side the Trent. Newark you must remember to be an old dirty town not half so big as Nottingham, as may appear from the Land tax the one paying not 300 lbs. the other 800, which is as much as Leicester & Northampton pay both together, though each is near as big, Nottingham having been as zealous as the counties near London at the laying on of the Tax. In Newark there are about 1100 families, it falls short of Nottingham both in Trade & Beauty of the buildings as well as in number of inhabitants, though standing on a level the streets are more regular & even, the Church is a very handsome old building having a Spire in its kind as pretty as the tower of Allhallows in Derby there is hardly a Dissenter in the town, though so near a place where they swarm, & as their great affection to the Church appears from their Behaviour in the Civil war, it still seems to shew itself in their using the Cathedral service in a Parish Church they having a Choir of Men & boys that wear a black gown faced with a broad kind of white furr. there are some old gates about the town, besides the ruinous castle which is prettily situated on that branch of the Trent that runs by the town. at dinner the Duke of Newcastles health was drunk; who makes one of the Members of the Town at present Mr. Pelham, his Grace has the Toll at the Bridge, which the Scotch beasts make very considerable, there passing above 400 in less than a quarter of an hour that I stood there, after dinner we went to Kelham a mile from Newark cross an Island form'd by the Trent: it is a large brick house 3 story high, & surrounded by a stone ballustrade on the top, it has been lately above half rebuilt, the Ceilings are most of them Stucco, & in richness of furniture & neatness of finishing it falls little

short of Chatsworth, though not to be compar'd with it for grandeur & bulk, the Apartment being much smaller, it abounds in fine Cabinets, silk Tapestry hangings (which being most of them paper'd up were lost to us) Crimson velvet chairs, work'd beds, & Indian paintings upon Silk, Marble tables, & pictures, one of the present Duke a Landscape of Averham Park, a large view of Constantinople & the raising the seige of Vienna, (a picture of which was shewn some time ago at Spring garden) these three are on a stair case, there is a pretty little picture of a Lady that was house-keeper to Queen Elizabeth with the following Motto :—

*Uxor amet, sileat, servet, nec ubique varetur,
Hoc Testudo docet, claves, labra junctaque Turtur.'*

alluding to these several Emblems that are express'd in the picture, there is a great deal of fine work done by the late Duchess & her workwomen, she died here, the Laundry is a pretty contrivance, it is a large room, with a row of Leaden Tubs to wash in, each having a cock to let in water, & a plug to let it out, to every one belongs a wooden leaf which being put on forms a firm dresser for Ironing, at the top of the room are racks that are let down to receive the cloaths & wound up again, here is also a Mangle. the Trent in a flood covers the garden which lies flat down to the river & has nothing remarkable besides its situation & a Maze, the Church joins to the garden, on one side of the Chancel is a neat little building over the Vault belonging to the Lexington family, paved like the Vestibule at Wotton, & separated from the Chancel by an Iron grate, in this is a fine monument of the L^d & Lady Lexington leaning on a marble cushion & underneath it a Matress of the same, the whole seems to be a fine piece of sculpture, on one side is my L^{ds} Epitaph on the other side my Ladies, at one end are carv'd the Arms of the family at the other is an inscription setting forth the Antiquity of the family, viz. : that there was a Lord Lexington in the 13th Century, & that the Suttons having married into that family, had the Title bestowed upon them in the 21st of Charles 1st, in consideration of their steady loyalty, & in the person of the late Lord's father, the late Lord losing

his son at Madrid during his embassy (the negotiations of which are pompously represented as having greatly contributed to the peace of Utrecht, & King Philips renunciation of the Crown of France) settled his estate on his daughters second son on condition of his taking the name & arms of Sutton, the Duke has two sons that go by that name in case one should die, the estate is said to be 4000*l* a year, others say 7000*l*. I return'd in the Evening to the receipt of money, indeed I never saw so much in Specie before, there was near 1000*l* in gold most of it guineas, & 3000*l* in Silver making about half a peck-full into which it was flung, & afterwards counted out upon a vast table, besides this of the Land tax the same people receiv'd about 5000*l* of my Lord Oxfords Tenants being half a years rent of his estate about Newark, they receive at times & return most of the money in the county & Banker in a remote town being very rare, & of great use. I shall give you an account of the rest of my journey next post, Mr. Mordan is pretty well recover'd & goes abroad, I received Miss Maries & your letter, & am with my duty to Mama your most dutiful

& affectionate son

J. EVELYN."

CHILDREN OF SIR JOHN EVELYN, 2ND BART.

Sir John Evelyn had five children, two sons and three daughters, viz. :—

FREDERICK, 3rd Bart., of whom presently. Born March 20, 1733. Died April 1, 1812.

JOHN. Born November 17, 1737. Baptized at St. George's, Hanover Square, December 12, 1737. Died young.

MARY. Born, May 20, 1735. Baptized at St. George's, Hanover Square, June 13, 1735. Died, unmarried, September 6, 1785, aged fifty. Buried at Wotton, September 27, 1785.

AUGUSTA. Born June 22, 1736. Baptized at St. George's, Hanover Square, July 19, 1736. Was Maid of Honour to the Princess Dowager of Wales (mother of George III), after whom she was probably named. Married, June 2, 1781, the Rev. Henry Jenkin, D.D. He was of St. John's College,

Cambridge, and had the college living of Ufford, with the Chapel of Bainton, Northamptonshire. On the death of the Rev. Thomas Taylor he was presented, in 1808, by Sir Frederick Evelyn to the livings of Wotton and Abinger in Surrey, on which occasion he resigned Ufford. He was Chaplain to the Prince Regent, and was presented by him to the Deanery of St. Burian, in Cornwall, which he held till his death. Mrs. Jenkin died April 2, 1812, *s.p.*, aged seventy-five, and was buried at Wotton on April 9, 1812. Her husband died December 21, 1817, aged eighty-five, and was buried at Wotton, December 31, 1817.

LUCY. Born, 1739. Died, June 1754, at the age of fourteen. Buried at Wotton, June 25, 1754.

CHAPTER VI

SIR FREDERICK EVELYN, 3RD BART.

SIR FREDERICK EVELYN,¹ 3rd Baronet, eldest son of Sir John Evelyn, 2nd Baronet, was born in London, March 20, 1733, and baptized at St. George's, Hanover Square, on April 16 following. He entered the army and, in 1759, served in Elliot's Light Horse at the battle of Minden.

He was a member of the Jockey Club and was devoted to sport of all kind. His pictures of horses and dogs still ornament the walls of the morning-room at Wotton, where is also his portrait.

He spent considerable sums on the Turf, was on terms of friendship with the Prince Regent, and was, in fact, in his "set."

When he was nearly thirty-four years of age, his father died in 1767, and Frederick then inherited the Wotton and Deptford estates and succeeded to the baronetcy. His mother had died when he was fifteen.

On August 8, 1769, at the age of thirty-seven, he married, at St. Marylebone, Mary, daughter of William Turton, Esq., of Staffordshire. Her portrait is at Wotton. She was a handsome brunette with a clear olive complexion. She had no children.

When Sir Frederick made his will he was somewhat embarrassed by the fact of having no direct heir and that the next of kin, John, the son of his first cousin, Charles Evelyn, was a lunatic in confinement, his younger brother, Hugh, being also insane though at liberty. Sir Frederick, under the circumstances, decided to leave the whole estate to his wife,

¹ Chan. Pro., 1758-1800, Evelyn v. Byssshop, 1691.

Lady Evelyn, on the understanding that she should make it over to John Evelyn, her husband's fifth cousin.

Sir Frederick died April 1, 1812, and was buried at Wotton on April 8. As his estates were not entailed, he left both those at Wotton and Deptford to his widow. She lived at Wotton, where she was very much loved and respected.

Her great hobby was botany and gardening, and she had a splendid collection of plants and shrubs, both of those native to this country and of exotic plants. She had a complete catalogue arranged by Mr. Upcott, of the London Institution, of the things in the library at Wotton. She also had the *Diary* of her husband's ancestor, John Evelyn, published for the first time. The following is an account of how it came to be published. It is an extract from the Preface to Frederick Strong's *Catalogue*: sub tit. "Address to the Reader, the late William Upcott," p. 16 (taken from the *History of Deptford*, by Nathan Dews):—

"In 1814 Mr. Wm. Upcott being on a visit at Lady Evelyn's at Wotton, in Surrey, and sitting after dinner with her ladyship and her friend, Mrs. Molyneux, his attention was attracted to a tippet of feathers on which Lady Evelyn was employed—'We have all of us our hobbies, I perceive, my lady,' said Mr. Upcott. 'Very true,' rejoined her ladyship, 'and pray what may yours be?' 'Mine, madam, from a very early age, began by collecting provincial copper tokens, and latterly the handwriting (or autographs) of men who have distinguished themselves in every walk of life.' 'Handwritings!' exclaimed Lady Evelyn, with surprise; 'what do you mean by handwritings? Surely you don't mean old letters?' at the same time opening the drawer of her work table, and taking out a small parcel of papers, some of which had just been used by Mrs. Molyneux as patterns for articles of dress. The sight of this packet, though of no literary importance, yet containing letters written by eminent characters (more particularly one from the celebrated Sarah Duchess of Marlborough), afforded the greatest pleasure to Mr. Upcott, who expressed exceeding delight in looking them over. 'Oh!' added Lady Evelyn,

‘if you care for papers like these you shall have plenty, for Sylva Evelyn (the familiar appellation applied to John Evelyn by his descendants), and those that succeeded him, preserved all their letters.’ Then, ringing for her confidential attendant, ‘Here,’ said her ladyship, ‘Mr. Upcott tells me he is fond of collecting old letters; take the key of the ebony cabinet in the billiard room, procure a basket, and bring down some of the bundles.’ Mr. Upcott accompanied the attendant, and, having brought a quantity of these letters into the dining room, passed an agreeable evening in examining the contents of each packet; with the assurance from Lady Evelyn that he was welcome to lay aside any that he might desire for his own collection. On the following evening the ebony cabinet was visited a second time, when Evelyn’s *Kalendarium*, as he had entitled it, or *Diary*, a small quarto volume, very closely written with his own hand, presented itself. This interesting family document had been lent by Lady Evelyn from time to time to her particular friends, yet she did not consider its contents of sufficient importance for publication, and except for accident it might have been cut up for dress patterns or lighting fires. Evelyn’s *Diary* was obtained from the old lady for publication, and has since appeared, in successive quarto and octavo editions.”

Lady Evelyn died, November 12, 1817, five years after her husband, aged seventy-three, and was buried at Wotton on November 22.

By her will, which was dated September 12, 1814, she left her estates to her husband’s fifth cousin, John Evelyn, who belonged to an elder branch of the family, and was directly descended from George Evelyn of Long Ditton, Kingston, Godstone, and Wotton, the original possessor of Wotton and their common ancestor, who died in 1603.

On a tablet in Wotton church is the following inscription by John Evelyn, the devisee of Lady Evelyn:—

“To the memory of Dame Mary Evelyn, widow of Sir Frederick Evelyn, of Wotton, in this parish, Baronet. She was the only child of William Turton, Esq., of the County of Stafford, and in 1769 was married to Sir Frederick, who

having no issue gave his estates to her, which at her death she bequeathed to John Evelyn, descended from the common ancestor of Sir Frederick and him. Her taste gave additional charms to the family residence ; her liberality cheered the abode of the cottager and clothed and educated his children. She crowned all by a genuine unaffected piety. Having borne a long and painful illness with fortitude and Christian resignation, she departed this life on the 12th November, 1817, universally respected and regretted, in the 73rd year of her age. In grateful remembrance of her kindness, this memorial is inscribed by John Evelyn, her successor at Wotton, 1818."

William John Evelyn, in the Appendix to a pamphlet by William Bray on the *Last Male Descendants of John Evelyn*, says :—

"My grandfather was scarcely, if at all known to Lady Evelyn. It was therefore under no unworthy solicitation or undue influence that Lady Evelyn acted. She conscientiously discharged the trust reposed in her by her husband ; and her memory as a good religious and charitable lady, is still respected and honoured at Wotton. There are letters of hers still preserved, which prove the interest which she took in the management and improvement of her estates. The Tables of Descent herewith printed will shew clearly that on failure of heirs male of John Evelyn (except the two last unfortunate baronets, both of unsound mind) my grandfather was rightly and properly named by Lady Evelyn as her devisee and successor at Wotton. On his death, in 1827, my father succeeded as tenant for life, under Lady Evelyn's will ; and on his early and lamented death in 1829, I, in my seventh year, was called as tenant-in-tail to succeed to the inheritance."

CHAPTER VII

SIR JOHN EVELYN, 4TH BART.

ON Sir Frederick Evelyn's death in 1812, the baronetcy went to his first cousin once removed, John Evelyn, great-grandson of Sir John Evelyn, 1st Baronet. The last named had, besides his eldest son who succeeded him, a second son called Charles, who married Susannah, daughter of Peter Prideaux. Their eldest son was also called Charles, and he married Philippa, daughter of Captain Fortunatus Wright of Liverpool. Sir John Evelyn, 4th Baronet, was the eldest son of this marriage, and was therefore the next heir to the baronetcy, and would have been heir to Wotton if it had been entailed.

He was born at Totnes, Devonshire, in 1757, and was lieutenant in the Portsmouth Division of the Royal Marines. By an inquisition taken on July 28, 1795, he was declared to be insane from May 1794. It was owing to the insanity in this branch of the family that the Wotton and Deptford estates were not left to him or his brother or any of his sisters. It was after he had been guilty of causing the death of a post-boy, whom he shot for no known reason, that he was put under restraint.

He died, unmarried, at the age of seventy-five, at Bexhill, Sussex, May 14, 1833, and was buried in Bexhill church. There is a brass to his memory in Bexhill church, placed there by William John Evelyn of Wotton in 1878.

CHAPTER VIII

SIR HUGH EVELYN, 5TH BART.

SIR HUGH EVELYN, 5th Baronet, who succeeded his brother as 5th Baronet in 1833, was born at Totnes, Devonshire, January 31, 1769. He was the fourth son and youngest child of Charles Evelyn's family of nine children. Through the influence of Sir Frederick Evelyn he obtained a commission in the Bengal Navy, but in later life his mind became unsound.

On November 12, 1836, Sir Hugh married Mary, daughter of John Kennedy, and relict of James Hathaway of London, merchant, in the church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, Middlesex. She was born in 1800, at Hoxton, Middlesex.

She died, May 5, 1883, and was buried at Nunhead cemetery. He was said to have married firstly, in 1831, Mrs. Henrietta Harris, widow of an officer. She died in 1836 and was buried at North Repps, Norfolk. The second wife was living in 1882 at Eagle House, Forest Hill, S.E., and died there on Saturday, May 5, 1883.

The following extract is taken from a printed pamphlet containing an account of the *Last Male Descendants of John Evelyn* from a MS. account written by William Bray in 1831:—

“ Sir Frederick took the youngest son Hugh to Wotton, and sent him to a very good school at Guildford. He very soon gave symptoms of what was likely to be his future conduct by running from the school, as he also did from another school where Sir Frederick placed him, and I think from a third school: and his conduct in the house at Wotton and in Sir Frederick's house in London was such that Sir Frederick was forced to forbid him coming to either of those houses. He then, by ceaseless solicitations to his different

relations and connexions, occasionally obtained assistance, but there was no regular place for his subsistence. At length I had orders to give him notice that a dinner would be provided for him every day at a particular house, if he thought fit to call for it.

“ Notwithstanding this conduct in Mr. Hugh, Sir Frederick took every pains possible to place him in some respectable situation, but finding it in vain to attempt anything so long as he remained in London, I was employed to find board and lodging in some remote part of the country, which I accordingly did. It was not far from the borders of Scotland, and he was sent thither. He soon found his way into that country, and with a fluency of language which he possessed, he introduced himself to any meeting of the gentry, whether a hunting or racing party, or on public business, by a declaration that he was the next heir to Sir Frederick Evelyn ; this did not last long, and he came back to London. Sir Frederick then determined to try what he could do with him in the Navy, and prevailed upon his cousin, Captain Meadows, to take him with him as a midshipman in a king’s ship, in which he was going out to take the command on the West India station. Mr. Hugh soon got tired of that, and under pretence of ill-health, desired that he might be returned to England. Captain Meadows had no objection to part with him, and Mr. Hugh took a place as a cabin passenger in a merchantman going to England ; they arrived at Liverpool, and the captain was so engaged by his plausible story, that it is understood he maintained him there some time, and probably furnished money to carry him to London. Sir Frederick, still desirous to do something for him, if possible, offered to procure a cadetship in the East India Company’s army if he would go, which he refused. Sir Frederick then desisted from any further attempt. By his plausible stories he had cunning enough to raise money from annuity and *post-obit* mongers, and had no other visible means of subsistence. He soon gave abundant proof of his mind being in an unsound state.

“ The trustees in General William Evelyn’s will were—Strode, Esquire, a gentleman of large fortune in Herts, and William Mann Godeschale, Esquire, a gentleman living upon

a considerable family estate at Albury, in Surrey, where he took a very active part in all the public business of the county. Mr. Hugh Evelyn had a placard printed and posted up in different parts of the city of Westminster offering a reward for the apprehension of Mr. Strode and Mr. Godeschale on a charge of perjury and forgery. Mr. Strode thought this was too gross a business to be passed over without notice ; he therefore directed an indictment to be preferred against him for this libel. On hearing the cause, the Court sentenced Mr. Hugh Evelyn to pay a fine, the amount of which I forget, and that he should be imprisoned till that fine was paid, and till he had given proper security for his future behaviour. The amount of the fine he had no means of raising, nor could he find security for good behaviour ; he was in consequence committed to the King's Bench prison, within the walls whereof he remained for some years, during which time Sir Frederick Evelyn, finding it wholly useless to send any money to him in person, employed me to send a weekly allowance to the hands of one of the officers of the prison, to furnish him with some degree of provision for his subsistence, besides which they and other relations often sent him clothes, which very soon found their way to the pawnbrokers. In this miserable situation he remained for some years ; but it is very extraordinary that in this situation the widow of an officer who had half-pay, by some means, became acquainted with him, giving him much assistance, and much good but useless advice.

“ In —, Mr. Strode died, having survived Mr. Godeschale, when Mr. Hugh Evelyn applied to be discharged and obtained his discharge. The gentlewoman above mentioned absolutely married him, and I believe is now (1831) living. She had household furniture of her own, which they carried to a house which they took in Great Bookham, near Leatherhead, where they lived for some time ; and it was not long before he contracted debts, and their goods were seized by creditors.

“ Lady Evelyn gave him occasional assistance, and by her will left two guineas per week charged upon the Surrey estate, except the mansion house, to be paid to his own hands

only, well knowing that it would have been useless to have given him the estate, or more, if he had the power of selling it ; this has been paid to him ever since ; a variety of instances might be produced to prove his having been long in an unsound state of mind.

“ In —, he filed a bill against his unfortunate sister Mrs. Griffith and William Bray, mixing them up with several other defendants with whom neither of them had any connexion whatever. To this bill they demurred, and got it dismissed with costs, which were taxed at thirty pounds, for non-payment of which he stood committed for Contempt of the Court and remains in custody ; but he has found means to obtain the rule of the Court in Saint George’s Fields, where he now resides, having the annuity which Lady Evelyn left him as above mentioned.”

William John Evelyn, in a note appended to the above narration, says :

“ Hugh Evelyn succeeded to the title as 5th Baronet, on the death of his brother Sir John, May 14, 1833. He died at Sydenham, August 28, 1848, without issue, and so the baronetcy became extinct. On his death, his widow wrote to inform me of the event, and to request that he might be buried at Wotton. I replied by granting this request, and volunteered also to pay the expenses of the funeral. Accordingly Sir Hugh’s remains were interred, by my permission, in the Family Vault at Wotton, September 9, 1848. From that time down to the present year, 1879, his widow received from me a small annuity. He was twice married, but left no issue, male or female. His will, dated June 13, 1838, and re-attested August 4, 1845, was proved by his widow as sole executrix, June 28, 1878, on an affidavit that her object in obtaining probate was to claim property at Deptford. Sir Hugh was the last direct descendant in the male line of the celebrated John Evelyn.”

PEDIGREE OF THE WOTTON BRANCH OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

RICHARD EVELYN, = ELEANOR STANDSFIELD.
son of George Evelyn of
Long Ditton, *b.* 1579,
d. 1646.

GEORGE,
b. 1617,
d. 1699,
m. (1)
M a r y
Caldwell;
(2) Lady
Cotton.
Left no
male de-
scendants.

JOHN (author = MARY BROWNE.
of *Sylva*), *b.*
1620, *d.* 1705-
1706.

RICHARD, of
Woodcote,
m. Elizabeth
M y n n e.
Left no male
descendants.

ELIZABETH,
m. Edward
Darcy.

JANE,
m.
William
Glan-
ville.

JOHN,
b. 1654,
d. 1698-99.

= MARTHA SPENCER,
d. 1726.

Sir JOHN EVELYN = ANNE BOSCAWEN,
Baronet, *b.* 1682, *d.* 1752.
1763.

Sir JOHN EVELYN = MARY BOSCAWEN,
2nd Baronet, *b.* 1706, *d.* 1767. *d.* 1749.

CHARLES EVELYN,
m. Susannah Prideaux.

Sir FREDERICK EVELYN = MARY TURTON,
3rd Baronet, *b.* 1733, *d.* 1812. *d.* 1817.

CHARLES EVELYN,
m. Philippa Wright.

Sir JOHN EVELYN,
4th Baronet, *b.*
1757, *d.* 1833. Died
unmarried.

Sir HUGH EVELYN,
5th and last Baronet,
b. 1769, *d.* 1848.
Left no descendants.

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYN FAMILY, SHOWING THE WOTTON AND THE GODSTONE BRANCH

AVELYN or EVELYN of Evelyn, near Tower Castle, in the Hundred of
South Bradford, Shropshire, 1410.

AVELYN or EVELYN of Harrow-on-the-Hill, Co. Middlesex, 1440.

WILLIAM AVELYN or EVELYN of Harrow-on-the-Hill, *d.* 1476.

ROGER EVELYN of Stanmore, = ALICE AYLAND.
Middlesex, *d.* 1508.

JOHN EVELYN of Kingston, = Daughter and heiress
Surrey, *d.* 1558. of David Vincent.

GEORGE EVELYN of Kingston, = ROSE WILLIAMS.
Long Ditton and Wotton, *d.*
1603.

JOHN EVELYN of Kingston, 1554-
1627, *m.* Elizabeth Stevens.

Sir JOHN, Knight, of Godstone,
m. Thomasine Heynes, *d.* 1664.

GEORGE of Nutfield, *m.* Frances
Bromhall, *d.* 1699.

RICHARD of Dublin, *m.* Jane Mead,
d. 1751.

WILLIAM, Dean of Emley, Ireland,
m. Margaret Chamberlain, *d.* 1776.

JOHN of Wotton, 1743-1827, *m.*
Anne Shee.

GEORGE EVELYN, *m.* Mary Jane
Massy-Dawson, *d.* 1829.

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, 1822-1908,
m. Frances Harriet Chichester.

JOHN HARCOURT CHICHESTER
EVELYN, *b.* 1876, *m.* Frances Edith
Ives.

CECIL JOHN ALVIN EVELYN, *b.*
1904.

RICHARD of Wotton, *m.*
Eleanor Standsfield, *d.* 1640.

JOHN EVELYN (SYLVA), *m.*
Mary Browne, *d.* 1706.

JOHN EVELYN, *m.* Martha
Spencer, *d.* 1699.

Sir JOHN EVELYN of Wotton,
Baronet, *m.* Anne Boscawen,
d. 1763.

Sir JOHN, 2nd Baronet, *m.*
Mary Boscawen, *d.* 1767.

Sir FREDERICK, 3rd Baronet
of Wotton, *m.* Mary Turton,
d. 1813.

PART III

THE GODSTONE BRANCH OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

I HAVE now reached the third part of this history which treats of the Godstone branch of the Evelyn family to which the present owner of Wotton belongs. It is necessary to recall to mind George Evelyn of Long Ditton, Kingston, Godstone, and Wotton, the common ancestor of the two branches of Godstone and Wotton and the original purchaser of Wotton, who died in 1603. It will be remembered that by his two wives, Rose Williams and Joan Stint, he had four sons who survived, Thomas, John, Robert, and Richard, between whom he divided his estates. Thomas, John, and Robert were the children of the first wife, and Richard of the second wife. The second son, John, was the ancestor of the Godstone branch of the family which afterwards went over to Ireland and which was the elder line of the two, and Richard, the youngest son, was the ancestor of John Evelyn's branch of the family.

CHAPTER I

JOHN EVELYN

OF KINGSTON, GODSTONE, WEST DEAN, AND EVERLEY

JOHN EVELYN of Kingston and Godstone in Surrey, and of West Dean and Everley in Wiltshire, was born in the year 1554 (reign of Elizabeth).

On the death of his father, in May 1603, the estates were divided between him and his three brothers. While Thomas inherited Long Ditton—Robert, Godstone—and Richard, Wotton—John, the second son, came in for Kingston.

On Robert's emigrating to Virginia in 1610 he sold Godstone to his brother John.

His father had made a considerable amount of money in the manufacture of gunpowder of which he had a monopoly which had been given to him by Queen Elizabeth about the year 1565, and John was also concerned with him in its manufacture. John and Robert became partners in the powder patent, and John presented a petition in 1627 to the Privy Council, in which he asked them to restrain all other powder-makers, and added ¹ "that no such liberty having been given for above sixty years to any but the petitioners and his ancestors." Contracts were granted to the Evelyns for periods of from three to ten or twelve years, and were renewed from time to time till the death of Charles I.

Robert does not appear to have profited by its manufacture, for he complained that he had had "in-supportable losses . . . and dangers by it, almost to the whole overthrowe of his estate." Owing to this he determined to

¹ See *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

try and retrieve his fortunes by embarking in 1610 for the new colony of Virginia, and, before going, he sold his Godstone estate to his brother John.

John married, at the age of twenty-six, Elizabeth Stevens, only daughter and heiress of William Stevens of Kingston-on-Thames. She was twenty-one at the time, having been born in 1559. The wedding took place at Kingston-on-Thames, June 10, 1580. They had a family of eleven children.

On John's marriage his father settled to leave him certain lands in Kingston-on-Thames.¹

In June 1589 John Evelyn had a lawsuit against one Thomas Pygotte, a grocer of London.² According to John Evelyn's complaint, dated June 6, 1589, to Sir Christopher Hatton, Knight of the Garter and Lord Chancellor of England, the former had, in the previous month of September, borrowed from Thomas Pygotte the sum of £50, which was to be repaid within a month. At the end of the month Robert Evelyn, brother of John, sold to Thomas Pygotte, at different times, twelve barrels of gunpowder, each barrel containing 100 pounds of powder. Thomas Pygotte agreed to pay to Robert Evelyn for six of the barrels at the rate of 10d. a pound, amounting to £25, and for the other six barrels, at the rate of 9d. the pound, amounting to the sum of £22 10s., so that he owed to Robert Evelyn altogether £47 10s. The latter, knowing that it was about the time that his brother had agreed to pay to Thomas Pygotte the £50 that he had borrowed from him, suggested to the latter that he should keep the money which he owed him for the gunpowder, amounting to £47 10s., towards the payment of the £50, and this was agreed to by Thomas Pygotte. On John Evelyn being informed of this arrangement by his brother, he offered to pay to Thomas Pygotte the sum of £2 10s. more, to make up the full sum of £50. Thomas Pygotte refused to accept this sum, intending to take action against John Evelyn for the whole £50, and yet refused to pay the sums for the gunpowder to Robert Evelyn.

In July 1590 John Evelyn was made one of the six

¹ See Close Roll, 20 Eliz., part 10.

² See Chan. Pro., Eliz., E.e.3, No. 5.

clerks of the Court of Chancery, as the following memorandum¹ will show :—

“ Admissio Johannis Evelyn ad officium unius sex Clericonum.

“ Memorandum that this present 15th day of July being in the two and thirtieth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady Queen Elizabeth Henry Walrond one of the Six Clerks of the Chancery came before me Sir Gilbert Gerrard Knight Master of the Rolls and did surrender into my hands his said office of one of the Six Clerks to the intent that I the said Master of the Rolls should grant the said office unto John Evelyn. Whereupon I the said Master of the Rolls have not only received and taken the said Surrender but also have admitted the said (John) Evelyn to that place of one of the Six Clerks and have taken him sworn for the due executing of the said office according to the form of an ancient oath usual to be ministered unto every Six Clerk at the time of his admission in the presence of John Shuckburgh Edward Hubbard and John Rotherun three of the Six Clerks and of Jerome Hawley one of the Clerks of the Petty Bag and others.

“ In witness whereof I the said Sir Gilbert Gerrard have unto these presents subscribed my name the day and year first above written.

“ G. GERRARD.

“ Ivi xo die Julii anno predicto.”

Early in the seventeenth century John Evelyn purchased the manor and advowson of West Dean in Wiltshire and also Everley in the same county, the latter from Sir Ralph Sadler about 1634–35.²

John Evelyn's wife died May 7, 1625, aged sixty-six, and was buried at West Dean. Her husband died two years later, April 17, 1627, at West Dean, aged seventy-three. He was buried at West Dean on May 21. There is a fine monument to him in the Mortuary Chapel at West Dean. It is made of alabaster and marble, and lies against the north wall (towards

¹ See Close Roll, 33 Eliz., part 23.

² See *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

the west end). It was removed to its present position from the eastern part of the north wall of the destroyed chancel. The kneeling figures of a man and his wife are represented under canopies with a prayer-desk between them. Below, on the face of the tomb, are carved the figures of eight daughters and three sons. All garments have been painted black.

CHILDREN OF JOHN EVELYN

Of John Evelyn's eleven children, three were sons and eight were daughters.

GEORGE, the eldest son, was baptized at Kingston, August 20, 1581. He inherited West Dean and Everley at his father's death. He was one of the six Clerks in Chancery. He married Elizabeth, daughter of John Rivers of Kent, and by her had three sons and one daughter. The eldest son, Sir John Evelyn, Knight, was baptized at Kingston, August 20, 1601. He was M.P. for Wilton, 1625-1626; for Ludgershall, 1640-42; and for Totnes, 1655. He was governor of Wallingford, 1646. He was a prominent parliamentary leader, and was proclaimed a traitor by Charles I and afterwards pardoned by Charles II. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Cokes of London. After George's death (which took place at Everley, January 19, 1637), West Dean and Everley went to his son, Sir John Evelyn, who died in 1685, when the estates of West Dean and Everley were inherited by his daughter Elizabeth, Mrs. Pierrepont. She had married Robert Pierrepont, grandson of Robert, 1st Earl of Kingston, and her three sons, Robert, William, and Evelyn, succeeded each other as Earls of Kingston, the last-named being created Duke of Kingston in 1715.

JOHN, the second son (of whom presently) was born October 20, 1591, and was the ancestor of the present owner of Wotton.

JAMES, the third son, was baptized at Kingston, June 7, 1596. He died, unmarried, 1627.

ELIZABETH, eldest daughter, was baptized at Kingston, May 16, 1583. She married Sir Edward Engham of Godneston, Kent, Knight.

FRANCES, second daughter, was baptized at Kingston, October 17, 1585. She married Sir Francis Clarke of Merton Abbey, Surrey, Knight.

ANNE, was baptized at Kingston, June 25, 1587. She married at Kingston, July 11, 1596, John Hartopp, Esq., of Southwark.

JOAN,¹ was baptized at Kingston, May 1, 1589. She married, first, Sir Anthony Benne, Knight, Recorder of London, and, secondly, Sir Eustace Hart of London, Knight. She died, April 22, 1671, aged eighty-three.

SARAH, died an infant. She was buried at Kingston, January 30, 1605.

MARGARET, married John Saunders of Reading, Counsellor-of-Law.

SUSAN, died an infant.

ELIZABETH, eighth daughter, died unmarried, 1623.

¹ There is a monument to her in the chapel adjoining to Fliton church in Bedfordshire with the following inscription :—" Here lyeth the body of Lady Jane Hart wife and relict of Sir Eustace Hart, Knt. She was the daughter of John Evelyn Esq. of Godstone in the Co. of Surrey ; by her former husband, Sir Anthony Benne, Knt., she had issue Arrabella now Countess Dowager of Kent whose pious care and duty raised this as a lasting monument of her affection and of her grief etc. She dyed 22nd April in the year 1671, at the age of 83."

CHAPTER II

SIR JOHN EVELYN OF GODSTONE

SIR JOHN EVELYN¹ of Lee Place, Godstone, the second son of John Evelyn of Kingston, Godstone, West Dean, and Everley, was baptized at Kingston, October 20, 1591.

On November 24, 1618, he was married, at the age of twenty-seven, to Thomasine, the daughter of William Heynes of Chessington, Surrey. She was the co-heir of her brothers, William and Matthew Heynes, who both died under age. Her grandfather was William Heynes, a citizen and merchant tailor of London.

In 1627, the same year that his father died, John Evelyn was elected Member of Parliament for Bletchingly, again in 1628, and in 1640.

Flore or Flower House was transferred² in 1634 to Sir John Evelyn. It was in the parish of Godstone, and had belonged to his eldest brother, George Evelyn of West Dean and Everley, to whom with others it had been conveyed in 1632 by Sir John Rivers, Bart., and his son and heir, in trust to raise portions for his four daughters, one of whom, Elizabeth, George Evelyn married.

He was knighted by Charles I, June 25, 1641.

Lee Place, Godstone, according to Aubrey, was built by Sir John Evelyn.

He was first cousin to his relative, John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*, and the latter mentions him several times in his *Diary*. On April 11, 1649, it is mentioned that the two cousins dined together at Westminster. On July 2 of the same year he is again mentioned in these words :

“ I went from Wotton to Godstone (the residence of Sir

¹ See Chan. Pro. before 1714, Hamilton, Evelyn v. Wharton, 113/20.

² See Brayley's *History of Surrey*.

John Evelyn) where was also Sir John Evelyn of Wilts.¹ when I took leave of both Sir Johns and their ladys. Mem. the prodigious memory of Sir John of Wilts. daughter, since married to Mr. W. Pierrepont, and mother of ye present Earle of Kingston. I returned to Sayes Court this night."

On August 3, 1658, Sir John Evelyn is again spoken of in the *Diary* in these words :

"Went to see Sir John Evelyn at Godstone. The place is excellent, but might be improved by turning some offices of the house and removing the garden. The house being a noble fabric tho' not comparable to what was first built by my Uncle, who was master of all ye powder-mills."

On November 24, 1649, John Evelyn was again the guest of his cousin, Sir John Evelyn, on the celebration of the latter's forty-first birthday.

Sir John Evelyn was godfather to John Evelyn's third son.

Sir John Evelyn died in January 1664, and was buried in the family vault at Godstone on January 18. He was aged seventy-three. His wife survived him twelve years. She was buried at Godstone, January 13, 1676.

Nearly fourteen years after Sir John Evelyn's death, his cousin, John Evelyn, went to see his tomb at Godstone. On October 14, 1677, he writes :

"I went to church at Godstone, and to see old Sir John Evelyn's dormitory, joining to the church, pav'd with marble, where he and his lady lie on a very stately monument at length ; he in armour of white marble."

This monument is still in good preservation. William John Evelyn, Sir John Evelyn's direct descendant, had a model made of it in white marble which is in the Library at Wotton.

This is the last mention of Sir John Evelyn in the *Diary*.

¹ The Sir John Evelyn of Wilts. mentioned here was Sir John Evelyn's nephew, the distinguished Parliamentarian, the son of his elder brother George Evelyn of West Dean and Everley. He was M.P. for Ludgershall, and was proclaimed a traitor by Charles I and pardoned by Charles II. He left all he possessed to his daughter, Mrs. Pierrepont, and disinherited his other surviving daughter, Sarah, Viscountess Castleton.

COPY OF THE WILL OF SIR JOHN EVELYN OF GODSTONE¹

“ In the Name of God Amen. I S^r John Evelyn of Godstone in y^e County of Surrey knight (being in goode health and memory prayed be Allmighty God for y^e same) doe make and ordaine this my last Will and Testamt this twentieth day of Aprill one thousand six hundred sixtie three in manner and forme as followeth. First I comend my Soule into y^e hands of Allmighty God my Creator : and to Jesus Christ my most blessed Saviour and Redeemer : trusting most assuredly to be saved : in and through his meritorious Death and Passion only, and for my Body I would have it buried in the Vault of y^e Chancell of y^e p^rish Church of Godstone w^{ch} I have erected and finished : and for y^e manner I wholie refer it, to y^e discrecon of my Executrix hereafter named desireing her not to make any subligne buisiness about it, but only to invite such together as may come without trouble to them or her, being of y^e neighbourhood adjoyning.

“ Item I give to my Son George Evelyn all my Estate of Land and Tythes in ye County of Surrey whatsoever : lyeing and being in y^e severall p^rshes of Walkhamsted Godstone Tandridge Bletchingly or Catterham w^{ch} were not settled upon my Eldest Son John in Marriage. Excepte William Woods ffarme and Camfelds ffarme, both w^{ch} ffarmes I since sould to my Son John for y^e consideracon of eight hundred Pounds : and y^e entayling of all his Estate in revercon upon his younger Brother, all my other Estate of Land and Tythes I have long since settled upon my younger Son George by Deed executed before Credible witnesses. Item I give to my good Son in law Edward Hayles of Boughton Malherbe in y^e Countie of Kent Esqr ffortie Pounds to buy him mourning for himselfe and his Wife : and Twentie more to my Daughter y^e Lady Lecke to buy her selfe mourning. Item I give to Richard Alexander my Servant Ten Pound in Money : and all my wearing Aparell, if he be in my Service att y^e time of my death : And to all my other servants halfe a yeares Wages more than is due

¹ Archdeaconry of Surrey, 1660-86.

unto them. Item I give to twelve poore people of y^e p^rish of Godstone for ever : y^e s^ume of six Pounds a yeare to be equally distributed amongst them upon y^e first day Twelve Moneth yt shall next follow after my decease, and see upon yt day for ever yearly, ye nominacon of ye said twelve first poore people, to be by my wife ; and after her decease by my Son George, and after his decease ye nominacon when any dye, to be filled up by ye present Vicar and Churchwardens of ye p^rish of Godstone for ever, yt six Pound a yeare to be charged, raysed, and paid out of my ffarme called ye Blew Anchor, now in ye Occupacon of Thomas Davey ; Provided allways yt out of ye Six Pound a yeare given to ye poore aforsaid, it is my true intent and meaning yt ye Chancell and Vault : by me now erected, may be kept for ever in decent and good reparacons, And yt dureing such times of reparacons all paym^t to such poore people to cease but no longer. Item I will yt Ten Pound be given to ye severall p^rishes of Godstone Bletchingly Tandridge Catterham and Woldingham att ye discrecon of my Executrix, as equally as may be, haveing respect to ye greatnes of ye poore in every p^rish on ye day of my buriall. Lastly I make and ordaine my deare and wellbeloved Wife Thomasin Evelyn my sole and lawfull Executrix of this my last Will and Testam^t desireing her not to sorrow overmuch for me who am I bless God abundantly weaned from ye love of ye things of this Life : by seeing what befell my Sovereigne Lord and Master King Charles, ye best of men, this with other in my owene family : hath made such an impression on my Soule, yt I prayse God I have with patience and comfort waited my change : w^{ch} I know not how neare (when ever) I put my full confidence in my only Saviour and blessed Redeemer Jesus Christ : yt he will sweeten it unto me by ye Comfort of his Holy Spirit, haveing taken away ye sting of it by his most precious blood upon ye Crosse, and though we parte here, we shall one day meete in heaven. And I require all my children to have a tender regard and to beare all Love and Duty to their Mother, who never missed how weake soever her selfe to doe anything with her owne hand for their good, and it is my desire and last request, as their

father yt they would beare all true Love and affection one to another, yt ye blessing of Allmighty God may rest upon them and theirs for ever : and my further Will is that my Son George : out of my reall Estate w^{ch} I have settled upon him, doe pay and discharge all my just Debts, Legacyes and funerall charges : not suffering his Mother to have ye least trouble or disturbance : either in her joynter or p'sonall Estate w^{ch} I have left unto her. And I desire my Son George to follow ye study of ye Law, as he hath often promised me : yt he may be a stay and Comfort to his Mother : and in some measure answer ye educacon given him. In witness whereof I have subscribed my name in every Leafe of this my last Will and Testamt containing three sheets of Paper and have thereunto sett my hand and Seale ye day and yeare above written declaring and publishing ye same.

“JOHN EVELYN.

“In ye p'sence of JOHN GAINSFORD, THOMAS PACKENHAM, RICHARD ALEXANDER.

“*Probatum Fuit humos Testamtun decime sexto die Mensis January Anno Dni (Style Anglia) 1663 : Juramente Duae Thomazinae Evelyn Relictae et Executricis.*”

CHILDREN OF SIR JOHN EVELYN OF GODSTONE, KNIGHT

Sir John Evelyn of Godstone had seven children, of whom four were sons and three daughters.

GEORGE EVELYN, the eldest son, was born, March 26, 1629 ; he was baptized at St. Gregory's, London, April 8, and died, May 29, 1629. He was buried at Godstone.

SIR JOHN EVELYN, Bart., second son, was of Lee Place, Marden Park, and Flore House, all in the parish of Godstone in Surrey. He was born, March 12, 1632–33. He was created a baronet May 29, 1660, by letters patent from the Hague. He was M.P. for Bletchingley in 1660, and High Sheriff of Surrey in 1666. He married, firstly, Mary, daughter of George Farmer, Esq., Prothonotary of Common Pleas.

She died, *s.p.*, in 1663, and was buried at Godstone, February 18, 1663–64. His second wife was Anne,¹ daughter of Sir John Glynne of Henley Park, Surrey, Sergeant at Law. She died in 1691, and was buried at St. Margaret's, Westminster, April 29, 1691.

The following description of Marden Park is from Brayley's *History of Surrey*:—

“Marden Park is situated in a valley at the foot of the chalk hills, distant about one mile and a half north from the town of Godstone. The mansion was destroyed by fire in November, 1879; it was a large and conveniently arranged building. The park is extensive; the house stood upwards of a mile from its entrance. Here Evelyn is said to have written his *Diary*; here, too, the Emperor Louis Napoleon passed some of his years when an exile; and here Macaulay lived for some time.”

The following references to Marden are quotations from Evelyn's *Diary*, 1677:—

“12th October. With Sir Robert Clayton to Marden, an estate he had bought lately of my kinsman, Sir John Evelyn of Godstone, in Surrey, which from a despicable farm-house Sir Robert had erected into a seat with extraordinary expense. It is in such a solitude among hills, as, being not above sixteen miles from London, seems almost incredible, the ways up to it are so winding and intricate. The gardens are large and well-walled and the husbandry part made very convenient and perfectly understood. The barns, the stacks of corn, the stalls for cattle, pigeon-house etc., of most laudable example. Innumerable are the plantations of trees, especially walnuts. The orangery and gardens are very curious. In the house are large and noble rooms. He and his lady (who is very curious in distillery) entertained me three or four days very freely. I earnestly suggested to him the repairing of an old desolate dilapidated church, standing on the hill above the house,² which I left

¹ Faculty Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Marriage Licenses. “To be married at St. Laurence, Old Jewry, in the city of London, or Lincoln's Inn Chapel, Nov. 23, 1664.”

² The church was Woldingham Church. It consisted of one room about

him in good disposition to do, and endow it better ; there not being above four or five houses in the parish besides that of this prodigious rich scrivener. This place is exceedingly sharp in the winter, by reason of the serpentine of the hills : and it wants running water ; but the solitude much pleased me. All the ground is so full of wild thyme, marjoram and other sweet plants, that it cannot be overstocked with bees ; I think he had near forty hives of that industrious insect."

On July 13, 1700, Evelyn again writes in his *Diary* :

"I went to Marden, which was originally a barren warren bought by Sir Robert Clayton, who built there a pretty house, and made such alteration by planting not only an infinite store of the best fruit but so changed the natural situation of the hill, valleys, and solitary mountains about it, that it rather represented some foreign country, which would produce spontaneously pines, firs, cypress, yew, holly and juniper ; they were come to their perfect growth, with walks, mazes, etc., amongst them, and were preserved with the utmost care, so that I who had seen it some years before in its naked and barren condition, was in admiration of it. The land was bought of Sir John Evelyn of Godstone, and was thus improved for pleasure and retirement by the vast charge and industry of this opulent citizen.—He and his lady received us with great civility."

In 1669 Sir John Evelyn brought a lawsuit against his brother, George Evelyn of Nutfield and his mother, Lady Evelyn. In his Bill of Complaint¹ addressed to the "right honorable Anthony Lord Ashley, Chancellor and Under-treasurer of His Majesty's Court of Exchequer, Sir Matthew Hale, Knt., Lord Chief Baron of the same Court and to the rest of the Barons there," he says that his father in his lifetime owned the manors of Godstone, *alias* Walkansted, Flowre Nolread, and other manors in the parishes of Godstone, Oxstead, Bletchingley, Limpsfield, and elsewhere in thirty feet long and twenty-one wide, without any spire, tower, or bell. Sir Robert Clayton did not restore it, and it remained in its dilapidated state till 1890, when it was restored by the owner of Marden Park.

¹ See Exchequer, Bills, and Answers, Charles II, Surrey, No. 134, Michaelmas the 20th year of Charles II, and also Chan. Pro. before 1714, Brydges, Dame Thomasine Evelyn v. Sir John Evelyn, Bart., 478/47.

Surrey, and other counties of over the yearly value of £1400, and the rectory and parsonage of Godstone. About the year 1653 and 1658 the lands mentioned, and in particular certain farms called Burgesses Farm, Bennet's Farm, Goales Farm, Lanes Farm—lands in the occupation of Thomas Smith and others of Earbie—were settled upon Dame Thomazine Evelyn, the petitioner's mother, for her life, and the remainder of the lands were to come to the petitioner, with remainder to George Evelyn, his brother, and a great part of the remaining lands were settled on the petitioner and Mary, his late wife, and should have come to him on his father's death. Mary, the petitioner's wife, died, leaving no children, and his father, about the month of January 1663 while the petitioner was beyond the seas, made his last will and testament. He left to George Evelyn several farms and lands mentioned in the will, and made his wife, Lady Evelyn, executrix, and shortly afterwards died. On his death all the lands except such as were settled on Lady Evelyn and George Evelyn ought to have come to the petitioner, and the jointure lands settled on his mother ought to have come to him after her death. The petitioner being beyond the seas at the time of his father's death and not knowing of it until his return to England, his mother, by the advice and persuasions of "your orator's said brother George Evelyn and some others of his confederates, or else the said George Evelyn singly," immediately after her husband's death, and before the petitioner came back to England, had great quantities of timber trees cut down, to the value of £400, and had them taken away and disposed of, pretending that they had been felled in her husband's lifetime. This was upon the lands which would descend after her death to the petitioner. And taking advantage of the petitioner's absence at the time of his father's death, Lady Evelyn and her son George possessed themselves of the deeds, writings, etc., concerning the said lands and which would show the petitioner's right to them. "And now the said Dame Thomazine, your orator's said mother, by the evil advice of the said George Evelyn, your orator's said brother, as your orator hath this much cause to believe, or by some other evilly affected persons endeavouring to create and

continue in your orator's said mother some ill opinion in your orator doth deny to discover to your orator the said deeds, evidences and writings, or to deliver the same. And although your orator have in an humble and duteous manner applied himself to his said mother, and in a brotherly manner to the said George Evelyn, entreating his said mother and desiring his said brother to shew unto your said orator the said writings, deeds and evidences, and to discover unto your orator such as of right do belong to him, and concern his title to the said manors, lands and premises," the petitioner offering to confirm the said estate for life of his mother settled on her for her jointure, and the right of George Evelyn to the lands settled on him. Yet now the petitioner's mother, "by such ill advice as aforesaid," instead of delivering the writings of the estate, pretends to have a right to more lands and tenements than were settled on her by her husband, and pretends to have the power to cut down timber upon the jointure lands, and has continued to cut down great quantities of trees and to commit great waste. And George Evelyn, having got possession of parts of the lands not devised to him, and being in possession of them before the petitioner's return to England, the petitioner, for want of the deeds, cannot make out his claim to the lands. George Evelyn refuses to give up the deeds, and both of them refuse to say how much timber and of what value has been cut down and disposed of on the jointure lands, immediately after Sir John Evelyn's death and before the return to Godstone of his eldest son, Sir John Evelyn, Bart., and they refuse to give up the writings, deeds, etc., or to make satisfaction for the timber felled and disposed of, or to stay further waste on the land which is to descend to the petitioner "all which leads to your orator's great discontent and disadvantage, and is against the rules of equity and good conscience." Wherefore, owing to the secret cutting down of the trees soon after Sir John Evelyn's death and by reason of his son's long absence before and at the time, the petitioner cannot particularize the said deeds, etc., nor the particulars of the settlements "but the same are well-known unto your orator's said mother and brother." And the petitioner's witnesses, who could prove the truth, and the

boundaries of the petitioner's lands, descended and descendable, and the quantity and nature of the timber felled, and the wastes committed, being either dead or in foreign parts, the petitioner, for want of the said deeds, cannot make out his claim to the lands. He begs that his mother and brother may be summoned to appear before the Court of Exchequer Chamber at Westminster.

In his answer to the Bill of Complaint, George Evelyn says that it is true that his father died about the time stated by his brother, appointing his wife sole executrix, and that his father owned lands in the parishes of Godstone, *alias* Walkhamsted, Bletchingley, Catterham, and Tandridge, together with the rectory of Godstone, and that his father, about the year 1653, settled a great part of the lands upon the complainant, and some other lands to come to the latter after his death, and some to come to the complainant after his mother's death. But as for the said rectory and several other lands mentioned in the settlement, his father reserved them for himself and his heirs, all of which is set forth in the settlement which the defendant says is in the custody of the complainant. Neither has the defendant any lands but what were left to him by his father in his last will. The defendant denies that at the time of his father's sickness or death or at any other time he had any trees cut down on the complainant's land. He also denies that he has committed any waste to his knowledge on any of his brother's land or that he ever advised his mother to do so, neither can he remember that any timber has been cut down from Lady Evelyn's jointure lands since his father's death except such as was cut down by her order, and assigned to some or one of her tenants for repairing their houses, except some timber that was cut down at Shalcross Farm by the special order of the complainant, as the defendant has been informed. The defendant says he has no deeds that show the complainant's title to any lands whatsoever except such as concern his mother's jointure. He utterly denies that he is combining with others to withhold and conceal any writings, or to do any other unlawful act. "Therefore this defendant prays that he may be hence dismissed with his

reasonable costs and charges in this behalf wrongfully sustained."

Lady Evelyn, in her answer to the Bill of Complaint, says that it is true that her late husband had lands in the parishes of Godstone, Bletchingley, Caterham, and Tandridge, but never had any in Oxted or Limsfield. Her husband, about the year 1653, by an indenture between himself, for the first part, George Farmer, one of the Prothonotaries of the Court of Common Pleas at Westminster, and John Evelyn, his eldest son, the complainant, for the second part, and George Evelyn of Wotton, Richard Hatton of Thames Ditton, Thomas Bird of London, Doctor of the Laws, for the third part, agree to make over to his son, Sir John Evelyn, Bart., on his marriage with Mary Farmer, lands in the parishes of Godstone, Bletchingley, Caterham, and Tandridge, including the manors of Mardon, Tillingdowne, and Fore, and other lands to him and his heirs. She denies that she has claimed any other lands than for her jointure, neither has she enjoyed all those lands settled on her for her jointure, but not being able to persuade the complainant to deliver them to her, she has preferred to lose some part of them rather than bring a lawsuit against her son. Soon after the indenture was sealed and the marriage solemnised, by notice of which the complainant was in actual possession of such a great estate, he began to sue his own father for several supposed promises, and also for a legacy of £200 which he pretended was given him when a child by one Pigott, a relation. Sir John Evelyn, Knight, being "unwilling to publish how unnatural a person he had unto his son," was constrained to settle on the complainant some lands out of which he had intended to make provision for his younger children. On or about January 12, 1663, Sir John Evelyn, Knight, died, making her, Lady Evelyn, his sole executrix. "And no sooner were this defendant's husband's funeral over, but she this defendant thought it most expedient to remove from her late husband's mansion house, being thereunto in truth necessitated by reason of the temper of the said complainant before a month was fully ended, the said mansion house being parcel of such of the lands and tenements as were, as this defendant was credibly

informed, to come to the said complainant after the death of his said father, although this defendant knew not whither to retire herself on so short a time, but being so unexpectedly surprised with grief and sorrow for the loss of her said dear husband, and the most undutiful carriage of the said complainant, was urged to remove several of her goods to a house of Sir William Hoskins at Oxted, Knight, which said place being inconvenient for this defendant, she this defendant was inforced to a second remove of the said goods to a house which was hired for her use of Richard Glyd, gent., situate in the parish of Bletchingley aforesaid at a greater distance from the former in which so sudden removals occasioned by the said complainant, if any box or trunk were lost, in which any writings or things were put, this defendant knows not, and in a short time after this this defendant was settled at Bletchingley, but this defendant hoping, by demonstrations of love and affection to win her son the complainant to a better composure, ordered that certain writings specified should be delivered to her son which was done. Soon after this on or about April 4, 1664, the defendant gave to Richard Alexander, the complainant's servant, for the complainant, about sixty Court Rolls or upwards, being all that the defendant could find. And this defendant further saith that shortly after the great and lamentable fire in London, some loose and dissolute persons persuaded him the said complainant, as she this defendant verily believeth, by evil counsel in a threatening way to demand his writings of this defendant to which messenger this defendant answered that she would willingly first speak with her son the now complainant, but in case he would not come, that then if he would send one sufficiently authorized to receive all such writings which she had or could find that concerned him (and which she had formerly voluntarily and freely offered to him) and for the same to give a sufficient discharge she would to such a person so qualified deliver them, which message being accordingly delivered, the said complainant, as this defendant hath credibly heard, utterly refusing to come in person to this defendant, his mother, sent his counsel learned to ask, gather and receive the said writings,

giving him a sufficient authority (as the said counsel affirmed) under his hand and seal before six credible witnesses. And accordingly this defendant . . . did cause to be delivered to the said counsel several deeds, writings, court rolls, and other evidences, which said deeds and evidences are particularly in writing expressed, with a discharge for the same under the hand of the said counsel, no relation being thereunto had, it doth and may more fully appear, which said discharge, together with the title and dates of the said delivered writings and evidences this defendant hath in readiness, and is willing to produce the same if this honourable court shall judge the same to be expedient and shall direct her so to do." She says it was true that the complainant was beyond the seas and returned about the time of his father's death, but, since her husband's death, she has never had any timber cut down on the jointure land except what was necessary to repair her houses, fences, etc., neither has she committed any waste or destruction. She confesses that she retains in her hands the counterpart of the deed whereby her jointure is settled upon her, and the deeds whereby the lands were conveyed to her husband who bought them of several persons. She has no other deeds to her knowledge which concern the complainant. "All which matters and things this defendant is ready to aver maintain and prove as this honorable court shall direct."

Sir John Evelyn, Bart., in reply to this says that the defendant's answers are untrue, and says that he will prove that what he says is true.

Sir John Evelyn died, August 10, 1671, and was buried at Godstone, August 17, 1671. He repudiated his daughter Frances by his second wife (who died about 1681), and he left some of his estates to his mistress, Mary Gittings, and her daughter, Mary Gittings.

After his death his brother George brought an action to try and prove that there had been undue influence on the part of Mary Gittings.¹

The following reference to Sir John Evelyn is from Aubrey's *History of Surrey*, which was published in 1719:—

"It (Godstone) has been now for some time in the Family

¹ See Chan. Pro. before 1714, Collins, *Evelyn v. Gittings*, 198.

and name of Evelyn, and the House built here cost 9000 pounds, and was raised by Sir John Evelyn (whose father was then the only Powder Maker in England) and demolish'd by his Son Sir John, because his younger brother George would not supply him with Money to gratify his vicious Inclinations, he gave 500 pounds per annum to his Mistress, and but 500 pounds to his Daughter and Heir by his Wife, Daughter of Judge Glynne."

RICHARD EVELYN, the third son of Sir John Evelyn of Godstone, Knight, was born April 20, 1633, and died October 20, 1633.

GEORGE EVELYN, the fourth son, of whom presently.

JANE EVELYN, the eldest daughter, was born June 3, 1631. She married at St. Bride's, London, December 21, 1647, Sir William Leach of Squerryes, in the parish of Westerham, Kent, Knight.

THOMASINE EVELYN, the second daughter, was born February 19, 1635. She died, April 1, 1643, and was buried at Godstone.

ELIZABETH EVELYN, the third daughter, was born June 25, 1638. She married at St. Martin-in-the-Fields, London, May 22, 1656, Edward Hales of Boughton Malherb, Kent, and of the parish of St. Martin-in-the-Fields, Esq. Their son, John Hales, was baptized at Godstone, October 10, 1663, died an infant, and was buried at Godstone, November 30, 1663. On May 8, 1666, Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, "Went to visit my cousin, Hales, at a sweetly-watered place at Chilston, near Beckton (Boughton Malherb)."

GEORGE EVELYN OF NUTFIELD

GEORGE EVELYN¹ of Nutfield, younger son of Sir John Evelyn of Godstone, was born December 4, 1641. He was heir to his elder brother, Sir John. He lived at Nutfield in Surrey, in a house then called Ventris House, but which is now called Nutfield Court.² He was three times married.

¹ Chan. Pro. before 1714, Collins, *Evelyn v. Arndel*, 242; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 426/97; *ibid.*, Collins, *Evelyn v. Budgeon*, 218.

² *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

His first wife, whom he married at Chipstead, September 8, 1664, when he was twenty-three years of age, was Mrs. Mary Longley of Coulsden. He had no children by her, and she died nine years after their marriage, and was buried at Godstone, January 16, 1673. His second wife was Margaret,¹ daughter and heiress of William Webb of Throckmorton Street, London. The marriage took place in June 1673, about five months after the death of the first wife. The bride was about twenty years of age, as she was born in 1653. By her he had Edward Evelyn of Felbridge in Sussex, whose branch of the family is now extinct. Lord Liverpool is a descendant of his. George Evelyn's elder brother, Sir John Evelyn, Bart., died in August 1671, and George inherited some of his estates which were entailed. Some of the land, however, was left to a certain Mary Gittings, and, in November 1671, George Evelyn brought an action to prove undue influence, which, however, failed.²

Margaret died in 1683, after ten years of married life.

George Evelyn was M.P. for Bletchingley, 1678–81, and for Gatton, 1696. He was also a Justice of the Peace and Deputy Lieutenant of Surrey.

In August 1684 he married his third wife,³ Frances Bromhall, daughter of Andrew Bromhall, Esq., of Stoke Newington. She was about twenty-two, having been born in 1662.

She had three children—Richard, ancestor of the present owner of Wotton; William, ancestor of the Countess of Rothes; and Frances, who died young.

George Evelyn of Nutfield, like his father, was a personal friend of his cousin, John Evelyn, and the latter mentions him several times in his *Diary*. On March 30, 1694, he says :

“ I went to the Duke of Norfolk to desire him to make Cousin Evelyn of Nutfield one of the Deputy Lieutenants of Surrey and intreat him to dismiss my Brother now unable to serve by reason of age and infirmity. The Duke granted the one, but would not suffer my Brother to resign his commission, desiring he should keepe the honor of it during his

¹ Register of the Vicar General of Canterbury, Marriage Licences.

² Chan. Pro. before 1714, Collins, *Evelyn v. Gittings*, 198.

³ Faculty Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Marriage Licences.



WILLIAM EVELYN OF ST. CLERE (1686-1766)
SON OF GEORGE EVELYN OF NUTFIELD



life, tho' he could not act. He profess'd greate kindnesse to our family."

On August 4, 1694, John Evelyn writes :

"I went to visit my Cousin Geo. Evelyn of Nutfield where I found a family of 10 children, 5 sons and 5 daughters. All Beautifull women grown, and extreemly well fashion'd. All painted in one piece, very well, by Mr. Lutterell, in crayon on copper, and seeming to be as finely painted as the best miniature. They are children of 2 extraordinary beautifull wives. The boys were at school."

In February 1695, John Evelyn mentions the marriage of one of the daughters of George Evelyn to his neighbour Mr. Hussey.

He is mentioned for the fourth and last time in the *Diary* on June 19, 1699, in these words : "My Cousin Geo. Evelyn of Nutfield died suddenly." He was in his fifty-eighth year and was buried at Godstone, June 24, 1699. His wife died in Ireland in 1730, where she had accompanied her son Richard. There is a portrait of George Evelyn of Nutfield at Wotton.

THE WILL OF GEORGE EVELYN OF NUTFIELD

(P.C.C., 20 Dyer)

"I George Evelyn of Nutfield in the County of Surry, Esq., in pursuance of a power to me reserved in and by a settlement lately made by me and my sonne John Evelyn wherein I have liberty to charge six thousand pound upon the Manor of Wolhamstead also Godstone and divers other messuages, lands, tenements and hereditaments, in the said county of Surry, doe by this my will or writing, purporting my last will and testament give, direct, limitt and appoynt unto my two daughters Thomazine Evelyn and Mary Evelyn the sume of fifteene hundred pounds a peece of lawfull English money to be paid unto them respectively at their respective ages of one and twenty yeares or dayes of their respective marriages which shall first happen and in the meantime to pay unto them respectively interest for the same after the rate of five pounds per cent per annum by quarterly pay-

ments in full of their porcons. Item, I doe give, limitt, direct and appoynt the sume of fifteene hundred pounds more to be paid unto my two sonnes Richard Evelyn and William Evelyn at their respective ages of one and twenty yeares, to witt one thousand pounds to Richard and five hundred pounds to William and in the meantime to have interest after the rate of Five Pounds per cent. And I doe revoke all former wills by me made. Item whereas I have surrendred my house and lands thereto belonging which is copyhold to the use of my last will, I doe give the said copyhold, messuages, and lands to my sonne John Evelyn and his heires, provided that he pay five hundred pounds more to my sonne William Evelyn. Item, I give unto my wife all my plate that hath her and my armes upon it and the wrought bedd in the yallow chamber and the furniture in the chamber wherein I and my wife used to lye. Item, I make my sonne John Evelyn my sole executor. Witnesse my hand and seale this nineteenth day of June one thousand six hundred nynety nyne.

“ GEO. EVELYN

“Signed sealed published and declared by the said Geo. Evelyn to be his last will and testament, in the presence of us DAN. COX, JOH. WOODWARD, ROBERT GAY, SAM. WOODCOCK, EDW. HABERFEILD.”

(Will proved February 21, 1700-1, by his son John Evelyn.)

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN OF NUTFIELD

George Evelyn of Nutfield had eleven children, eight by his second wife, Margaret Webb, and three by his third wife, Frances Bromhall. The children by his second wife were as follows :—

JOHN EVELYN of Nutfield, eldest son. Born at Nutfield, October 3, 1677. Baptized at Godstone, October 11, 1677. M.P. for Bletchingley, 1702. Died, unmarried, November 8, 1702; buried at Godstone, November 18, 1702. He is mentioned in John Evelyn's *Diary*:

“1702, Nov. 8. My Kinsman John Evelyn of Nutfield, a young and very hopeful gentleman, and member of Parliament, after having come to Wotton to see me, about 15 days past, went to London and there died of the *small pox*. He left a brother, a commander in the army in Holland, to inherit a faire estate.”

GEORGE EVELYN,¹ second son, of Rooks' Nest in the parish of Godstone, and of Nutfield. Born and baptized at Nutfield, October 26, 1678. M.P. for Bletchingley, 1708–24 (in five Parliaments). Died, 1724; buried at Godstone, October 22, 1724. Married Mary, daughter of Thomas Garth of Morden, Surrey.

EDWARD EVELYN, third son, of Heath Hatch and Felbridge, in parish of Godstone, Surrey. Born, 1681. Baptized at Nutfield, August 18, 1681. Died November 20, 1751; buried at Godstone, November 28, 1751. Married Julia, daughter of James, second Duke of Ormonde.

MARGARET EVELYN, eldest daughter. Born at Nutfield, April 7, 1674. Baptized at Bletchingley, April 16, 1674. Married, February 1695, Peter Hussey, Esq., of Gomshall, Surrey.

John Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, February 1695 :

“Our neighbour Mr. Hussey married a daughter of my cousin Geo. Evelyn of Nutfield.”

THOMASINE EVELYN, second daughter. Born at Nutfield, June 8, 1675. Baptized at Bletchingley same day; was of Hammersmith. Died, unmarried, March 13, 1743; buried at Godstone.

ANNIE EVELYN, third daughter. Born, 1676. Baptized at Nutfield, July 19, 1676.

MARY EVELYN, fourth daughter. Born at Nutfield, November 9, 1679. Baptized at Nutfield same day. Married . . . Chabannes.

FRANCES EVELYN, fifth daughter. Born and died 1683.

The children of George Evelyn of Nutfield by his third wife, Frances Bromhall, were as follows :—

RICHARD EVELYN. Born 1685, of whom presently.

¹ Chan. Pro. 1758–1800, Evelyn v. Garth, 842; Evelyn v. Evelyn, 484.

WILLIAM EVELYN, fifth son. Born at Nutfield, 1686. Baptized at Nutfield, December 4, 1686. Died, October 19, 1766; buried at Godstone. Married, February 12, 1718, Frances, daughter and heir of William Glanville, Esq., and granddaughter of William Glanville and Jane Evelyn, his wife, sister of John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*. She died not long after marriage, July 23, 1719, aged twenty-two, leaving one daughter, Frances, who was born June 9, 1719. The latter married, in 1742, Admiral Hon. Edward Boscawen, second son of Hugh, 1st Viscount Falmouth, Admiral of the Fleet, General of Marines, and Lord of the Admiralty. He received the thanks of the House of Commons, December 6, 1758, for his services in North America. He died at Hatchlands, Surrey, January 10, 1761. His wife died in South Audley Street, London, March 26, 1805, aged eighty-six. They had two sons and two daughters. William Evelyn, on his marriage with Frances Glanville, assumed the name of Glanville, but on the marriage of his daughter to Admiral Boscawen, who carried her estate to that family, he resumed his original name of Evelyn. He was M.P. for Hythe, 1729; and he bought the manor of St. Clere¹ *alias* West Aldham in the parish of Ightham, Kent, and also property in London, viz. Rathbone Place. William Evelyn's second wife was Bridget, daughter of Hugh Raymond of Sealing Hall, Essex, and Langley, Kent, sister and co-heiress of Jones Raymond of Langley aforesaid. She died December 1, 1761, aged fifty-one. She had four children, William, George, Bridget, and Sarah. William, the eldest son, inherited St. Clere. He married Susannah, daughter of Thomas Barrett, Esq., by Susan, his wife, daughter of Sir Thomas Scawen. Their eldest son William having died, owing to a fall from his horse while hunting, the St. Clere and Rathbone Place estates passed to the only surviving daughter, Frances, who married Colonel Alexander Hume. On her death, without issue, March 28, 1837, the estates of St. Clere and Rathbone Place passed to W. J. Evelyn.

FRANCES EVELYN. Baptized at Nutfield, July 7, 1692. She died young. Buried at Godstone, July 8, 1698.

¹ See Appendix V., p. 561.

RICHARD EVELYN OF DUBLIN

RICHARD EVELYN of Dublin, the eldest son of George Evelyn of Nutfield, by his third wife, was born at Nutfield. He was baptized there, August 19, 1685. He had the character of being very idle and dissolute in early life, and he spent his time in extensive travelling. By these means he dissipated his fortune.

His younger brother, William, who had taken his wife's surname of Glanville, went over to Ireland very early in the eighteenth century as a Commissioner of the Revenue, an office that was then considered a very high one. Thither Richard followed him, and was by his interest appointed Collector of Revenue of Naas, near Dublin. This employment, together with the little that remained of his fortune, afforded him the means of maintenance.

Richard was somewhat eccentric and of a lively wit. He was very agreeable, and having travelled a great deal whilst spending his fortune, used to talk jocularly about his many adventures.

On June 22, 1715, he was married at St. Catherine's Church, Dublin, to Jane, daughter of Benjamin Mead, Esq., of Meath Street, Dublin, Proctor of the Bishop's Court. She was the sister of Alderman Thomas Mead, who was Lord Mayor of Dublin in 1758. After Richard's marriage and appointment he settled down into a steady character. His wife only lived five years after the marriage. She was buried at St. Catherine's, Dublin, May 20, 1720.

Richard's second wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Francis Cadden, Esq. She is described as a fine woman. She survived her husband nearly thirty years. She died January 6, 1780, and was buried in Irishtown Churchyard, Dublin. All her children died in early infancy. On a tombstone in Irishtown Churchyard the name is spelt MacCadden.

Richard Evelyn died at Dublin, December 1751, and was buried in the cemetery of Little St. George's at Dublin. He had lived latterly at Celbridge.¹

¹ For much of the information relating to the Evelyns whilst in Ireland I am indebted to a *Memoir* by Daniel Webb Webber, Esq., who was connected

There are two miniatures at Wotton of Richard Evelyn and also a portrait of his first wife, Jane Mead.

WILL OF RICHARD EVELYN OF DUBLIN

DUBLIN WILL, 1752

"I Richard Evelyn of the City of Dublin, Gent. being at this present writing in full and perfect health do make this my last will and Testament in manner and form following, viz. : as to my Body I leave it to be buried at the discretion of my Executrix hereafter named and that no more then ten pound be layd out on my ffuneral Expences, as to my worldly Goods money Houses Lands Hereditaments all and every thing I have any right to I leave and bequeath to my wife Elizabeth Evelyn during her natural life and after her death to my Son William Evelyn expecting and ordering that my Just debts be first payd and discharged and I appoint my sayd wife Elizabeth Evelyn my full and sole Executrix and do hereby make voyd and annull all and every former or other will by me at any time heretofore made and do declare and order this to be and stand as my last will and Testament.

"Will signed, July 29, 1734.

"*Witnesses*—

MARY CHAMBERLAINE.

MICHAEL CHAMBERLAIN.

JOHN TREVIN.

"Will proved January 11, 1752, by Elizabeth Evelyn, the sole Ex'trix."

WILL OF ELIZABETH, WIDOW OF RICHARD EVELYN

PREROGATIVE WILL, DUBLIN

"I Elizabeth Evelyn of City of Dublin, Widow. My body to be privately interred by grand Nephew George Macklin in Irish Town Churchyard.

with the Evelyns through the Chamberlains. The original manuscript is at Wotton in Daniel Webber's handwriting, with other letters and papers relating thereto. The *Memoir* was written in 1836, and in June 1878 it was copied and printed in the form of a booklet with notes by W. J. Evelyn.



JANE MEAD
WIFE OF RICHARD EVELYN OF DUBLIN

“ To my niece Margaret Evelyn £10.
 To my niece Celia Chamberlain £10.
 To my grandson John Evelyn, now in the East Indies,
 To my niece Elinor Mulineux, £10.
 My grand-niece Alice Mulineux,
 My niece Mary Macklin,
 My Grand-niece Elizabeth Crane, and
 Elinor Macklin.
 My Gt. grand-niece Elizabeth Macklin.
 Hugh Henry Mitchell Esq.
 Residue to George Macklin.

Executrix—CELIA CHAMBERLAINE.

(Signed) 16th Oct. 1779.

Witnesses—MARGARET SHEE, MARY SHEE.”

(Apparently this was never proved.)

CHILDREN OF RICHARD EVELYN OF DUBLIN

(BY HIS FIRST WIFE)

WILLIAM EVELYN. Dean of Emly. Born 1718, of whom presently.

GEORGE EVELYN. Died an infant; buried at St. Catherine's, Dublin, March 9, 1720.

? Daughter, married to Colonel Trion of Sligo.

? Daughter, married to . . . Chamberlain.

WILLIAM EVELYN, DEAN OF EMLY

WILLIAM EVELYN, Dean of Emly, Ireland, son of Richard Evelyn and his first wife, Jane Mead, was born at Dublin, in St. Bride's parish, in 1718. He showed extraordinary talents as a boy, and was educated in St. Bride's Latin School, under Dr. Hugo Young, who kept a celebrated school. Owing to his precocious intellect he was sent to College very young, and matriculated at Trinity College, Dublin, July 18, 1730, at which time he was only twelve years old. He distinguished himself at College, but at the usual period for

graduating was thought by the Board of Senior Fellows to be too young to be allowed to take a degree, and was suspended from doing so by a veto which drew from him a very sarcastic little poem severely ridiculing the Senior Fellows who thus opposed him. It had great point and severity and was remembered many years afterwards. Eventually he took his degree of D.D. and M.A. (the last in 1739), but this check was injurious to him, for it broke his habits of study and gave his energies an idle direction. He gave himself up to exercises and games of all sorts, in which he became very proficient but which he practised to excess. He excelled in tennis, rackets, and shooting, and was so good a shot as never almost to be known to miss, imperfectly as fire-arms were then made. He threw finger-stones with such precision and force as to kill birds constantly with them. In whatever he attempted to do he excelled.

In appearance he was rather short, though strongly built and well proportioned ; he had a fine countenance, with full, penetrating dark eyes.

He was very witty, was most agreeable in conversation, and had an excellent temper. He was kindly, affectionate, and very charitable. He played chess and whist extremely well, and when he entered the Church, became an excellent preacher. He had a very fine voice and was an excellent reader, and he had also a wonderful memory.

When he left Trinity College, qualified by his degree, his father put him into the Church, expecting advancement for him through his English connections.

He married, in 1739, Margaret, daughter of Christopher Chamberlain, Esq., of Dublin and of Chamberlainstown, Co. Meath, by Margaret his wife, daughter of Francis Cadden of Dublin. She was the niece of William's stepmother, who was a Miss Cadden. The Chamberlains were a very ancient Irish family. They once owned extensive property in County Meath. The family came to Ireland with Strongbow. It was originally a Norman family. The Chamberlains were Counts of Tancarville, whose chateau still exists on the banks of the Seine in Normandy. They were hereditary Chamberlains to the Dukes of Normandy, and Raoul de

Tancarville fought with William at Hastings.¹ Mr. Tancarville Chamberlain, in a note appended to the *Memoir* of Daniel Webb Webber, says he thinks that the Tancarvilles adopted the name of Chamberlain before going to Ireland. He says that in the Roll of Battle Abbey he finds no Tancarville under that name, but Chamberlain and Chamberlayne. The family is alluded to by Edmund Spenser the Elizabethan poet, in his *View of the State of Ireland*, where he mentions that in the year 1316 "Edward Le Bruce in his invasion of Ireland rooted out the noble families of Audlies, Tuchets, *Chamberlaines*, Maundevilles and the Savages out of Ardes." A considerable tract of the county of Meath is still called Chamberlainstown.

William was curate to the Rev. Sutton Symes, D.D., Dean of Achonry and Rector of Arklow during the years 1743, 1744, 1745, 1746, and 1747, and probably also 1748 and 1749. The Rector was a connection of the family of Mead of Dublin.

All William's children were born at Seabank, Arklow, except his eldest son, William, who was born in Dublin.

In 1750, 1751, and 1752, he was curate of Delgany, the Rector being Sir Philip Hoby, Bart., LL.D.

A family connection existed between Lord Harcourt, the Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, and the Evelyns, Elizabeth Evelyn, granddaughter of John Evelyn (Sylva), having married the Hon. Simon Harcourt, son of Lord Chancellor Harcourt.

William was appointed to his first parish by the Lord-Lieutenant in the year 1752 or 1753. It was the parish of Foxford, and was situated in a distant and then very wild country in the county of Mayo and diocese of Killala, to which see Dr. Robinson, afterwards Primate, was appointed Bishop at the same time. They took possession of their respective preferments at the same time, and travelled down together in a two-wheeled carriage called a noddie, drawn by one horse, in which the driver sat on a small seat like a music stool, with his body placed impartially between the faces of the two travellers. The journey lasted for the better part

¹ See Bulwer Lytton's *Harold, the Last of the Saxon Kings*.

of a week. Mrs. Evelyn and the children went down to her uncle's in the adjoining county of Sligo and joined her husband later in Foxford, when the glebe house, which was thought a tolerably good one, was ready for their reception.

The children consisted at this time of three sons—William, John, and George—their only daughter, Margaret, having died. According to Daniel Webber, William Evelyn was very proud of his sons, and used to say, addressing his wife, “My Mag, if we had a hundred sons we should not have a fool or a coward among them.” Mrs. Evelyn had great strength of mind; she had warm feelings but an excellent temper, and was a splendid wife and mother.

By the interest of William's friends, perhaps the Earl of Dorset, he was appointed one of the Lord-Lieutenant's chaplains. In 1751 he had been appointed Prebendary of Kilmoree, in the diocese of Achonry, Archdeacon of Achonry in 1755, and Prebendary of Ardagh in the diocese of Killala in the same year.

About the year 1760 William paid a visit to his friends in England, and remained some months with them. He stayed with the Boscawens, and on parting, Admiral Boscawen, then First Lord of the Admiralty, assured him that he would not relax his endeavours to serve him until he had placed him on the Episcopal Bench. But, unfortunately, Admiral Boscawen died of a fever shortly afterwards, so this was never fulfilled. Mrs. Boscawen, who was first cousin to William Evelyn, continued to correspond familiarly with him till his death.

Shortly after his return to Ireland, William was removed from Foxford to the living of Portglinone, in the county of Antrim and diocese of Down, from which he shortly after, in 1767, exchanged for the parish of Trim, in the diocese of Meath. Though this living was of inferior value, it had the advantage of being nearer to Dublin, to which he was often called as chaplain to successive Lord-Lieutenants. He was not a negligent, but neither a diligent clergyman.

Lord Harcourt made him Rector of Clonallen, Dean of Emly (April 3, 1774, on the promotion of the Rev. Dr.



MARGARET CHAMBERLAIN (1718-1776)
WIFE OF WILLIAM EVELYN, DEAN OF EMLÝ

Hawkins), and Chancellor of Dromore in 1775, these appointments being in his gift.

It was while acting as private chaplain to Lord Harcourt that he was taken suddenly ill while preaching in the Castle Chapel. It was a paralytic stroke, and resulted in his death in a few days on March 25, 1776. A notice of his death appears in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for 1776. He was buried in the cemetery of Little St. George's, Dublin.

The following extract is from a letter which was written about six months later to Mrs. Evelyn by her son William Glanville Evelyn from New York Island, September 25, 1776 :—

“MY DEAR MADAM,—If you have not received a letter which I wrote to you the beginning of August, by a ship bound to Cork, you will be at a loss to account for my being so long silent. In that letter I requested you would draw upon our agents (Adair and Bullock) in London for £40 sterling, which I have in their hands, and which I have not any immediate occasion for. If you have not already received it, I must beg that you will, and not deny me this mark of your confidence in my disposition to afford you every assistance in my power. I only wish I could supply all your wants with that liberality you have always shown towards me, and in some degree make lighter your weight of affliction, which is almost too heavy for you to bear. What I can do to alleviate it shall never be wanting, and your own piety and virtue will support you under it with fortitude and resignation.”

The following letter was written by Mrs. Evelyn, after the death of her son William in the American War of Independence, to the Hon. Mrs. Leveson Gower :—

“Jan. ye 16th, 1777.

“EVER DEAR MADAM,—The sorrows of my heart are enlarged; I have lost both my incomparable Williams; pardon the epithet; they were so in my eyes. My son's virtues and tenderness for me was healing the wound I so lately recd. by his dear Father's death. His untimely fall tears it open, and I am satisfied if it proves as mortal as

his. Your kind letter, Madam, was concealed from me till Saturday sen'night; then was I told the mournful tale. What can I say in return for your studious care to palliate my grief but to petition the Almighty to guard you that you may never experience the irreparable losses of husband or children or any other to afflict you. I have pay'd dear for King'sbridge victory; I desire not blood for blood, but wish those snakes that have turned on their Sovereign may be tumbled as low as the creeping animals. How many childless mothers, widows or orphans are left wretched by the havoc made in that devouring region, wicked America. Yet in the anguish of my heart I have this consolation, that, Madam, your brother came safe home. 'Tis plain to me my William did not expect to escape, he was so unhappy at Mr. Boscawen being there. Since it was the will of God his poor limbs should be mangled, it was an instance of his goodness to free him from agony. It could be no gratification to a fond Mother to see her beloved son linger in misery. If, as you say, dear Madam, it had pleased God to have recovered his health to a tolerable state, tho' he lost his limb, it would be my duty and pleasure to devote most of my time to watch over him and to take that care off Mrs. Boscawen (who has been better to my children in many respects than was in their mother's power to be), but even that comfort is deny'd me. My fond hopes of my children meeting, and seeing them go hand in hand in love and unanimity (which always subsisted between them) are blasted. I have lost almost my all; my dearest John is so remote from me I have no expectation of seeing him, and can hear of him but seldom, and when he gets an account of his brother's fate I fear it will make him indifferent about returning.

“Why God afflicts his creatures and why our anxiety for our gone friends does not cease when our care and tenderness for them is no longer necessary for them, we cannot comprehend. The ways of God are past finding out and in wisdom he doth it all. Except my own sufferings, I never felt any with greater poignancy than those of your amiable mother. We feel for each other and for ourselves, our cases

are similar ; my recent one has given her too lively a recollection of her own, which adds to my troubles. Dear Madam, your and Mrs. Boscawen's affectionate remembrance of my husband and children, and compassion for me, would raise my drooping spirits were it not that I see yours or hers depressed. Your exemplary mother is truly worthy of imitation, but I have not those powers of mind and pleasing talents (that Mrs. Boscawen is justly admired for) to aid and assist me. I own I am weak in every sense of the word. I am feeble and sore smitten. God is all sufficient to strengthen me, and I trust in his goodness not to lay more on me than I am able to bear. My health, except my cold (which is declining), is wonderful good ; the situation of my mind, dear Madam, you are too sensible of.

"The two worthy Rev^{ds} you mentioned are in the country. Many of my friends cannot yet bear an interview with me. Their absence is made up to me by your endeavours to compose me ; the dictates of a generous heart sensibly expressed is a precious balsam, and mitigates my wound. You are one of my temporal comforters. I pray God reward you and bless you and yours.

"I received the favour of Mrs. Boscawen's most acceptable letter and shall do myself the honour to answer it within a few days ; I hope ye both and your families are well ; ye cannot be better than I wish. While I am in being I shall retain a grateful sense of the infinite number of obligations I am under to both, and that I am, dear Madam, with love and compliments,

"Your most unalterably faithful cousin and servant,
MARG^T EVELYN."

Mrs. Evelyn died December 3, 1787, in the house of her cousin Mrs. Webber, in Dublin, and was buried at Little St. George's, Dublin. No stone has been laid over their graves. William Evelyn died intestate in Bride Street, and on February 25, 1777, administration of his goods was granted to his widow, Margaret Evelyn.

CHILDREN OF WILLIAM EVELYN, DEAN OF EMLY

WILLIAM GLANVILLE EVELYN, the eldest son, was born at Dublin, December 1741, and was baptized in the parish of St. Audoen's, Dublin. He was Captain in the 4th King's Own Regiment and was engaged in the American War of Independence, where he was mortally wounded in a skirmish which took place just before the Battle of White Plains, October 18, 1776. He had been sent at the head of two companies of light infantry to dislodge a party of rebels from some closely enclosed ground, from which they were annoying a column of the English army then taking up a position preparatory to the next day's battle. William was in advance of his company, and after vaulting over a stone wall received three bullet shots; the first grazed his left arm, the second wounded him on the upper part of the thigh, and the third shattered the right leg above the knee. Timely amputation would have saved his life, but he would not consent to it until it was too late, and it was then performed in vain. After lingering for nearly three weeks, he died at New York on November 6, 1776. It is supposed that he was buried in the ground attached to Trinity Church, New York. In Daniel Webber's account of him he is said to have been "a great loss to the service, of ardent spirit and zeal, and talent for his profession, of a lively conversation and wit, of a warm and generous character, particularly well made, about five feet ten inches in height, very active, dark eyes, and slightly marked with the small-pox." General Howe, in a dispatch to Lord George Germaine dated November 20, 1776, writes of him thus: "The latter (Captain Evelyn) is since dead and much regretted as a gallant officer." He was never married, and owing to his death his brother John became head of the family on the death of James Evelyn of Felbridge, Surrey, in 1793 without male issue.¹

¹ For an account of William Glanville Evelyn, with the letters which he wrote from the seat of war, see *The Evelyns in America*, edited and annotated by G. D. Scull.

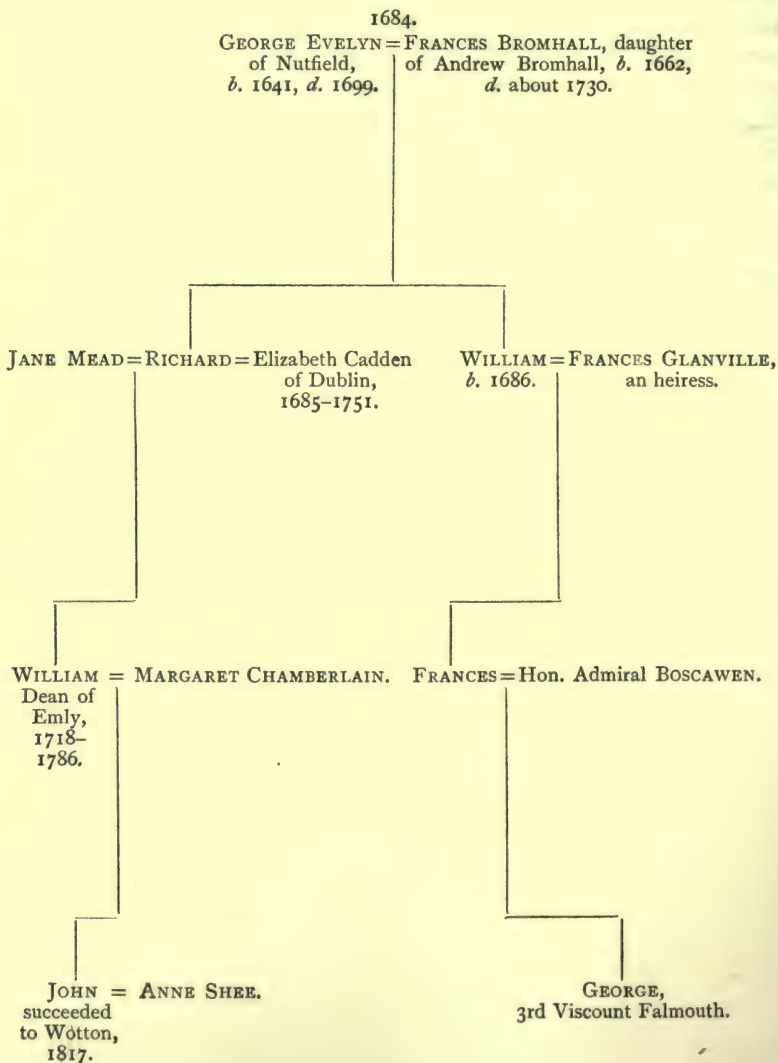


WILLIAM GLANVILLE EVELYN (1741-1776)

JOHN EVELYN, the second son, was born June 1, 1743, of whom presently.

GEORGE EVELYN, the third son, was born at Arklow in 1744. He was early put into the Navy under the care of Admiral Boscawen. Daniel Webber says that "he was in person superior to his brothers, of great strength and as great courage." He died in Portglinone in the parish of Maghbrahaughill, Co. Antrim, 1756, of an internal inflammation caused by carrying or moving a tremendous weight. He was twelve years old when he died.

MARGARET EVELYN, the only daughter, was born in 1740. She died young, before 1752, and was buried at Arklow.

TABLE OF DESCENT TO SHOW THE RELATIONSHIP
OF THE BOSCAWENS

CHAPTER III

JOHN EVELYN

(DEVISEE OF LADY EVELYN)

JOHN EVELYN of Wotton, the second son of William, Dean of Emly and Margaret Chamberlain, was born at Arklow, June 1, 1743, during his father's curacy there.

From 1770 to 1790 he served in the Honourable East India Company's Civil Service, and became a senior merchant of the Company. His relative, George Shee, afterwards Sir George Shee, Bart., of Dunmore, Co. Galway, and Lockleys Hall, Herts, was at this time Governor of Bengal.

The latter was many years in India, and on his return to England was in high office in Ireland, and afterwards Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs under Mr. Wyndham.

John Evelyn was at first employed as Writer-Assistant in the Collector's Office.¹ In 1773 he was Clerk of the Market and Mayor of the town of Calcutta. In 1774 he was Assistant to the Council of Revenue at Dacca, and in 1776, Factor with the same duties. In 1778 he was Superintendent of the Dewannee Adawlat at Dacca. In 1779 he was Junior Merchant and third member of the Calcutta Revenue Committee, and in 1782 he became Senior Merchant and Member of the Calcutta Revenue Committee or Board of Revenue.

As English ladies were scarce, no opportunity of marriage presented itself for John, so George Shee, with a view to bringing about a match, invited his two sisters to visit him at Dacca, where at the time he was a judge. The two girls came out from England in ignorance of the plans which were being made for their future.

One of them became engaged on the voyage out to a Mr. Jackson, whom she subsequently married. He afterwards died, and his widow married a Mr. Molony and lived in Charles Street, Manchester Square, London.

¹ India Office, Bengal Civilians, D-F.

This gave John no choice, so he proposed to, and was accepted by, Anne Shee. She was the seventh and youngest daughter of Anthony Shee of Castlebar, Co. Mayo, by Marjory, daughter of Edmund Burke of Corry, Co. Mayo. The family of Shee claimed descent from ancient kings of Ireland. They were Roman Catholics, and this at first presented an obstacle to the marriage. Anne, however, became a Protestant, and remained so till her husband's death, when she reverted to her former religion. She was only sixteen at the time she married.

As there was no clergyman to be procured, the ceremony of marriage was performed on or about April 14, 1787, by a layman called Matthew Day (chief or collector of the Revenue of Dacca), in Sir George Shee's house at Dacca. This was the custom then in remote parts of India when no clergyman of the Church of England could be procured. On November 24 of the same year, 1787, another ceremony of marriage was performed at Calcutta by a clergyman of the Church of England called Blanchard. The wedding took place in John Evelyn's house in Calcutta. The marriage turned out well in spite of the lack of romance in the circumstances which brought it about.

On January 18, 1790,¹ John Evelyn started from Bengal for England in the *Melville Castle*, East Indiaman. The ship arrived at her destination on May 29, and her arrival is mentioned with a list of the passengers in the *Morning Herald* for June 2 of that year.

He returned to England a rich man. He was accompanied by his wife and two sons, John and William, the elder of whom was about three, and the younger about two, years old.

His intention was to settle in Ireland, and with this object in view he purchased an estate in County Mayo, which he afterwards sold to the Marquis of Sligo. His

¹ Before Anne Shee came out to India, John Evelyn, as was the custom then among Englishmen in India, formed a connection with a native woman. She was a half-caste, and by her he had one son whom he named George Nyleve (the name Evelyn spelt backwards), for whom he subsequently provided and who afterwards came to live in England. By his will John Evelyn left a small property at Sidmouth to this son, who died between 1840 and 1843.



JOHN EVELYN OF WOTTON (1743-1827)

From a miniature

third son, George, was born at Galway in 1791, and in 1797 his only daughter, Frances, was born at Bath.¹ While residing at Bath the family lived in Marlborough Buildings, and in 1795 John Evelyn had a lawsuit to prove that he was the person mentioned in the entail in the will of James Evelyn of Felbridge, who had died in 1793.

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO B. C. WILLIAMS, ESQ.,
6 BEDFORD ROW, LONDON

"BATH, *May 2, 1802.*

"MY DEAR SIR,—I have applied to have my eldest son William admitted a cadet in the Royal Military College, and from General Harcourt's answer I believe with success. It will be necessary to ascertain accurately his age, which can only be done by a copy of the register of his baptism at the India House. He was born in December 1788 and was christened I suppose in January '89, but you have a copy already. I must request you will obtain me a regular authenticated copy of the register of his baptism, precisely as if intended to be exhibited in a Court of Law, and transmit it to me to this place, and if it would not be too troublesome, I should be particularly and extremely obliged by your procuring me the name and proper address of the Secretary of the Supreme Board belonging to this College. I believe they can tell at the War Office, if not General Harcourt certainly can as he transmitted my letter to the Board—he lives in Portland Place.

"I wish to hear how you have settled with Mr. Brydges and what Reynolds has done with Burke. As I do not know how soon William may be called upon to attend the Board to be examined for admittance, I hope you will send me the copy of the register, and if you can, the Secretary's address as soon as you conveniently can.

"I am, my dear Sir,

Your obliged Hble. Servant,

JOHN EVELYN."

¹ Chan. Pro., 1758-1800, 657.

EXTRACT FROM LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO
B. C. WILLIAMS, ESQ., 9 LINCOLN'S INN

" 10 UPPER GEORGE STREET,
February 14, 1817.

"MY DEAR SIR,—I had not time last night to give your note that consideration it deserved, but after again having talked the matter over with Mrs. Evelyn we are decidedly of opinion that it is equitable and proper to dispose of the money in India in the way proposed. We considered that George is a young man who has a profession, and that a moderate addition to his pay will enable him to support his rank in the Army and live with comfort and respectability. Not so our daughter, she has no profession and should she not be fortunate enough to marry must depend entirely upon what she shall receive from her parents, and the utmost we can give her will not be sufficient to support her in the manner we wish without she should marry, which may or may not happen. Added to this consideration, there is another which I would mention only to yourself. The death of the Earl of Rothes, which happened last Tuesday, gives George a fair chance of coming into Mr. Evelyn's estate sooner or later, indeed in the course of nature he may expect it, as he is much younger than Col. or Mrs. Evelyn. Poor Fanny has no such prospect."

Lady Evelyn, widow of Sir Frederick Evelyn of Wotton, died in November 1817, and by her will John Evelyn inherited the Wotton and Deptford estates; James Evelyn of Felbridge, who would otherwise have had more right to succeed to them, having died in 1793, leaving no male descendants. This stroke of fortune was not altogether welcome to John Evelyn, who regarded it rather in the nature of an embarrassment. He was now seventy-four years of age. His two eldest sons were dead, and his only surviving son, George, who was in the 3rd Regiment of Foot Guards, and had fought at Waterloo in 1815, was now twenty-six years old and as yet unmarried. His daughter Frances was aged twenty.

John Evelyn was in character something of an autocrat, and this trait had probably been accentuated by his life in India, where he had been accustomed to ordering people

about and receiving the most implicit obedience. He expected the same compliance in his own family, and proceeded to express a wish to his son George that he should marry a certain Miss Hammond. George, however, had already set his affections elsewhere, and declined to fall in with his father's views, and this had the effect of alienating them, and created a breach between them which was never quite bridged over. When George married Mary Jane Massy-Dawson, in 1821, his father, though not approving, yielded so far as to be present at the wedding. He still, however, felt strongly in the matter and never quite forgave George, who was in consequence very little at Wotton during his father's lifetime.

John Evelyn lived partly at Wotton and partly at 80 Gloucester Place. In the season he was always in London ; the rest of the year he was generally at Wotton, though sometimes at Brighton and other places. He had a house at Sidmouth called Cannister House, which he left to his son George Nyleve.

John Evelyn's brother-in-law, Sir George Shee, introduced him to his first cousin, Sir Martin Archer Shee, the distinguished painter, for the purpose of having his portrait painted. The portrait, which is a fine one, is now at Wotton. John Evelyn is represented seated and in his hand is a snuff-box, the original of which is preserved in the library.

LETTER FROM JOHN EVELYN TO SIR CHARLES ROWLEY, BART.

" LONDON, *June 4*, 1822.

" SIR,—I have the pleasure to inform you that your son Charles has proposed for my daughter, his proposal has met our entire approbation and hope it will be favoured with yours and Lady Rowley's. I will do everything in my power for the young people, but owing to the very depressed state of agriculture my means are not now so ample as they ought to be ; however, I will make the best provision for my daughter in my power, but as this (owing to the great and unlooked-for falling of rents) will not be sufficient to place them in a state of comfort, trust you will supply the deficiency by an adequate

settlement on your son, this I submit to your best consideration. I frankly acknowledge it would be highly gratifying to me to unite my daughter to such an amiable young man, highly gratifying to be allied to a family for every branch of which I have the highest esteem, and would deeply lament should any untoward circumstance occur to throw a cloud over the fair prospect just opening to a young couple in whose happiness I take the most lively interest.

“ I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obed. Hble. Servant,

JOHN EVELYN.”

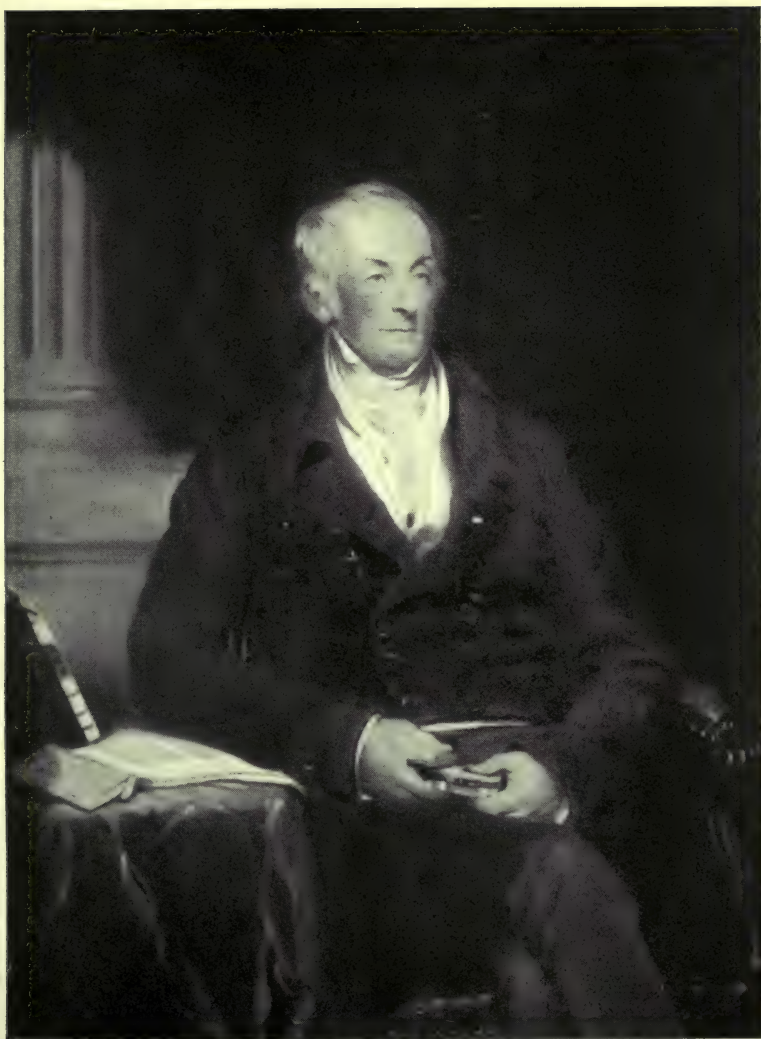
John Evelyn died, at the age of eighty-four, on Tuesday, November 20, 1827. On the morning of that day he and his wife left Wotton in their carriage in order to proceed to Brighton. They had not travelled beyond the boundaries of Wotton parish when John Evelyn died suddenly from a stroke of apoplexy. Thomas Turner, who had been in his service since 1823, was on the dicky of the vehicle when this occurred.

They drove on to Mr. Lee Steere's at Jayes, Ockley, and he sent for the doctor, who found him dead.

John Evelyn was buried at Wotton in the family vault, December 5, 1827. He was fifth cousin to Sir Frederick Evelyn, the last direct descendant of John Evelyn (Sylva) who lived at Wotton.

WILL OF JOHN EVELYN

“ This is the last will and testament of me John Evelyn of Gloucester Place in the County of Middlesex and of Wotton in the County of Surrey Esquire as follows. I give devise and bequeath unto my natural son George Nyleve all that my freehold house called Cannister House situate at Sidmouth in the County of Devon with the lawn land rights members and appurtenances thereto belonging. And all my leasehold land and premises situate at Sidmouth aforesaid and held with the said house. To hold the same unto the said George Nyleve his heirs executors administrators and assigns respectively to and for his and their own absolute use and



JOHN EVELYN OF WOTTON (1743–1827)

From a portrait (1821) by Sir Martin Archer Shee

benefit I give devise and bequeath all those my freehold farms lands and hereditaments situate in the Parish of Horsted Keynes or elsewhere in the County of Sussex commonly called or known by the name of Northwood and all that my copyhold estate called Tott Farm situate within the Manor and Parish of Hurst Perpoint in the said County of Sussex and all these my farms and estates called Horns Lodge and Brooks Farm situate in the Parishes of Tunbridge and Hadleigh or elsewhere in the County of Kent. And also all my real estates situate in the County of Norfolk together with the rights members and appurtenances to the said several hereditaments and premises respectively belonging. And all other my freehold and copyhold lands tenements estates and hereditaments whatsoever and wheresoever situate (not hereinbefore by me devised) unto my dear wife Anne Evelyn to hold the same unto my said dear wife Anne Evelyn her heirs and assigns for ever absolutely for her and their own use and benefit. I give and bequeath all that my leasehold messuage or dwelling house in Gloucester Place aforesaid with the buildings and ground thereto belonging and all my plate books pictures prints china glass linen wines and other liquors household goods furniture and effects and also my carriages and carriage horses unto my said wife to hold the same to my said wife Anne Evelyn her executors administrators and assigns absolutely to and for her and their own use and benefit. All my monies heritable and other bonds mortgages and other securities for money and all my Parliamentary East India Bank and other Stocks and Funds in England and Ireland all my monies in the French funds and all rents arrears of rent debts and sums of money that shall happen to be due and owing to me at the time of my decease and all my farming stock of every description live and dead and implements of husbandry in and about my estate at Wotton aforesaid and all the rest residue and remainder of my personal estate and effects of what nature or kind soever I give and bequeath unto my said dear wife Anne Evelyn to and for her own use and benefit and to be at her own absolute disposal. And lastly I do hereby nominate and appoint my said wife Anne Evelyn sole Executrix

of this my last Will and Testament hereby revoking all Wills at any time by me heretofore made declaring this to be my last Will. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twenty-fifth day of April in the year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and twenty-seven.

“Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Testator John Evelyn, as, and for his last Will and Testament, in the presence of us, who in his presence, at his request, and in the presence of each other, have hereunto subscribed our names as

JOHN EVELYN.

Witnesses—

ROB. WRITMORE,
 PHILIP BURNETT, All of No. 9 New Square,
 JOHN ELAD WALTERS, Lincoln's Inn.”

Anne Evelyn never recovered from the shock of her husband's death. Soon afterwards, in the year 1828, she went to Brighton, where she took a house on the New Steine, and from where she wrote the following letter :—

LETTER FROM ANN EVELYN TO B. C. WILLIAMS, ESQ., 15
 LINCOLN'S INN FIELDS, LONDON. WRITTEN DECEMBER
 17, 1828.

“BRIGHTON, *December* 1828. 12 NEW STEYNE.

“MY DEAR SIR,—I this morning received your kind letter for which you have my best thanks. I am indeed exceedingly grieved to hear that my dear George is so very unwell, he is still a very young man so I trust and hope he will get over this attack in a little time. You mentioned in your letter to me that it would be necessary for me to make some alteration in my will, for my part I do not see any necessity for doing so as I think it is at present very well arranged. However I shall be in town by the 18th of January and we shall talk this business over.

“Believe me very sincerely yours,

ANN EVELYN.

"I have just now recollected that I cannot leave Brighton before the 28th of January."

Ann Evelyn lived at Richmond until her death in 1841. She was also sometimes at No. 80 Gloucester Place, which she retained till her death. She reverted to her former faith of Roman Catholicism.

In the autumn of 1833 Mrs. Evelyn's maid, Mrs. Turner, received the following note from the old lady's daughter-in-law, Mrs. Evelyn :—

" TO MRS. TURNER.

" Have the kindness to give the enclosed to Mrs. Evelyn. She was so kind as to say she could give me a bed when I came to town. It is to request her to do so the week after next at which time I intend taking my son Charles to the dentist.

" I remain,

Yours very truly,

M. J. EVELYN.

" WOTTON, *November 5th*, 1833."

The following letter was written about six years later :—

" TO MRS. TURNER.

" I have some business which will take me to London about the second week in March, and I shall be happy to go to Mrs. Evelyn's if it will not be inconvenient to her to receive me at that time.

" I should prefer sleeping in the back parlour if you could let me have that room instead of the next room to Mrs. Evelyn's which I think had better remain occupied by yourself. Please let me know how Mrs. Evelyn is. I hope she has experienced no bad effects from the cause that created alarm some time ago.

" I remain,

Yours truly,

M. J. EVELYN.

" WOTTON, *February 25th*, 1840."

" TO MRS. TURNER.

" I expect to be in London from Tuesday till Saturday

next, and shall be happy to pay Mrs. Evelyn a visit if you have a room disengaged. I intend to bring my maid but no other servant. Do not expect me after 8 o'clock.

"Yours truly,

M. J. EVELYN.

"WOTTON, *April 26th*, 1840."

"TO MRS. TURNER.

"I shall probably be in London by 1 o'clock on Monday and shall be happy to dine with Mrs. Evelyn and to sleep at 80 if you can, without inconveniency, give accommodation to my maid and myself for the night. May I beg the favour of Turner to do a little commission for me, viz.: to get a certificate of William's birth and baptism. It will be found at Mary-le-bone Church in the register of August 1st 1822. I think the clerk's fee for giving it is 2/6, but whatever it may be I will be much obliged to Turner to pay it.

"I remain,

Yours,

M. J. EVELYN.

"WOTTON, *November 5th*, 1840."

Anne Evelyn died at Richmond, August 27, 1841, and was buried at Wotton.

She devised her Norfolk estates to Sir George Shee, Bart., her nephew; Tott Farm, in the parish of Hurst-pur-point, Sussex, to George Palmer Evelyn, her grandson; Hornes Lodge and Brookes Farm, in the parish of Tunbridge and Hadleigh in Kent, to Charles Francis Evelyn; and Northwood, in the parish of Horsted Keynes in Sussex, to Frederick Massy Evelyn. She also left a legacy of £600 to her daughter-in-law, Mary Jane Evelyn.

The following letter was written after the death of old Mrs. Evelyn:—

"TO MRS. TURNER.

"I return you the snuff-box and miniature which I should not feel comfortable in keeping without the knowledge of Colonel Rowley, for whatever may have been the *intentions* of Mrs. Evelyn, she did not mention them in her will to give me any *legal* right to them. I therefore think you had better

mention to Col. Rowley the wishes she expressed respecting them, and that the snuff-box was given to Mr. Evelyn by my mother, and I think he will not object to let me have them.

“ I remain,

Yours most obediently,

M. J. EVELYN.

“ WOTTON, *Sept. 4th*, 1841.”

The Turners had been for a good number of years in old Mrs. Evelyn's service. Turner had been butler at Wotton during her husband's latter years, and it was there that he had met his future wife, Mary Ann North, who was Mrs. Evelyn's maid.

After the death of old Mrs. Evelyn her daughter-in-law tried to find situations for the Turners, as the following letter from her will show :—

“ To MR. TURNER.

“ I have heard of a family who are in need of a butler and I wish to know if you would like to undertake the situation as I think you would suit the family. They pass a portion of the year on the Continent, and, being a small family, have no footman. When at home they live in the country. Although only a small establishment is kept the situation may be considered a very comfortable one and should you like to undertake it, in your answer mention the wages you would expect, and if not, let me know if you think Mrs. Evelyn's footman would suit, and if he would have no objection to live out of London, and the wages he would expect. I beg you will also let me know if Mrs. Evelyn's late housemaid is in want of a situation, as a lady of my acquaintance is looking out for a person to take care of a house in London in the course of a few weeks until the house is again let and she wishes to engage one as maid of all work who would not object to live at a short distance from London when her services would not be required in the London house. Let me know the housemaid's answer to this & as to the wages she would require.

“ Yours most obediently,

M. J. EVELYN.

“ WOTTON, *Sept. 6th*, 1841.”

CHILDREN OF JOHN EVELYN

John Evelyn and his wife had four children, viz.—

JOHN, born at Calcutta, January 25, 1788, and baptized there February 23, 1788. He only lived till he was five years old. He died at Bath, October 1793, and was buried there October 22.

The following is an extract from a letter from Mrs. Boscawen to her cousin, Mrs. Sayer, daughter of Edward Evelyn of Felbridge, Surrey :—

“BATH,

“Monday, 28th October 1793.

“ . . . We have got Mr. and Mrs. John Evelyn at dinner to-day, the first time they have been out since the death of their eldest child who has long been ill with little hope of recovery ; it has been a great affliction to them. They have two boys left, a William and a George. They have never heard of being named in Mr. Evelyn of Felbridge, his will . . .”¹

WILLIAM, the second son, was born at Calcutta, December 16, 1788. He was educated at the Royal Military College, Marlow, and became an ensign in the 41st Regiment. He was drowned in the wreck of the transport *Two Friends* off Cape Breton, in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, on the night of October 22, 1805, about midnight. The transport was on her voyage from Portsmouth to Quebec. Through his exertions all the soldiers excepting two, and all the passengers, including women and children, were saved. He was unmarried, and was buried in the cemetery of Louisberg, in the island of Cape Breton. He was not quite seventeen at the time of his death.

The following is an extract from a letter written to W. Gilpin, Esq., Army agent, London, by W. Robertson, Assistant-Surgeon in the 41st Regiment, who was one of the survivors of the wreck :—

“MONTREAL, November 13th, 1807.

“At the time the vessel struck everyone on board put what money they had in their pockets, and Mr. E. among the

¹ The original of this letter is in the collection of Mrs. Boscawen's letters, belonging to her descendant the present Viscount Falmouth.

rest. Next day the boat which conveyed some of the men ashore having broke and no officer having left the ship we resolved to try and get ashore on the rope that had been fixed to the boat. I went on first and with great difficulty got safe. Mr. E. followed but had only got a short way from the wreck when he let go his hold and unfortunately was lost. No assistance could be given him owing to the uncommon heavy surf. Another man who followed shared the same melancholy fate, and no more attempted to escape by that conveyance. What boxes of Mr. E.'s floated ashore no-one for some time took any care of. Upon hearing this I got them conveyed to a place of safety, etc. etc.

“ *P.S.*—Mr. E.'s body was found by some people the night after he was lost. Before any of the soldiers discovered him they had taken everything out of his pockets and even took some of his clothes off.”

His nephew, George Palmer Evelyn, while quartered at Halifax, visited the place, and in a letter to his mother, dated September 6, 1845, gives the following narration of the occurrence :—

“ A fisherman said that the ship was lost October 23, 1805, and that a young officer of the name of Evelyn and two of the men were drowned. He was lost while endeavouring to reach the shore by means of a rope passing from it to the ship. He held on for some time, but at last the waves proved too strong for him and washed him away. He was buried with military honours in the old French burial ground about a mile from the place. Of course I went to see the grave, it is only a mound of earth with a stone at each end.”

GEORGE, the third son, was born September 16, 1791, of whom presently.

FRANCES, the only daughter, was born at Bath, April 26, 1797. She was married at Wotton, August 31, 1822, to Colonel, afterwards Sir Charles, Rowley of Hill House, Herts, and afterwards of 3 Hanover Terrace, Regent's Park. He was the eldest son of Admiral Sir Charles Rowley, Bart., K.C.B. She died at Florence, April 22, 1834, and was buried there.

On April 12 she had written the following letter from Paris to her mother, Mrs. Evelyn, who was then at 80 Gloucester Place :—

“ PARIS, *April 12th.*

“ MY DEAREST MOTHER,—I am happy to tell you that we all arrived here quite safe on Wednesday last and that I bore the fatigue of the journey better than I expected. The roads were extremely bad and dangerous, but happily we escaped accident. We were ten days on the journey to Paris as we found it impossible to travel fast. I am certainly better than when I left Richmond altho’ still far from well ; & as this is the first letter I have written for three months I hope you will excuse its being a short one. We shall probably remain here a few days longer and then proceed on our journey to the south. Charles wrote to you on our arrival at Calais which letter he hopes you received. He and the dear children are quite well, and with their best love to you.

“ Believe me,

Your affectionate daughter,

FRANCES ROWLEY.”

Her husband married, secondly, Peroline, only child of M. Marcowitz, but had no children by her. By his first wife he had several children. Charles Evelyn Rowley, the eldest son, born June 30, 1824, was a captain in the Navy. He married, but left no children. Albert Evelyn Rowley, the second son, was killed in the trenches before Sebastopol, October 16, 1854. Another son died young. Louisa Rowley, the eldest daughter, died in 1840, aged fifteen, from a fall from a precipice in Switzerland. Sophia Evelyn Frances Rowley, married, July 15, 1841, Edward Nourse Harvey, Esq., and had two children—Edward Nourse Rowley Harvey, and Frances Evelyn Harvey. The latter married Arthur Heygate, Esq.; and has children.

GEORGE EVELYN

GEORGE EVELYN, third but only surviving son of John Evelyn, was born at Galway, September 16, 1791. At the time there were present in the house Letitia and Elizabeth



GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON (1791-1829)

From a miniature

Shee, sisters of Mrs. Evelyn, and Daniel Webb Webber. The surgeon who attended Mrs. Evelyn was Eneas Swaile of Castlebar, Co. Mayo, who deposed to that effect before a Chancery Commission in 1796.

He was educated at Warminster in Wiltshire, where Dr. Griffiths was headmaster and Mr. Lawes was assistant master. Here he was the school-fellow of Thomas Arnold (afterwards the celebrated headmaster of Rugby School) with whom he formed a friendship but whom he never met after 1806. George was the elder by three years and nine months. On leaving Warminster he was sent to Harrow, where he was pursuing his studies in 1808 and where he probably remained till he entered the army in 1810. He served under the Duke of Wellington in the Peninsular War as Lieutenant and Captain in the first battalion of the 3rd Regiment of Foot Guards. He distinguished himself at the repulse of a sortie at the siege of Bayonne in 1814. The regiment returned to England in July 1814. George was transferred from the first to the second battalion, which he joined in Belgium before Waterloo. During the battle he was engaged in the defence of the Chateau of Hougomont, and was severely wounded in the left arm. The surgeon of the battalion, of the name of Good, dressed his wound after the battle and told Henry Montague, afterwards Lord Rokeby, a brother officer, that he thought it very likely that George would die, as he had refused to have his arm amputated, and his elbow was so severely shattered that he did not think he could recover. After the battle, while George was laid up at Brussels owing to his wound, his father came out to see how he was getting on. George was nearly twenty-four years old at this time. His father wrote the following letter while in Brussels to his wife in England :—

“ 182 RUE ROYALE, BRUXELLES,
6 July 1815.

“ MY DEAR ANN,—On Monday I informed you of my arrival in Bruxelles and of the state in which I found George, which was more favorable than I expected. He continues to improve, no bad symptom has appeared and the surgeon speaks with confidence of his recovery. I deferred writing

to-day until he had dressed the wound that I might give you the latest report. He told me George was going on as well as possible, and that as far as human skill and science could judge, there was no doubt of his recovery. This is very consoling. He is still confined to his bed, but I hope he will be able (to) get up in a few days, and he now begins to sit up in it, with a support to his back. I am glad I came over, for tho' I cannot accelerate his recovery, my being with him is a comfort. I sit with him, chat and talk over the Battle with him, and by these means draw his attention from his present situation. He was with a small detachment sent to defend a farm house called Hougoumont, in front of the left wing of our Army. The detachment consisted of 2 Companies of Light Infantry, about 180 men, and about three hundred Dutch troops. The House was a square with an open space in the Centre and only one Gateway opening into the middle space. The detachment took post in front of the House, the Dutch a little in advance and the Light Infantry in their rear. The French attacked with a much superior force, the Dutch instantly gave way, and fled into the rear, the Light Infantry at the same moment advancing to the front. From this time the fight was sustained by this handful of English alone. The French, confident from their number and elated with their first success, attacked with great impetuosity and pressed so close that the English charged them with the bayonet and drove them back. Three times did this little band of Spartans charge with their bayonets and thrice did the French fly before them, but the slaughter was dreadful; out of 90 men, the complement of George's company, 60 were killed and wounded. At last overpowered by numbers they retreated into the house determined to defend it to the last. They shut the Gate and barricaded it with logs of wood on the inside. It was while he was assisting in doing this that he received his wound, thro' a hole in the old Gate. He sunk upon his knees, felt he was wounded but did not know in what part, untill he saw his arm hanging down. The soldiers took him into the open space, seven or eight of them gathered round him, they said the French were breaking in, and swore they would

defend him while a man of them was left alive. They brought him their Canteens with beer, and did everything possible to cheer and comfort him. They then removed into a room inside the building. Here he was lying with one soldier attending him when Col. Holme rushed in, told him the house was on fire and that they were all getting out of it. By one of those efforts which nature always makes when not deserted by the mind, George rose and with the soldier went out of the room. The smoke in the passage was so thick that he could not see his way, but fortunately made a turn without knowing where it led to, which brought him into the open space. The French had retired, and it is supposed they were called off and had set the house on fire. George walked towards our line, which was then under a very heavy cannonade, passed thro' the intervall, and got with difficulty to the Hospital in the rear. The Surgeon dressed his wound, telling him that his arm must be amputated ; he then set off for Bruxelles, and by accident met a soldier on horseback, who lent him his horse for a certain distance. A report was spread that the French cavalry was advancing. He was obliged to trot which gave him extreme pain. He came up with a buggy of the Prince's and prevailed upon the servant to convey him some part of the way. He then saw a boy on horseback, who agreed to carry him into Bruxelles. He was lifted on, and the boy led the horse to Madame Santi's house. Madame Santi received him as her own son, treated him with great kindness, and is unremitting in her attentions. It fortunately happened that Captain Godwin was in the house, and he immediately sent for the surgeon of his regiment, reckoned the best surgeon in the army, and his intimate friend, who has attended him ever since and saved his arm. He told me that it was as bad a wound as he ever saw in a limb, and that for the first two days he had little hope of saving his arm, and that he owed the preservation of it as much to his own constitution, patience and fortitude, as to his skill. He never uttered a groan nor a complaint. His only regret was that he could not join his regiment. He said (when told that amputation might be necessary) he would prefer dying to the loss of his arm ; but if it was necessary to the preserva-

tion of his life he would submit to it, because he knew his father and mother wished him to live. This is a summary of his misfortune and sufferings. Thank God they are now nearly terminated. It is doubtful whether his arm will ever recover its former strength; but as he observed to me, an arm of any kind looks better than a sleeve of a coat. Madame Santi insisted on my taking a bed in her house. Her husband is returned, a very kind, good-tempered, old man. I feel quite at home, and if I could speak French I should not care how long I remained here. An armistice is concluded between the Provisional Government and Lord Wellington. Louis the XVIIIth is to enter Paris to-day or to-morrow. Buonaparte has retreated with his army beyond the Loire. This is true I believe.

“Yours,

J. EVELYN.

“Send this letter to my good friend Mrs. Price. She has taken a lively interest in poor George’s misfortune.”

Mrs. Price was first cousin once removed to John Evelyn. She was the daughter of William Evelyn of St. Clere and his wife Bridget Raymond, and was a great friend of the Evelyn family.

William John Evelyn used to relate the following anecdote with regard to his father:—While the latter was lying wounded on the ground he found himself surrounded by the enemy who had come up, when a French soldier approached him, and, offering him a glass of water said, “Fortune de guerre, monsieur, fortune de guerre.”

Captain Elrington, who was in George’s regiment, was an intimate friend of his. When George was sufficiently recovered he rejoined his regiment in Paris. He was then suffering frightfully with his arm, which he wore in a sling and was fearfully wasted. Lord Rokeby described him as a distinguished, gallant, plucky officer. After the regiment’s return to England in 1816 it was stationed for a time at the Tower of London. The following incident took place while the regiment was there:—George and a brother officer had an argument which was interrupted by their having to go to

parade. The brother officer wanted to carry it on when parade was over, but was unable to do so as George did not appear at breakfast. The officer went down to the latter's quarters immediately after breakfast, and, entering his room, addressed him by saying, "To resume that discussion." He found George in bed, who said to him, "I have gone to bed, feeling unwell, for the express purpose of avoiding it. Perhaps you will be good enough to leave me."

In August 1816 the second battalion of the regiment was stationed at Windsor. George still suffered pain and inconvenience from his wound. He sometimes carried his arm in a sling, but when he did not it would hang down, so that anyone could see that there was something the matter with it. It became necessary now for him to have an operation to his arm, as he had exfoliation of the bone. It was performed by the surgeon of the battalion, Mr. Good, who told George's friend and brother officer, Sir William Knollys, K.C.B., that George would always suffer inconvenience from his wound as he had not had his arm amputated. Sir William Knollys was present during the operation. The battalion left Windsor in February 1817, and was then stationed in London at St. James's.

About the year 1819 George Evelyn became engaged to Mary Jane Massy-Dawson, eldest daughter of James Hewitt Massy-Dawson of Ballinacourty, otherwise called the Glen, in County Tipperary, Ireland. James Massy-Dawson was Member of Parliament for Clonmel, and grandson of Hugh, 1st Baron Massy. The Massy family is a very old one, and can trace back to Hame de Massy who came over at the Norman Conquest. George was about twenty-eight at this time. His choice of a wife was displeasing to his father, who wished him to marry a Miss Hammond whom he had selected as a desirable daughter-in-law. George's disobedience was never quite forgiven, and in consequence of this he was very little at Wotton during his father's lifetime. George and Mary Jane were cousins, as the maternal grandmothers of both of them belonged to the same family of Burke. Mary Jane's grandmother, Mrs. Dennis, whose maiden name was Mary Burke, bought No. 28 Gloucester

Place, Portman Square, and her granddaughter, who was devoted to her, remembered in after years how she had forbidden her servants to illuminate the house for Waterloo until she knew whether George Evelyn, of whom she had a great opinion, was safe. Mrs. Dennis was also a great friend of George's father. The Massy-Dawsons also lived in Gloucester Place at No. 87, where Mary was born, and where her family went to live about 1800, and she had known the Evelyn family since she was six years old. When she became engaged she was about eighteen. The engagement lasted two years, as there was a delay and dispute about settlements. James Hewitt Massy-Dawson intended to give his daughter £6000, but John Evelyn insisted on nothing less than £10,000. Finally, Mrs. Dennis generously gave the extra £4000.

When George came back to England in 1816, after Waterloo, he had been out of England about five or six years, and had not seen his cousin and future wife since she was quite a child. She would often see him walking in the Park with his arm in a sling. Mary Jane Massy-Dawson belonged to a very large family. Altogether there were twelve brothers and sisters, of whom five were boys and seven girls.

The wedding took place from 87 Gloucester Place on July 12, 1821, at Marylebone Church, London. George was not quite thirty at this time, and the bride was twenty years of age, as she was born, March 22, 1801. She was small and very pretty, with dark hair, a fresh complexion and blue eyes. Shortly after the marriage George and his wife went to Paris and also to Barège, where George took the waters. When they returned from their honeymoon they took up their residence at 28 Gloucester Place. When they were not in London they lived at the Castle, Kingston-on-Thames, where they were the guests of James Hewitt Massy-Dawson. Mrs. Dennis continued to live at 28 Gloucester Place, which belonged to her and continued to be hers as long as she lived.

For a long time before he married George Evelyn carried his arm in a sling, but after his marriage he left off doing so though the left arm was never so strong as the other.



MARY JANE MASSY-DAWSON (1801-1896)
WIFE OF GEORGE EVELYN

George Evelyn was a Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries, a Justice of the Peace for the County of Kent, and a member of the Athenæum and Guards' Clubs. He took a great deal of interest in all that concerned the welfare of Deptford, and assisted his father in the management of the Deptford estates. He was, like his father, a governor and vice-president of the Kent Dispensary. Among the papers left by him is a copy of a correspondence between him and Sir Thomas Blomefield, Bart., in 1827, by which it appears that George Evelyn was requested by his brother magistrates to urge on Sir Thomas the advisability of placing in the commission of the Peace some resident Deptford gentlemen. The following letter from George Evelyn to Michael Faraday, the celebrated chemist and electrician, is preserved among the manuscripts in the British Museum and shows the interest which he took in science and literature. Faraday was then assistant in the laboratory of the Royal Institution of Great Britain, and was conducting a series of experiments in the diffusion of gases. The letter relates to the founding of the Athenæum Club, and is dated from 28 Gloucester Place, Portman Square, in the parish of Marylebone.

"March 3rd, 1824,

"GLOUCESTER PLACE, 28.

"SIR,—In answer to a letter dated February 16th, with which I have been favoured, I take leave to state to you that I shall be most happy to lend my humble aid towards the establishment of a Society founded on the principles of encouraging Science and Literature, and I shall feel much honoured by being constituted one of its members.

"I am, Sir,

Your most obedient,

GEORGE EVELYN.

"Mr. Faraday,
21 Albemarle Street."

George Evelyn left the army in 1825. The following letter was written by him to Lieut.-General Sir Herbert Taylor, Military Secretary :—

" KINGSTON-UPON-THAMES,
August 19, 1825.

" SIR,—I am desirous of availing myself of the permission contained in His Majesty's Regulations dated 25th April ultimo, and to dispose of my half-pay commission at the price established by the Army Regulations in 1821.

" The period of my service is fifteen years. My first commission was dated May 1810. In 1814 I was promoted to the rank of Lieutenant and Captain in the 3rd Regiment of Foot Guards, at the Battle of Waterloo I received, while employed in the defence of the farm of Hougoumont, a severe wound in the arm, by which I have been ever since disabled, and am in the receipt of a pension in consequence.

" Being by this wound rendered incapable of much bodily exertion, I exchanged from the Guards to the half-pay of the 60th Regiment, for the sale of which commission I am now desirous of obtaining the sanction of His Royal Highness the Commander-in-Chief.

" I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your most obedient Servant,

GEORGE EVELYN,

Captain half-pay
60th Regiment."

On November 27, 1827, George's father died, and Wotton, which was entailed, came to him. He and his wife removed there from Gloucester Place with their five boys, the eldest of whom, William, was five years old. George Evelyn was thirty-six at this time. At the time of his father's death George was at Kingston, where he was then residing, and on hearing of the death he came over to Wotton. Turner, his father's butler, who had been with him since 1823, opened the door to him and took him upstairs to the room where his father lay. He went up to the body and knelt down by the side of the bed. He was chief mourner at his father's funeral, and carried his wounded arm in his hand.

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN TO B. C. WILLIAMS, ESQ., OF
9 NEW SQUARE, LINCOLN'S INN

" KINGSTON, *November 27th*, 1827.

" MY DEAR SIR,—I have just received the melancholy account of the death of my father, of which I lose no time in informing you, as one for whom he ever entertained a lively friendship and esteem. He died this morning on his road from Wotton to Brighton. Life was extinct before he could be taken from his carriage. On an event so fearfully sad I dare not hazard a comment. I am this moment about to set out to see my unhappy mother.

" GEORGE EVELYN."

LETTER FROM GEORGE EVELYN TO HIS WIFE

" WOTTON, *November 28th*, 1827.

" MY DEAR JANE,—Upon my arrival here I found my poor mother in an alarming state of illness, brought on by mental anxiety and excitement. I sent to Dorking for medical advice, and the Gentleman who usually attends her, remained with us during the night ; she was bled, but is now somewhat better. It is a shock she never can perfectly recover ; to have my poor dead father in the carriage with her without a house within a mile of the spot where the sad event took place ; I cannot bring my mind to look into the details much less can I describe them, they are so shocking, so deplorable. He died without pain ; in that at least there is comfort. Light and gentle was the summons which terminated his amiable and blameless life. Watch the children during my absence ; let them never be alone in a room with a fire ; let them never be alone in the cold damp garden ; read these instructions to the nurses as coming from me ; to their rigid execution I shall hold them responsible. The hand of death is on our house, and it behoves us to be watchful. Give directions that my bed in London be prepared, it is possible that I may be obliged to go there. I am beset with

business, while my mind, anxious and distrait, can be brought to bear but on one subject. God bless you.

“GEORGE EVELYN.”

The following letter was written by George Evelyn, six days after his father's funeral, which took place on December 5, to the Rev. John Evelyn Boscawen, Rector of Wotton. The latter was the father of Evelyn, 6th Viscount Falmouth :—

TO THE HON. AND REV. J. EVELYN BOSCAWEN

“KINGSTON, *December 11th*, 1827.

“MY DEAR SIR,—I take blame on myself for not having before answered your kind and friendly letter, and can only tender as some palliation of my neglect, the agitation, the concern, and the business which necessarily devolved upon me on the occasion of my father's sudden and melancholy dissolution. I have brought my unhappy mother thus far on her way to London. She is better than could have been hoped considering what she has had to endure, that the friend of her youth and her age is lost to her, that he departed not after the ordinary manner of human dissolution, but was suddenly called away without warning to himself, without notice to his friends. While commencing a journey of pleasure, he was summoned to go that Journey of which the beginning is the grave, the end an appearance before that unknown Being, whose will is deed, who gives and takes away, who with a breath lights up or extinguishes the wavering flame of existence.

“All the family at Wotton and myself regretted the necessity which deprived us of your friendly offices and professional assistance on the day of the funeral. He who we then buried had a regard for you, the descendant of the friend and patron of his youth ; he esteemed you were near to him in blood, and near to him in affection. However, I am fully aware that under the circumstances of the case it could not have been otherwise ; our duties to the living are paramount, they must not yield to our feelings for the dead. After all,

it is but of little import ; he whom you would have followed to honour and lament would have been insensible to your sympathy. Your presence might have added to the splendour of the ceremony ; but what is splendour and pageantry on such occasion ? Heap up plume and trophy if you will, still the mourning hearse covers but corruption ; the worm will mar it all, with its slimy filth defile it all. But this is idle, I ought not thus to have troubled you with my weakness, but my thoughts wandered on ; or rather on one subject only could I fix them, and the pen has mechanically followed their dictates. I was encouraged by the consciousness that you entertained a sincere regard for him whom we have lost. I loved him too ; I fear he suspected otherwise, therein he did me wrong. It trenched upon our mutual happiness that I was misunderstood.

“ With kind remembrances to Mrs. Boscawen,

Believe me, my dear Sir,

Most sincerely yours,

GEORGE EVELYN.”

In 1828 George Evelyn added the east wing to Wotton House. The old one, which was in the Tudor style, had to be pulled down as it was in too dilapidated a state to admit of repair.

After George Evelyn came into possession of Wotton he visited all the tenants. On Shrove Tuesday, 1828, he attended a rent audit and, after the business was settled, the tenants were given a good treat. George Evelyn made an admirable speech, and drank the health of the tenants. He spoke so kindly that the tenants were very much delighted with him.

Mrs. Dennis continued to reside with the Evelyns until her death in 1832.

George Evelyn never altogether recovered from the wound which he had received at Waterloo. For five years after the battle he was under the care of Dr. Abernethy, as several pieces of bone worked their way out of the wound, which was between the shoulder and elbow. His final illness, however, was brought about by a fall from a horse ; he was riding from Wotton to Kingston-on-Thames, where he was

staying with Mr. Pallmer, his wife's uncle, at Norbiton Hall, when his horse fell down and then rolled on him. Although he was injured he persisted in mounting it and continuing his journey. On arrival at Norbiton, however, he complained of faintness, and from that time he was never well. A fatal and painful illness resulted from the accident, which lasted eight months. He was attended by Sir Astley Cooper, the eminent surgeon. He died, February 10, 1829, at the age of thirty-eight, at 28 Gloucester Place, Portman Square, a little more than a year after his residence at Wotton, and thus his career, so full of promise, was brought to an early close. There is a bust and a miniature of him and also of his wife at Wotton, but unfortunately no portrait of him exists.

George Evelyn was buried at Wotton on February 23. He left behind him six boys, the eldest of whom was then only six and a half years old, and the youngest about six weeks.

Amongst the clump of trees by the Institute, known as the RoundABOUTs, is a group of sweet chestnuts planted by George Evelyn in 1829, the year of his death.

LETTER FROM THE REV. THOMAS ARNOLD, D.D. (HEAD-MASTER OF RUGBY SCHOOL) TO MRS. EVELYN.

" RUGBY, *February 22, 1829.*

" MY DEAR MADAM,—I need not, I trust, say how deeply I was shocked and grieved by the intelligence contained in your letter. I was totally ignorant of your most heavy loss, and it was one of the hopes in which I have often fondly indulged, that I might some time or other again meet one who I believe was my earliest friend, and for whom I had never ceased to retain a strong admiration and regard. I heard of him last winter from a common friend who had been indebted to his kindness and whom I have also lost within the last few months, Mr. Lawes, of Marlborough; and since that time I had again lost sight of him, till I received from you the account of his death. He must indeed be an irreparable loss to all his family; for I well remember the extraordinary promise which he gave as a boy, of mingled nobleness and gentleness of heart, as well as very great powers



MARY JANE MASSY-DAWSON (1801-1896)

WIFE OF GEORGE EVELYN OF WOTTON

*From a painting on ivory by Sir William Newton, in the possession of
Mrs. E. Wyndham Bailey*

of understanding. These were visible to me even at an earlier period of his life than you are perhaps aware of, for it was not at Harrow that I knew him, but at Warminster, when we were both very young, and since the year 1806 I have never seen him ; but the impression of his character has remained strongly marked on my memory ever since ; for I never knew so bright a promise in any other boy ; I never knew any spirit at that age so pure and generous, and so free from the ordinary meannesses, coarsenesses, and littlenesses of boyhood. It will give me great pleasure to comply with your wishes with regard to an inscription to his memory, if you will be kind enough to furnish me with some particulars of his life and character in later years, for mine is but a knowledge of his boyhood, and I am sure that his manhood must have been even still better worth knowing. You will, however, I am sure, allow me to state in perfect sincerity, that I feel very ill qualified to write anything of this nature, and that it requires a peculiar talent which I feel myself wholly to want. I should give you, I fear, but a very bad inscription ; but if you really wish me to attempt it, I will do the best I can to express at least my sincere regard and respect for the memory of my earliest friend.

“ Let me thank you sincerely for all the particulars which you have been kind enough to give me in your letter, and

“ I remain, my dear Madam, with sincere respect,

Yours very faithfully,

T. ARNOLD.

“ I ought to ask you what form of inscription you were wishing to be adopted. I would endeavour to comply with your wish in any case, but I think any failure or flatness in verse would be much more observable, and to my own taste the simplest style is the most suitable to such a subject.”

LETTER FROM DOCTOR ARNOLD

“ RUBGY, *March 15th*, 1829.

“ MY DEAR MADAM,—I have been so unusually engaged in various business during the last fortnight that I have not

been able to answer your letter so soon as I could have wished. I have written on the other side of this sheet a few lines which I am afraid show how very incompetent I am to fulfil what I have undertaken. Indeed I am so conscious of it that several years ago when I wished to write something of the same sort for my only brother, I was obliged to content myself with a mere statement of the situations he had filled, and the time and manner of his death. In the present instance I most sincerely hope that you will not scruple to throw what I have written into the fire, if it does not entirely meet your views.

“ May I be allowed to have the pleasure of calling on you when I am next in London, should you continue to reside there ?

“ I remain, My dear Madam,
Yours most faithfully,
T. ARNOLD.”

INSCRIPTION ON TABLET IN WOTTON CHURCH TO THE MEMORY OF GEORGE EVELYN

To the MEMORY of GEORGE EVELYN, Esq.

Only surviving son of JOHN and ANNE EVELYN of Wotton
House, in this Parish.

He entered the Army in 1810, was promoted to the rank of lieutenant and Captain in the 3rd regiment of Foot Guards in 1814. He served in the Peninsular War, and received at Waterloo, while employed in the defence of Hougoumont, a severe wound in the arm, which disabled him from active service. His constitution never fully recovered from the effects of his fatigues and sufferings, and an illness brought on by a fall from his horse terminated his life on the 15th February 1829. His public services were acknowledged by a medal, his private work is commemorated in the following lines from the pen of his early friend the Rev^d Dr. Arnold, head master of Rugby School :

His early years gave a beautiful Promise of Vigour of Understanding, kindness of Heart and Christian Nobleness of Principle ; His Manhood abundantly fulfilled it. Living and Dying in the Faith of Christ, He has left to his Family a humble but lively Hope, That as he was respected and loved by Men, He has been accepted and Forgiven by God.

The day after George Evelyn's death, as his first cousin once removed—Sir Martin Archer Shee—was at breakfast in Cavendish Square, he was told that somebody wished to see him who came to say that George Evelyn had died during the previous night or that morning, and that this person had been sent on behalf of Mrs. Evelyn to ask if Sir Martin would go to her house where he lay to take a drawing of his face with a view of having a portrait executed from it later on. Sir Martin declined to do so, giving as one reason that he was not personally acquainted with George Evelyn, whom he had never seen in life, and therefore had no recollection of his countenance, and that being so he considered it impossible to make a satisfactory picture. Wishing, however, to facilitate the object which Mrs. Evelyn had in view, he suggested that some sculptor should be employed to take a cast of the face, and he recommended for that purpose a sculptor of whom he had a high opinion, who was accordingly applied to and ultimately executed a marble bust from the cast. The bust was afterwards exhibited in the Royal Academy.

George Evelyn's wife, Mary Jane Evelyn, survived her husband many years, the latter part of her life being spent at Campfield, near Leith Hill, Surrey. She died, January 11, 1896, at the age of ninety-five, and retained all her faculties to the last. She was buried in the family vault at Wotton, January 16. There is a portrait of her at Wotton, by Pickersgill, also a miniature and a bust, and a picture of her, by Buck, surrounded by her six boys.

George Evelyn was a smallish man, but strongly made, with wavy, light-brown hair and a refined, manly appearance. He had neat feet and small hands, he wore whiskers, and his mouth showed great decision of character. He was very orderly in his habits, and was a great walker, an early riser, a tennis player, and an expert fencer. He used to go frequently to Angelo's fencing rooms in Regent Street. He had a well-educated, polished mind and was fond of literature

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, the eldest son, born July 27, 1822, of whom presently.

GEORGE PALMER EVELYN, the second son, was born, August 21, 1823, at 28 Gloucester Place ; he was baptized at St. Marylebone, September 25. He went to Cheam School in January 1835, and left in December 1837. He was of Hartley Manor, Dartford, Kent, and of 59 Wimpole Street, Cavendish Square, London, and was a Justice of the Peace for Kent. He was a Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, and was colonel of the third battalion of the East Surrey Regiment (formerly 1st Royal Surrey Militia). He was captain in the first and third battalion of the Rifle Brigade, and served with it in North America and at the Cape of Good Hope. He also served in the Boer War of 1848, as some companies of the Rifle Brigade were employed in it. He was on special service during the Crimean War, and was present at the battles of Alma, Balaklava, and Inkerman, also at the siege of Sebastopol and the defence of Eupatoria. He was decorated with a medal and four clasps for the Crimea, fourth class for the Medjidie, and Turkish medal. He married, in 1855, at the age of thirty-two, Esther Emmeline, second daughter of Lewin Phillips of Frankfort, and granddaughter of the Rev. Philip Phillips of Frankfort, and by her had three sons, George, Charles, and Edward, and a daughter, Mary. George Rowley, the eldest son, was born August 12, 1857. He was second lieutenant in the 3rd Regiment (Buffs) and died during the Zulu War at Fort Ekowe, Zululand, March 30, 1879. Charles William Glanville, the second son, was born March 22, 1860, and died about the year 1890. Edward Shee, the third son, was born, December 30, 1866. Mary Emmeline, the only daughter, married, in 1887, Henry Vardon, Esq., of 40 West Cromwell Road, London, and has one son. George Evelyn died in London, March 18, 1889, aged sixty-five, and was buried in Wotton churchyard, March 22, 1889. His wife died, May 27, 1887, at 59 Wimpole Street, and was buried in Wotton churchyard.

CHARLES FRANCIS, third son of George Evelyn, was born at 28 Gloucester Place, October 2, 1824. He went to Cheam School in January 1834 and left in June 1840. He lived at Horn's Lodge, Tunbridge, Kent. He served in the Navy and was afterwards lieutenant-colonel in the 3rd Royal Surrey

Militia. He married, on July 31, 1880, at the age of fifty-five, Emma Brook, third daughter of the Rev. Charles Paul, Vicar of Wellow, Somersetshire, at St. Mary Abbot's, Kensington. They had one son, Francis Alvin, born January 4, 1882, at Sunning Hill, Ascot, Berkshire, and baptized, February 9, at Sunning Hill. Charles Evelyn died at Park Point, Bessels Green, near Sevenoaks, February 17, 1885, aged sixty, and was buried at Riverhead, Kent, February 21, 1885.

FREDERICK MASSY EVELYN, the fourth son, was born at 28 Gloucester Place, December 14, 1825, and baptized at St. Marylebone, January 19, 1826. He went to Cheam School in January 1835 and left in December 1844. He was Vicar of Oakwood, Surrey, and afterwards lived at Sadler's Hall, Kent. He married, May 21, 1848, at the age of twenty-two, Miss Oretta Cocks of Ipswich, and by her had two sons and a daughter, viz., William Frederick, born September 7, 1857; John Dawson, born March 29, 1862; and Mary Adelaide, born . . .; married, at Eynsford Parish Church, Kent, February, 3, 1882, to the Rev. S. E. Andrews of Leeds, Kent.

Frederick Evelyn died at Margate, August 19, 1877, aged fifty-one, and was buried at Oakwood.

JAMES EVELYN, the fifth son, was born at 28 Gloucester Place, May 8, 1827. He was baptized at Kingston on the following 3rd of June. He went to Cheam School in June 1837 and left in June 1843. His education was continued at Eton. He was lieutenant and captain in the Grenadier Guards. In 1860 he married, at Boulogne-sur-Mer, Anne Antoinetta, daughter of John Davis, Esq., of Richmond, Surrey. By her he had two children, James Boscawen, born July 12, 1868, who died at Pau, March 19, 1869, and was buried at Wotton; and Alberta Sylva, only daughter, married at Wrotham, Kent, January 15, 1885, to Captain Edmund Wyndham Green Bailey, captain in the third battalion Royal West Kent Regiment, eldest son of the Rev. J. Sandford Bailey of Nepicar House, Wrotham, Kent, and has one son. James Evelyn died at Paris, of consumption, November 6, 1874, aged forty-seven, and was buried in Wotton churchyard, November 12, 1874.

EDMUND BOSCAWEN EVELYN, sixth and youngest son,

was born at 28 Gloucester Place, December 29, 1828, and baptized at St. Marylebone, January 23, 1829. At the time of his birth his father was dying. He was called Edmund after a brother officer of his father's who served in the Peninsular War and who died about this time, and Boscawen after the Hon. and Rev. John Boscawen, then Rector of Wotton, who was a distant cousin. He was educated at Cheam School, where he went in January 1838, and left in December 1842, and at Rugby. He afterwards entered Trinity College, Cambridge, where he took his degree of B.A. in 1851 and M.A. in 1854. He entered the Church, and in 1853 became curate at Shepton Beauchamp where he remained till 1855, when he went out to the Crimea (where his brother George was then serving) as chaplain to the forces. In 1856 he returned to England, and on August 20, 1857, he married Lucy Emma, daughter of the Rev. Charles Francis Johnson, Vicar of White Lackington, Somersetshire. In 1857 William Evelyn appointed him to the living at Wotton. In 1875 he resigned the living. St. Clere in Kent at one time belonged to him, as he bought up his brother's shares of the property. He afterwards sold it and resided at Yaldham, near Sevenoaks, Kent, from where he removed to Terrys Lodge, near Wrotham, and finally to Worcester House, near Cirencester, where he died September 18, 1904.

PART IV

CHAPTER I

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN

A MEMOIR

BY WILFRID SCAWEN BLUNT

My earliest recollection of my old friend and country neighbour, William John Evelyn, dates from as far back as the years 1856–1857, when I, being at that time a boy at school and spending my holidays at West Horsley Place with my relative Henry Currie, saw him from time to time. Evelyn was then already Member for West Surrey, having succeeded Henry Currie some years before. He must have been about thirty-five, and, in spite of his public position, was still very shy, and I remember that my old relative, who was one of his principal constituents, used to assume a rather bullying air towards him, an attitude which he bore with patience, though doubtless with inward reservations. As owner of Wotton he had too high a position in the county to resent any such airs of patronage.

With my school days, however, I ceased to frequent West Horsley, and it was not till many years afterwards that I renewed my acquaintance with Evelyn. The occasion of it was the part taken by him in the autumn of 1882 when he, in company with Lord Randolph Churchill, the late Lord Wemyss, the late Mr. Percy Wyndham, and a good many other Tory Members of Parliament, gave me help in the House of Commons in my attempt to obtain a fair trial for Arabi Pasha, who had been made prisoner by Lord Wolseley after the battle of Tel-el-Kebir in Egypt. Evelyn's motive and theirs was the honourable one of resisting the outcry, then so strong in England, for having the prisoners hanged, and

in answer to my appeal for funds to carry on the defence, Evelyn generously subscribed twenty pounds. He considered the honour of the country involved in the issue. The interest thus taken by him in Egyptian affairs was continued by him during the following calamitous years of Mr. Gladstone's administration, which included Gordon's mission to Khartoum and death; and it was in a spirit of strong antagonism to the violences of the Liberal party of that time both abroad and in Ireland that he stood for Deptford at the general election of 1885. His position in the Tory party was in many ways analogous to my own. Though a Conservative in home affairs, he had never accepted the strong Imperialist views of the party introduced by Disraeli, and he neither approved of the aggression on Egypt nor of coercion in Ireland. He was a Nationalist in the old-fashioned sense, and the Irish blood inherited through his mother gave him a special interest in the Irish cause. Thus we fought the elections of 1885 on much the same programme, he at Deptford, I in the adjoining constituency of North Camberwell. The earliest letter I can find of our twenty and more years' correspondence relates to this and to the campaign we were still making in favour of Arabi's being restored to liberty. He writes :

“ *November 19, 1885.* To my great regret I find that the exigences of the severe election contest in which I am engaged will prevent my attending the meeting in behalf of Arabi. Nothing but absolute necessity could keep me away from the meeting, so heartily do I sympathise with you in this movement and so fully do I recognise the great service you have already rendered to our country. The surrender of Arabi, our prisoner of war, was an act of a most dishonourable kind on the part of the late Government. But for you, Arabi would in all probability have been judicially murdered, an indelible stigma attached to the name of England. In any future meeting or movement for the release of Arabi you may command my humble support. To restore this unfortunate man to liberty, would be a graceful act on the part of the present (Lord Salisbury's) ministry.”

A month later, December 16, he writes expressing his

“painful surprise on public grounds,” at my defeat at Camberwell, and inviting me and my wife to Wotton. This letter contained a hint of his sympathy with my Indian views in connection with Lalmohun Ghose’s candidature as a Liberal against him at Deptford. “It is to be regretted,” he says, “that Lalmohun Ghose should have been advised to attack me at Deptford where I had already been five months in the field. If India has her enemies I am not one of them.”

Almost immediately after this Mr. Gladstone issued his “kite” about Ireland, followed shortly after by Jesse Collings’ attempt to raise the English land question; and I find, January 8, 1886, a letter alluding to both these subjects. On the land question he writes, “As a counterpoise to the visionary cow and three acres, why should we not offer to the agricultural labourer some sort of security in his actual holding, his cottage and garden, security from capricious eviction and from capricious raising of his rent? Had the Conservatives offered this or something like this, they would have gained many seats.” And about Ireland, “I go far with you in your views. My seat is due to the Irish vote. If Orange councils prevail in the Cabinet, I dread the result.”

I find two visits to Wotton about this time recorded in my diary thus :

“*December 20, 1885.* This is a fine old house, the property of a fine old gentleman and one who has a heart to understand. There are a number of young ladies in the house and children, a fine family party. I remember William John Evelyn thirty years ago at West Horsley Place, a shy young man much bullied by my old relative Henry Currie, who thought himself the lord and master of this part of Surrey. Evelyn was then already M.P. for Surrey, he has now just been returned for Deptford, where he has a large inherited property and is called ‘the Squire’—a truly honest man such as it does one good to see.”

A second entry says :

“*January 20, 1886.* To Wotton where I find Evelyn very well disposed about Ireland, he says he would like to go there on a political tour with me.” And again :

“*January 31.* At Wotton. We have been talking again of a political tour in Ireland. Evelyn declares nothing shall induce him to vote for coercion.

“*February 16.* Evelyn is in doleful dumps about his position in Parliament, would like me to take over his seat at Deptford.

“*May 14.* Called on Evelyn who is still very unhappy. He would like to support the bill (Mr. Gladstone’s first Home Rule Bill) but dares not do it alone among the Tories, so is going to vote against it. He has not quite the fibre of a fighter.”

These slight entries show Evelyn’s political position pretty clearly. He was essentially a Conservative, by temperament and tradition, but he had the old-fashioned view of national freedom as opposed to Imperialism, and his mind was a logical one which refused to be tricked into any compromise with his principles, while he already considered himself too old either to change his party or to embark on any strong independent line of his own. For this reason the part he played in Parliament in 1886 and 1887 was more or less a passive one; he deeply disapproved Lord Salisbury’s policy, but, as long as strong measures of coercion were deferred in Ireland, he continued to vote with his party. I was myself too much occupied with my Irish campaigning to see him very frequently, though every time we met he recurred to his desire that I should take his place at Deptford as a more avowed Home Ruler than he himself was able to be. At the general election of 1886 he retained his seat; but when the change of policy in Ireland took place in 1887 and Mr. Balfour as Chief Secretary announced and carried his violent coercion bill that summer, Evelyn saw that his position in the House of Commons had become an impossible one, and made up his mind to retire from Parliament. My arrest under the Coercion Act was the occasion of his final decision. Its date was October 23, and the sentence of two months’ imprisonment was pronounced on me under the arbitrary terms of Balfour’s Act a few days later. It was during the interval which elapsed between that and my trial on appeal that Evelyn sent in his letter to his Deptford constituents announcing his

intention to apply for the Chiltern Hundreds as soon as Parliament should meet in February. I was at Wotton at the time of his doing this, and he had obtained my consent, not a very willing one, to stand as Home Rule candidate for Deptford as soon as the seat should be vacant. In the meanwhile and being still in Parliament, he accompanied me to Ireland and was present at my new trial, with his brother Edmund, and on to my prison door in Galway. The Deptford election took place while I was absent in gaol, and it was no fault of Evelyn's if it did not go in my favour; we lost it by less than 200 votes. "We lost Deptford," he writes, March 6, 1888, "but not ingloriously"; and a few days later he insisted upon bearing half the expenses of the election, which came to a little less than a thousand pounds. "The election," he writes, March 28, "was as much my affair as yours, and the verdict of the constituency is a rebuke to me." He was extremely generous in all matters where money was concerned, and he would not be denied. The result, nevertheless, depressed him not a little, and he ceased from that time to take any active part in politics.

Our relations, however, continued as cordial as before, and from time to time he would write to me in regard to public events where our ideas remained closely in common.

On the 18th of November 1892, he writes :

"I fear that Lord Rosebery will wreck the Government by his fearful jingoism; his last speech reported in yesterday's papers is worse than any previous utterance. Evidently he thinks that the country generally is in favour of a forward policy. I have some doubt on the subject, but the Jingoës are loud and demonstrative while the other side of the question is rarely placed properly before the people."

On the 23rd of June 1892 I find his first letter from Northwood House, where he began to take up his occasional residence, so that we had become nearer neighbours than before, and I thus had the advantage of seeing him more frequently. He was a genealogist and took much pleasure in making the discovery that there was a family connection between us through the Glanvilles and Scawens. He also interested

himself much, with me, in the breeding of Arab horses, and became a regular attendant at our Crabbet sales. He was happier in some ways at Northwood, where he lived in quite a small way, the house being little more than a farm house ; also he was politically more at his ease there than at Wotton. "The whole atmosphere at Wotton and its neighbourhood," he says, sending me a copy of a letter he had written to his cottagers there, "is so tainted with the coercionist and jingo miasma that I fear that these poor fellows might be deceived and my name wrongly used (at the elections). As to the tenant farmers on my estate I leave them to their own imaginations ; almost all of them are worshippers of Balfour."

Another interest we had in common was that of chess-playing, at which he was a great proficient. This we indulged in as often as we met. He used to spend most of his evenings in this way, his secretary, Paxton, being his usual opponent, or his brother Edmund. He was, however, a far better player than any of us, and, moreover, a most generous one, scorning to take advantage of our oversights. I had nevertheless invented a chess opening which for a while puzzled him, and I find several allusions to this in his letters as also in my diary. It violated, he assured me, all the received principles of good play ; but I now and again managed by it to win a game of him.

"My second chess defeat," he writes, September 11, 1894, "has led me to entertain a higher opinion of your zigzag pawn opening. Herewith I send you a short work by Bird, giving a brief but clear view of the principal openings."

Bird was the well-known professional chess player, with whom Evelyn had had many contests, being within a little of match form. I am therefore proud of this testimonial.

In the autumn of 1893 his humane feelings were once more roused by the doings of the South Africa Company :

"So the South Africa Company of filibusters have gained a glorious victory. The butcher's bill of slaughtered Matabele is almost sufficient to satisfy the most ardent Jingo. The policy of our Foreign Office seems to me most miserable. There is no reprobation of the atrocious things done in South Africa, but there is great jealousy of the Char-

tered Company's acting without deferring to our Foreign Office. Colonel Goold Adams, in command of the Imperial forces, seems to have followed in the track of the Company's forces, and to have entered Bulawayo on Sunday, the 29th ultimo, the day after its occupation by the Company. Matabeleland is the prize sought for. Whether it shall belong to the Company or the Crown matters little to the unfortunate inhabitants and their king. The transaction is in itself infamous, and I wish that our Foreign Office, inspired by nobler instincts than the traditions of aggressive grab, would save the Crown from being mixed up in this business. . . . You are the only prominent Englishman who has protested against these traditions, and I hope that you will publicly declare your sentiments on the Matabele War. I suppose a public meeting (at Sayes Court Hall ?) would not be advisable. If however you think otherwise, such a meeting could easily be arranged."

And again on the same subject, November 16, 1893 :

"To me the attitude of Sir W. Harcourt is better than that of Gladstone, because it is free from cant. To go in for burgling because others burgle is at any rate a simple and intelligible principle. . . . Gladstone cannot stop ; he must now go on in the career of degradation and dishonour. If Cecil Rhodes is not a sordid cruel vulgar adventurer, if he be simply what Gladstone calls him "a very able man," he must be rewarded as a man who has added a province to the Empire, and has a fair claim to all the honours that a grateful Gladstonian Government can confer on him. . . . So it has come to this that for the benefit of a Vienna Jew, foreign diamond merchants, and other speculators, British and foreign, these horrible massacres should be perpetrated. . . . Would that there were any feasible way of showing publicly that there exists in the country a minority which disapproves of these abominations. . . . The farmers ought to be taught that Jingoism means the enrichment of adventurers and the pauperisation of England. They shout for the Empire and then they cry out about rates and taxes."

In the winter of 1895, Evelyn paid a first visit to Egypt, or rather a second visit, for he had been there forty-seven years

before, and he spent some days with me at my country house of Sheykh Obeyd on his return from the Upper Nile, a visit of which I preserve a very pleasant recollection, Frederick Harrison being also staying in the house, and I find a note from him from Alexandria, written on his way home from the house of his brother-in-law there, Arthur Chichester :

"I shall return to England," he writes, "with a vivid sense of the degrading and irritating system of government established here under the present military occupation of the country."

I find a note in my diary of that year showing that it was at this time that he made up his mind to retire from the management of his property and to make over the Wotton estate to his son :

"Evelyn has asked me to be trustee for a settlement he is making of his property by which he makes over Wotton to his son, as he is tired of having the management of it and also would escape if possible the onerous death dues. I have consented to this though much against my habit and having told him how bad a man of business I am, and likely to be how much abroad."

He returned to Europe by way of Naples in Frederick Harrison's company, and writing from Castellamare and giving his impression of the Nile and its politics, with which latter he continued to be in full sympathy with me, he writes :

"Frederic Harrison and I both wish that you would come forward and take some part in the world of politics. You would I think have a much stronger following than perhaps you suppose. As for me, my day is past, and in the battle of life I acknowledge myself baffled and defeated. Your suggestion of a pleasant and quiet retreat on the banks of Nilus is tempting ; but I would rather have a place at Assuan or thereabouts than in Lower Egypt. Is there land to be had in that neighbourhood ? There I should like to end my days, if it could be arranged, waited on by soft-eyed Nubian girls (if Lord Cromer would not indite me as the possessor of slaves), there to rest and to be buried in some quiet spot under the palm trees, leaving to dear Johnny the burden of the family estate. But this is a dream, and only a dream."

During the summer that followed, I found my friend much troubled at the growing weakness of his mother, to whom he was devotedly attached and of whom, though he was now seventy-three, she being ninety-four, he would speak with all the passionate affection of youth, visiting her, if I remember rightly, nearly every day, while he was at Wotton, at her house a mile or two away. It was a very beautiful trait in his character. She died on 10th of January 1896, and to get away from the scene of his grief he once more paid me a visit in Egypt, soon after his return from which another domestic blow struck him, that of his wife's serious illness and her death in July 1897.

"The blow," he writes to me, "is staggering ; my present plans are uncertain." The autumn of that year he spent in Florence, having taken a villa in the direction of Fiesole, the Villa Pucci, 25 Via Bolognese. "The villa," he writes, "belongs to the Marchese Pucci, and I have taken it for four months. There I propose to rest awhile with my four daughters and their governess ; five English servants from Wotton are in the villa ; the cook and coachman are Italian, John is with me, and I have suggested to him to undertake a journey to Egypt. I shall give him a letter of introduction to General Henderson, who has been my guest at Wotton in happier days, and I feel sure that I may count on you and Lady Anne to allow him to call on you at Sheykh Obeyd. I have urged John to study Arabic during his stay in Egypt and to keep a little diary. I am naturally very anxious about him and his sisters. What I should wish is that, after a short stay at Cairo and seeing the pyramids, etc., he should go up the Nile, as far at least as Thebes. I shall give him a letter to General Henderson, who has stayed at Wotton. . . . He would take as courier an Austrian named Hans von Zwischenberger, who really seems to me rather above the common level of couriers and whom I have found to be strictly honest. Zwischenberger speaks (besides European languages) Arabic, Syriac, Greek, with a smattering of Ethiopic, having travelled in Abyssinia with an Austrian nobleman. His account of the Abyssinian people is interesting. He is a Catholic, and was married to an English wife,

now deceased. . . . I gave him (John) your advice about keeping a diary, and I hope that he will do so. My object in letting him undertake this journey is that he may acquire in some degree the habit of acting and thinking for himself, believing as I do that it is not well that a young man of his age should be always subjected to home restraints. . . . In fact I wish him to acquire habits of observation and to enjoy the period of youth. And I hope that he will not long remain unmarried. I have advised him, as an intellectual occupation, to study Arabic while he is in Egypt. . . . Moreover, I should be glad of his having some conversation with you about political matters, though I do not at all desire in the present state of things that he should enter Parliament. But I do not wish him to be a Jingo or a Coercionist."

And again in November :

"Everything is now arranged for my son's journey to Egypt. I hope that John will call on you when he is at Cairo. He intends to keep a journal, and if he ascends the Nile, I wish him to employ his time in endeavouring to learn the rudiments of Arabic. My great desire is that he should acquire habits of observation and self-reliance, and I shall be glad also if he really enjoys his little excursion, for youth should be a period of enjoyment, as Horace advises ; trouble and pain should come later, since come they must, such is the lot of mortals."

This project of his son's journey was carried out successfully, and I am glad to remember that Johnny stayed some days with us at Sheykh Obeyd. . . . During the following year, 1898, I find few letters from Evelyn. It was a time when I was passing through a severe illness and my correspondence was neglected. I remember, however, that my very first visit on my recovery was to Wotton, where I spent three pleasant days in July, renewing our chess combats. This is an entry which I am glad to record, as it tells of my having won a game from him, an unusual occurrence :

"*July 14.* Won a game with my own four pawn opening. To win with it requires the most cautious possible play. I call it the battle of Waterloo, for one has to stand almost still, never crossing the middle line till the enemy has broken his

strength. Then you advance, as occasion offers, and secure a victory. Evelyn declares that the opening violates every law and principle of the game, but admits its strength. 'If it is sound,' he said, 'we have nothing to do but to burn all our books on chess.' He is a far better player than I am, and can give me two pawns if I play him with any of the common openings. I find Evelyn with strong Spanish sympathies in the war that is going on."

I remember, too, that we were at one in condemning the great slaughter at Omdurman and the affair of the Mahdi's tomb. All England was that time going through a phase of extreme Jingoism which culminated in the unjustifiable Transvaal War. Here I again find letters from Evelyn worth quoting. I had published a long poem of protest against these doings, and he writes :

"November 2, 1899. Thank you for the copy of your poem 'Satan Absolved,' it is indeed a daring flight on your part. The idea, the ultimate reconciliation of Ormuzd and Ahri-man, is worked out by you in your splendid Alexandrines most effectively. The poem, from its originality and vigour, will assuredly make a great impression. Would that the poem, with your prefatory observations, might induce some of our countrymen to pause and reflect! But perhaps nothing but disaster will bring about such a result. I see quoted from *The Times* a short poem in heroic couplets from the Poet Laureate entitled 'Inflexible as Fate.' I should have thought that, after the jingoistic effusion of Rudyard Kipling, Alfred Austin might have refrained from what seems a work of supererogation. I regret to find that Swinburne, whose genius I admire, has taken his stand in the jingo ranks."

Evelyn's strong disapproval of the war led him to refuse any subscription to a widows and orphans fund being raised at Deptford.

"My refusal," he writes, November 14, "was based on grounds similar to those given in the letter you enclosed to me. I am pleased to find that in refusing I stand in line with you. I told the applicant that the persons who should be applied to are the authors and promoters of the war.

It is interesting to learn that, at your rent audit, the letter you enclosed to me was read with applause. This confirms me in my opinion that this abominable war is not so popular in the country as in London or the great towns. When I speak to country people on the subject, either in Surrey or in Sussex, they do not seem by their answers to be much affected by the jingo mania."

My journal contains :

"*November 24.* To Wotton to dine and sleep. They have fought a new battle in South Africa and another in the Soudan, and announced them as two British victories: the South African nothing much to boast of, two hundred of our men lost, mostly of the Guards, the other probably less bogus. Dear old Evelyn still sticks religiously to his principles with me. We are the last of the Anti-Imperialist Conservatives."

That winter of 1889-1900 Evelyn again paid me a visit at Sheykh Obeyd. I have a letter from him, dated Cairo, March 5, 1900, giving an interesting account of his travels in Upper Egypt and of the new reservoir at Assouan, which was just then in process of building, and the new hotels that were springing up there.

"Egypt," he says, "seems to be losing its picturesqueness; and Cairo is become little more than the resort of fashionable and wealthy pleasure-seekers. On arriving at Cairo, a telegram arrived from John with the unexpected news that he had joined the Imperial Yeomanry and would leave immediately for the Cape." . . .

This was, of course, a source of great anxiety to him for some weeks, only to be relieved by the intelligence of John's capture by the Boers in the first engagement in which he took part.

Later he wrote of his son, "I do not know where he is now. Since his landing in South Africa I have had one letter from him (May 14)."

Again :

"*October 31.* The Liberal party seem to me in a wretched condition. In regard to the South African War, instead of going in for Liberal Imperialism, they should have stood to

their guns. Then, if they were destined to come to grief, they would have fallen with dignity. You ask me about John; my anxiety about him is great. . . . The last letter I received from him was dated Pretoria, October 3."

Pretoria had by this time been occupied by Lord Roberts' army.

A few weeks later, he writes in better spirits :

"*December 11.* John is probably by this time on his way to Italy by Durban and Port Said in a German ship. On his arrival at Naples, he will be met by my estate agent, Mr. Rice, and by an old servant of the family, and I wish him to stay some little time at Rome, with my cousins the Pantaleones, before returning to England. This adventure of John's has given me much anxiety. . . . In yesterday's *Pall Mall Gazette* there is an account of the looting and burning of the Chinese city of Ten-lien by English troops. The narrative is ghastly in its details. I see no marked abatement in the war fever here."

The final end of his anxieties about his son was not long to be waited for. On November 29, 1901, I had the pleasure of receiving from him the announcement of John's engagement with Miss Frances Ives and that the marriage would take place in January. I consider these letters very interesting as bearing on a certain side of Evelyn's character, the high duty which he felt was his of worthily representing the honourable tradition of his family. His dynastic hopes were still further crowned by the birth of a grandson, heir to Wotton, in August 1904.

Our correspondence continued on the same footing of common neighbourly interest and a community of political ideas, I am glad to remember, to the day of his death. We agreed together in regard to Japan and China, Somaliland and the Thibetan expedition, which marked the later years of the Conservative administration, and in our opposition to Sir Edward Grey's foreign policy when the Liberals returned to power. My last letter from him was written from Campfield House, where he had taken up his residence near Wotton, having made over Wotton itself to his son. It was to tell me of an accident, a fall, from which he never completely

recovered. At the same time he sent me the extraordinarily generous contribution of one hundred and twenty pounds towards a fund which I was at that time raising in connection with a matter which deeply interested us both, that of providing for the sufferers in the notorious Denshawi case in Egypt. The news of his somewhat sudden death a few weeks later was to me a very great grief, the more so because my own state of health at the time had prevented me from paying him a visit during the whole of the past winter.

Of all the friends with whom in my later years I have been intimate, I hold William John Evelyn to have been the most completely after my own heart, as representing the best type of English country squire and Conservative politician, untouched by the plutocratic vulgarities of the modern imperialist who has so largely replaced him. He was a kind and helpful neighbour and a generous friend, faithful to his principles, and these of the noblest kind.

WILFRID SCAWEN BLUNT.

July 1913.

CHAPTER II

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN

CHILDHOOD AND EARLY LIFE

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN (of Wotton, Deptford, and Rathbone Place, London), eldest son of George Evelyn, was born at 28 Gloucester Place, Portman Square, July 27, 1822. He was baptized in the house, 28 Gloucester Place, on the following 19th of September. His godparents were his paternal grandfather, John Evelyn of Wotton, his grandfather on his mother's side, James Hewitt Massy-Dawson of Ballinacourty, otherwise called the Glen, Tipperary, Ireland, and Mrs. Evelyn, of St. Clere, Kent.

The latter was very anxious that her godson should be christened William because it was the name of her dead brother, whom she was very fond of, but William's parents did not like the idea as they considered it to be an unlucky name in the family. The child's uncle, that is to say his father's elder brother, William, had been drowned in a shipwreck in the Gulf of St. Lawrence; his great-uncle, William Glanville Evelyn, had died from a wound which he received in the American War of Independence; and his cousin, William Evelyn of St. Clere, expired owing to an accident in the hunting field. Mrs. Evelyn of St. Clere, however, insisted that the baby should be called William, and she had her way in spite of remonstrances.

William's first nurse was an Irishwoman, a Mrs. O'Connor, the wife of a private soldier in his father's regiment. In after life his earliest recollections were of playing in Portman Square with a number of other children and of frequently walking with his father from Gloucester Place to Hyde Park,

and stopping on the way at a shop where they were provided with curds and whey. He remembered, too, up to the last days of his life the beauties of Kensington Gardens, and of how it was then, as now, a favourite resort for nurses and children. He recollected how he and his brothers used to go there constantly with their nurses. Once they met the Princess Victoria there. She and another lady were walking along a path accompanied by a little dog. William and George, the two eldest boys, immediately ran after it and tried to catch it, to the consternation of their nurse, who afterwards said to them: "Do you know what you have done, children? That was the Princess Victoria." They were very frightened and expected to be sent to prison.

On the death of his grandfather at the end of 1827, when William was five years old, the family removed from London to Wotton. A little more than a year after this, when he was six and a half years old, his father died, February 15, 1829, after a lingering illness of eight months. His youngest brother, Edmund, was only a few weeks old. Thus his mother after eight years of married life was left a widow with six little boys, when she was not quite twenty-seven years of age. She had to face the prospect of managing a large property which was encumbered by many heavy liabilities. For many years she lived a very retiring life at Wotton.

William's father, Captain George Evelyn, had never properly recovered from a wound in the left arm which he had received at the battle of Waterloo, where with his regiment, the 3rd regiment of Foot Guards, he had been engaged in defending Hougoumont. For years after the battle his arm gave him great trouble, as pieces of bone worked their way out. His final illness, however, was caused not by his wound but by an accident which he had while riding from Wotton to Kingston-on-Thames. His horse fell and then rolled on him, but although injured he was able to remount it and proceed on his journey. On arrival at Norbiton Hall, however, where he was staying, he complained of faintness, and from that time was never well and suffered greatly as an abscess formed on the liver. The following are a few notes written by William Evelyn in a

memorandum book giving his childish recollections of this period :—

“ I recollect wondering at the absence of my father from Norbiton House, where we were staying at the residence of Mr. Massy-Dawson at Kingston. I asked where my father was. They told me he had gone to Wotton, and I replied, ‘ I don’t believe there is any such place as Wotton.’ This must have been in November and December (1827) when my father had gone to Wotton on hearing of my grandfather’s death. I recollect a journey with my father and mother to St. Clere, Kent. I recollect perfectly well stopping to change horses at Godstone and walking with my father on to a small tongue of land in a pond before the inn. Then I remember the workmen employed on the east wing. Then I remember being in London again about July 1828. This was in order to obtain good medical advice for my poor father. Then I remember his lying ill on a sofa in the drawing-room at 28. No longer did he take me as was his wont in 1827 a walk before breakfast to Hyde Park and give me curds and whey at the little shop at the gate. Then I remember on February 14 in the afternoon my grandmother Mrs. Dawson coming to the nursery and telling us that my father was dying, on which I began to cry. Next morning I was called in to see him lying cold and pale and to kiss his forehead.”

A short description of Wotton House, where Mrs. Evelyn and her six little boys were henceforward to take up their permanent residence, may not be out of place here. Up till now they had been very little there, as Captain Evelyn had not been on very good terms with his father, who, although possessed of many good qualities, had a somewhat autocratic disposition. The house lies about three miles to the west of Dorking on the road to Guildford and is situated in an upland valley about 400 feet above the level of the sea. It is on the slope of Leith Hill, which is nearly 1000 feet high and is the highest point in the south-east of England. The exact date of the oldest part of the house is not known, but in general character it is Elizabethan. It has been in the possession of the Evelyn family since 1579, at which

date it was purchased by George Evelyn of Long Ditton in Surrey from one Henry Owen. From this George Evelyn, William John Evelyn was directly descended in the male line. The house has been extensively added to at different times. The oldest part of the house is the centre, as both the east and the west wings are modern, but occupy the sites of old wings of the building. The west wing was added by William John Evelyn in 1864, the old wing having been destroyed by fire about 1790, and the east wing was built in 1828 by Captain George Evelyn, as the old one, which was in the Tudor style and was as old as the reign of Elizabeth, was found to be too dilapidated to admit of repair. The house faces north and south and is comprised of a centre part and the two wings. It is built of red brick with a slate roof. When originally purchased in the reign of Elizabeth by George Evelyn, the house was encircled by a moat, and this remained until the time of his grandson George Evelyn (brother of the diarist), who laid out the garden and ground in the newly introduced Italian style, and in doing this levelled a hill to the south of the house which enabled him to fill up the moat. The Italian garden no longer exists, but a Doric portico or temple which George Evelyn built still remains and also a fountain in front of it which was made by him. In all these improvements he was advised by his brother John Evelyn and also by a cousin, Captain George Evelyn, who designed the portico. George Evelyn also built the banqueting hall, a fine room in the Italian style. The house, which is somewhat in a hollow, is environed by exquisite woods of beech trees. It was in this lovely place impregnated by the romance of bygone ages and amidst all the beauties of nature that William Evelyn and his brothers were to grow up. Throughout his life he remained deeply attached to Wotton and grew up a devoted student of nature.

The following extracts are from the diary of Madame Henriette Bourgeaud, who was a Swiss governess in the Massy-Dawson family in 1827 at 87 Gloucester Place, and seems to have been rather intimate with Mrs. Evelyn, whom she speaks of as "*ma chère amie*." A copy of the diary,



WOTTON HOUSE FROM THE NORTH

which was published in 1837, is kept at Wotton. It is mostly a minute description of the writer's miserable experiences as a governess and has no bearing on the history of the family with the exception of the following extracts, which are here given translated into English :—

“*March 1830.* Yesterday, Monday, the weather was so fine that I profited by it to take a long walk. I directed my course towards G—— P—— (Gloucester Place) in order to see again, in passing, a house where I was for two years as governess, and where, as a consequence, I suffered ; but one attaches oneself even to the place where one has known pain, and when the time has passed, one likes to throw a glance on it in repassing it. I looked, therefore, at this number ; the house seemed to be inhabited by its former masters (Note : 87 Gloucester Place, where James Hewitt Massy-Dawson resided) ; I recognised the same draperies in the windows of the drawing-room, the windows of the bedrooms were open as formerly ; as in old times, the entrance door was painted in brown, and the number in yellow as before ; a sigh escaped from me on approaching the door ; but I no longer stopped as I formerly did at that door. Why should I ? I was forgotten there. I went away, therefore, and heaved a second sigh : the first had been caused by the remembrance of the sorrows that had overcome me there ; the being forgotten was the cause of the second. I continued on my route, and went and knocked on the door of a lady, a relation of that same family of G—— P—— and whom I had known and loved when I lived there. A servant in deep mourning came to open it to me. I asked if Mrs. E. were at home. ‘Yes, madam,’ he replied, ‘but she is at table, she dines so early now. Shall I go and tell her ?’ ‘No,’ I replied, ‘I don’t want to disturb her.’ I then gave my card and departed.

“Being surprised at the servant being in mourning, I meditated sadly on it as I went along. ‘What !’ I said to myself, while I trembled at the idea, ‘can it be the head of that young family who is no more ? Can it be the father of those five little boys, so charming and so gay ? Can it be,

in fact, that worthy and estimable Mr. E. whom I have known, always so good, so amiable ; that man, as distinguished by the qualities of the heart as for a profound and thoughtful mind ? But no, I will not think of such a sad event ; no, it is not he. No, all that mourning that I have just seen is not for him.' While making these reflections, I made my way towards my humble dwelling where I threw myself on my bed, exhausted with fatigue, emotions, and sad and painful thoughts.

“ Alas ! my suspicions of the death of Mr. E. were only too well founded. Yesterday I renewed my visit to No. — of G—— P—— ; the same servant in mourning opened the door to me ; they showed me into the drawing-room, where I found Mrs. E. dressed in widow's weeds, so remarkable in England. This proved to me the terrible truth of which the suspicion alone had clouded my eyes with tears. . . . Oh, earth ! where are thy charms ? . . . All is sorrow here below. . . . Heaven ! oh yes, the calm of Heaven is far sweeter. . . . Poor dear friend, on seeing me she was very much moved ; she came forward, threw herself on my neck, and we remained thus for some seconds incapable of speaking ; we then sat down and a torrent of tears relieved our hearts. . . . ‘ It is two years since I have seen you,’ she said to me at last. ‘ Ah ! what a change since then.’ . . . After she was a little more herself again, she recounted to me the details of the illness and the last moments of that worthy friend. I asked to see the children ; she had them fetched. Five little boys all dressed in black entered soon afterwards ; they recognised me at once and all threw themselves on my neck while saying to me : ‘ Oh ! we have not forgotten you at all ; now you must never go away again, you must stay with us always.’ At these sincere outbursts of affection my eyes filled with tears. The mother, in squeezing my hand, added : ‘ You see how they regret you ; it was a happy time when you were near us.’ I understood her. I pointed to the sky : ‘ He is there,’ I said to her, ‘ he is waiting for you . . . there one reposes in peace, after all the sorrows of the earth. But, in the

meanwhile,' I added, 'take courage, take care of yourself, live for all these charming little beings who surround you and have no other support but you.' Those dear little ones looked at us with an air of astonishment, and the youngest said to me, in stretching out his little arms to me, 'Why are you both crying?' I clasped him to my heart, and I went away with a promise to come back again the next week to pass a day with them. Arrived at my lodging I was obliged to throw myself on my pallet worn out by painful emotions; I felt quite crushed with sadness when I recalled my thoughts to that excellent man, that good friend, that father of a family, passed away so suddenly in the flower of his age. Cut off like the herb of the field. In the morning the scythe of the reaper passes over it, and already in the evening, even the spot where it blossomed is unrecognisable."

In this same month of March, 1830, M^{me} Bourgeaud was invited by Mrs. Evelyn to stay at her house in London for a month. She arrived there on March 26.

"On the 26th of March I left my lodging. Here I am at G—— P—— staying with my dear Mrs. E., who has received me with a charming friendship. I have a pretty room, well aired and very clean. Oh, how happy I feel to be for some time away from the dirt and the dust of my dark retreat! . . .

"*April 1st.* It has snowed, it has rained, and been very cold to-day. What a difference to those passed days when there was such an excessive heat! I have been drawing the whole morning; the rest of the day I passed with Mrs. E. near a good fire where we read and talked. The subject of our conversations is generally on the death of her husband. She likes to talk of it and to remember his slightest words; his habits, his books, his pens, his written thoughts, all these are dear and precious to her now, and I who knew well, appreciated and esteemed that excellent man, partake sincerely of the regrets of his widow and I weep with her over a friend. The youngest of her six little boys, little Edmund, who was born six weeks before the death of his

father, is a very interesting child ; his expression is so melancholy that one would say that he feels the loss that he has just had to bear at his entrance into life. Poor child ! May God serve him as a father !

“ *The 13th.* No letter. No news ; I have as yet no hope, and the time passes rapidly. It is true that I am not taking much trouble any more ; I am tired, discouraged with running and writing always in vain, I am not going to disturb myself any more. The morrow will provide for itself. Mrs. E. and I walked a great deal to-day ; walking makes her gay and does her good as well as me. We joked and laughed this evening at the expense of a certain Mrs. —, stupid enough and thinking herself a great genius ; she is teaching the E. children to read.

“ *The 24th.* Mrs. E. and I went this evening to Marylebone Church to hear an excellent English preacher. What a superb sermon ! How consoling it was and true ! How he spoke to the soul ! Oh ! how happy I felt during this time ; a gentle sort of celestial impression took possession of my soul, augmented still more by the aspect of that beautiful church lighted by a multitude of lamps and by the organ music, so beautiful that one might have taken it for the voices of angels. We returned to the house so tired that I went at once to repose myself without writing as usual some words on my day.

“ *The 26th.* My dear Mrs. E. entered my room this morning to propose a walk to me, and finding me in tears she asked me the reason of it. I told her, while throwing myself on her neck ; she reprimanded me for it with the greatest kindness, assuring me that the home which she offered me was given me with the greatest pleasure, and that I must always look upon her house as mine. May God bless her for those words.

“ *May 20th.* To-morrow we depart for W. Oh ! how that idea rejoices me. There I shall find again nature, the woods, solitude, and that beautiful sky of which the azure will not be obscured by the smoke from the roofs of men. But no more reflections for this evening. I am so tired, as well as my dear good friend. We have been packing up the

whole day ; it is midnight and I hear her still ; she is occupied with her departure of to-morrow. Poor gentle friend, she was very pale and very sad this evening ; we are going to the place where repose the ashes of her friend.

“*The 24th.* Wotton (I put this name in full out of gratitude). I have lived in this delicious abode since the evening of the day before yesterday ; I arrived there at eight o'clock during superb weather. Mrs. E. and Miss (Addison), the little governess of her children, came to meet me. On approaching this beautiful dwelling the sight of a nature so magnificent caused me to experience a sentiment of calm and of happiness that I had not felt for a very long time. Nothing is more beautiful, more romantic, than that superb ground of which the woods are the most magnificent ornament ; they extend for several miles all round the old manor, which yet does not respond to the majestic grandeur of nature, which seems to have reunited there all the beauties ; mounds, streams, cascades, forests, all are to be found in this romantic place. The other day, in London, I said to a gentleman of my acquaintance that I was going to pass some time at Wotton. ‘At Wotton !’ he said to me ; ‘ah ! I congratulate you ; it is a celebrated ground, and both romantic and classic, as it belonged to the celebrated John Evelyn, so well known for his *Sylva* (it is the title of a work which treats of the way to plant trees and to beautify them). He composed that work at Wotton, and the magnificent woods which he had planted there himself, are a good example of the truth of his book. I write this at this moment in an antique chamber of this manor ; I am seated on a big comfortable arm-chair, so respectable and so old, that I imagine it has been used by the good as well as celebrated John Evelyn, who has perhaps written his *Sylva* or his *Memoirs* in this arm-chair, which, according to this supposition, would be nearly two hundred years old, for this John Evelyn was born in 1620 and died in 1706 ; he lived therefore under Cromwell, Charles II, James II, Mary, William, and Anne. To my right, above the mantelpiece, is a portrait of this John Evelyn when he was eleven years old. To my left is an immense bed as old as it is delicious, when in the evening, very tired with our walks

in the woods, I throw myself on it to find there some repose. Opposite to my antique arm-chair are three old windows still more venerable, which uncover to my eyes a charming hill crowned with woods. In the morning when I wake up I open my windows, and there on my knees I address my prayer to the Eternal; one prays with more fervour and sincerity in the sight of His works. . . .

“On waking up this morning the first object which struck my eyes was the sight of a charming fountain on the side of the hill, of which the spouting water elevated itself to a great height to fall again in silvery pearls sparkling in the first rays of the sun. Some steps from there some cows browsed on that hillock enamelled with flowers and crowned by the majestic chain of gigantic forest trees of which the summits seem to touch the skies. This picture of the morning which I saw from my bed on opening my eyes, seemed to me magic, enchanted, and made me experience a sentiment of peace so delicious, that on descending to breakfast I communicated it to my friend, while thanking her again for having given me an asylum in such a beautiful place. She smiled and told me that every one in the house noticed that I looked happy and gay. ‘Yes,’ I replied, ‘I experience here with you, a sentiment of peace and of happiness which I have not felt since I have been in England.’ After breakfast we went for a long walk in the woods, where our conversation ran as usual on our dead friend, I say our friend because I had the happiness to have obtained his esteem, more flattering in my eyes than a thousand other approbations, for he did not accord it lightly or by chance. . . .

“*June 4th.* As we were walking this morning in the forest, Mrs. E. suddenly gave a cry. I look all round us quite trembling before daring to find out the cause of such a fright. At last I venture to ask her if she has seen some monster. ‘Oh! I have seen . . . I have seen,’ she says, ‘a mouse which has passed quite close to my foot.’ ‘A mouse!’ I reply, laughing. ‘What! you are then so afraid of it?’ ‘Oh yes, I have always had an insurmountable horror of them.’ ‘Not insurmountable,’ I replied gently, ‘but insurmounted; what harm can a little animal so innocent do?’

‘Don’t let us talk of its innocence,’ replied my poor friend, still half frightened, ‘and let us return very quickly to the house.’ While going along I said to myself : ‘Poor beings that we are, we are full of weaknesses. . . .’

“*The 9th.* The grandmother of my friend (Mrs. Dennis) has just arrived here, to visit her grandchild and her great-grandchildren. She is a venerable-looking woman, aged eighty-one, blind, but possessing still fairly well the faculties of a mind which they say has been strong and active. Nevertheless what remains now of that passed youth, of that energy of body and mind ? Alas ! decrepitude, feebleness, dependence, and that is all. . . .

“*The 10th.* What a dark day ; rain from morning till night ; I have passed it partly in prattling with the old grandmother, who, fortunately, has been very pleasant to me which is not very often the case with that good woman, who, if she accords you her favour one hour of time, retracts it the following one. To please her I have been listening with the best grace in the world, to old anecdotes that she had told me a hundred times in the last three years, and which she repeated to me to-day three times in the space of some hours, without suspecting the repetition, while on my side I left her with her sweet illusion, trying to laugh and to seem as surprised at the third mention as at the first. Ah, how sad it is to get old !

“*The 11th.* The old grandmother has departed this morning ; after her departure, without imparting anything to each other, we felt happier and more free ; there is a great deal of constraint in the presence of that poor woman, so old and so blind, listening to all that goes on around her and asking an explanation ; if she hears moving, coughing, ringing, the opening of a door, moving of a chair, etc., one has to give her an ample explanation of each of these sounds. Ah, how sad it is to grow old !

“*The 13th.* After Church we went for a walk on the hills, where we stopped to contemplate what they call here the new building ; it is a wing of the manor which was rebuilt two years ago by its last possessor. Now the master of this beautiful estate has been dead for a year, and the building which was begun has remained just as he left it ;

not one stone has been added to it ; the doors, the floors, the partitions, and the ornaments are not there yet ; they are waiting in vain for the master in order to be placed there. He comes no more that master. Where is he ? Take a few steps to the little village church ; there you will find a stone of marble with carved letters ; read and you will see there the name of the master that you are looking for. All that remains of him on the earth is under this marble ; but his soul has flown towards the sky, it has returned to God. He is happy, he has nothing more to do with the passions of men or with the vanities of the world.

“ *The 23rd.* We laughed very much this evening on the subject of our causeless terrors of hydrophobia of which one hears so many instances now that we cannot walk without trembling ; if we see a poor dog at a distance he seems to us mad, and we hasten to jump the first hedge or the first ditch at the risk of breaking our necks to avoid an imaginary danger. To-day while we were out walking my friend said to me all of a sudden : ‘ It is not only dogs that I am afraid of, but men, for I have heard that a gentleman who had been bitten by a dog some time ago, and who was thought to be cured (having taken the necessary remedies), has just bitten his barber as a first sign of his madness.’ ‘ How horrible,’ I cried . . . and yet the idea of being afraid of the bites of men that we might meet going peacefully to their homes, or to their work, this idea, I say, seemed to us so absurd that we could not help laughing at it ; at that moment I added, ‘ Oh ! there is a man over there on a horse with a dog running by the side ; let us hide. At this formidable sight my friend was actually so frightened that she ran and jumped over a high hedge to hide herself in the ditch on the opposite side, and I followed her in a kind of vague terror that the dog, the horse, or the man were mad ; and perhaps all three. The poor man, who noticed us behind the hedge, and who, no doubt, had seen our ridiculous movement of fear from a long way off, saluted us humbly as if to re-assure us. On returning to the manor, we laughed at ourselves for having allowed ourselves to give way to such ridiculous fears, as if one could believe all the reports, always exaggerated and often false.

“*The 25th.* The weather has been very extraordinary to-day, the morning hot and rainy, and in the afternoon such a dark sky, the air so stifling and the atmosphere so oppressive, that breathing, walking, talking, or sitting down was an effort ; nevertheless there was no storm this evening although the sky seemed to announce it. At this moment there is a tremendous wind ; everything cracks here, windows, partitions, chimneys ; this manor is so old that the architects who have examined it do not find it very safe ; also, I should not be surprised if a storm destroyed this old edifice, and made of it a heap of ruins under which we should perhaps be buried. This evening we were talking of it and we should hardly have been able to make up our minds to go to bed without the belief in a Divine Providence which would watch over us and would know well how to save us if it wished. Nevertheless I seriously advised my friend not to expose herself and her family another year in this unsafe building, unless the repairs necessary to its solidity are done.

“*July 12th.* The old grandmother has come back here for a short time, and this morning my friend has gone to pass some days with one of her sisters, so that during her absence I am going to do my best to please and amuse the good old grandmother with whom I am happily in great favour at this moment, although always in fear, as I think I have said before, that this favourable wind may change all at once into a violent tempest, all the more unexpected because no cloud had announced it.

“*The 13th.* I read to-day three English sermons to the old grandmother, who liked my reading so much, according to what she told me, in spite of my foreign accent, that she wants to have quite as much of it again to-morrow ; I am quite willing. If my favour depends on that, I shall not lose it ; there is, besides, pleasure in obliging people and especially old people ; their nature so feeble, so dependant, and so near to the grave, must naturally inspire us with regard and compassion.

“*The 14th.* This morning I went for a tremendous walk with the little governess and the children ; she led us on to a high hill from where one had a really magnificent view. On returning to the manor I read sermons to the good old grand-

mother. I stayed with her for the rest of the day, and at last, this evening, I have learned by chance that something that I said quite innocently in conversation and laughing, has been changed, turned about, and badly understood by a person vile enough to listen at doors and to fabricate afterwards at will calumnies on what he thinks he has heard. I confess I am pained at what I have just heard, although it is not of importance, and the vile object, the author of this false report, is not worthy of my anger. Why, then, am I so angry? Is it pride, or self-love? Is it puerile fear of the opinion of the world that makes me shed tears at this moment on account of the slander that comes from it? Yes, I must confess, to my shame, it is all that, or rather nothing but that, that makes me sad. Oh! my poor thoughts! Why let yourselves trouble for nothing? When a worm gnaws at a plant the good and humane gardener takes no other vengeance than shaking the reptile to the ground, where it returns to crawl in the dust from where it had come, while the gardener, who is a novice, impatient, and irritated at the wound done to the plant, pursues the vile animal, catches it, and crushes it, without being ashamed of such a miserable victory. Should I like to resemble this last, in taking vengeance on a worm? No! . . . then I am going to forget the wound and the little worm which has done it, and the little insect who has had the stupidity to make me perceive it.

“*The 16th.* I have had a letter from my friend who tells me that she is coming back to-day to the manor. What a good thing!—above all for her dear little children.

“*The 17th.* Yesterday evening we waited in vain for Mrs. E.; she did not come, and this morning I have received a second letter which announces to me that she will not come back till Monday with her sisters. This delay has put the good old grandmother in such a bad temper that to-day she has refused my readings. I did not know what to do to amuse her; also in contemplating the poor blind woman, seated there before me, hemming by the groping of her fingers some coarse kitchen cloths, I could not help repeating often to myself, ‘Ah, how sad it is to get old!’

“*The 18th.* The rain has not ceased a moment for three



MRS. GEORGE EVELYN AND HER CHILDREN

From the painting (1832) by Buck

days and three nights ; to-day, Sunday, the weather is so frightful that it has been impossible for us to go to church which is some way from here. I therefore said my prayers alone in my room, the good grandmother said them in hers with her maid, and the little governess with the children, in the schoolroom. We all re-united at dinner and all separated after the repast, as usual, and we re-united again at tea. This life of women who do not care for each other is rather singular. The mistress of the house is absent, her governess does not care for me and I feel the same towards her ; as for the grandmother, she tells us both unceasingly that she cares for no-one in the world, outside her children, and that, excepting for herself and her family, there are no more people who are really religious and Christian in the world, etc. However, I shall not cease to render to that lady the respect which is due to her age, besides I ought to be grateful to her as her granddaughter, Mrs. E., is my friend. I try also to be always attentive and considerate towards her in spite of her fits of bad temper. I offered this evening to copy a sermon for her that we have just read and that she thought so beautiful that she wants to have it. To-morrow I shall copy it for her, happy thereby to prolong my favour.

“ *The 19th.* Mrs. E. has come back ; we waited for her at tea, and I was very happy to see that good friend again. I had placed on the mantelpiece of the drawing-room the picture in relief that I destined for her, and this little surprise seemed to give her great pleasure.

“ *The 20th.* My friend is so pale and so sad since her return that that change which I hoped would do her so much good seems to have produced the contrary effect. We were all sad to-night at dinner, I don't quite know why. The grandmother does not seem to me to have been well the last few days ; I am afraid she may die suddenly while she is here. May God preserve at least for some time her granddaughter from this blow. She owes a great deal to that grandmother.

“ *The 26th.* This evening after dinner I silently escaped to go for a solitary walk in the fields. The sun had set, a bluish mist began to cover the hills, the surrounding woods presented nothing but a long black mass ; not a leaf moved on

its stem, and this silence of nature was only interrupted by the bells of the cattle which were browsing in the meadow. While I thus walked along slowly and in solitude, I arrived at a plantation of young trees, placed there by the master of this estate about two years ago. 'The master has fallen and those trees still grow,' I said to myself in contemplating them. A sigh was about to escape from me at this idea, when I raised my eyes to the sky, 'He is there,' I thought; 'is he not therefore better there than here? There the true Christian finds calm and peace.'

The 27th. Alas! It is all useless; it is in vain now that I force myself to be always obliging and attentive towards the old grandmother, her caprice has turned against me; she cannot leave me two days in peace without using the hardest words to me. I see well that I shall have to leave, and that that is her object in treating me thus, but at any rate my dear good friend, far from upholding her grandmother in this, entreats me without ceasing not to leave her until I have found a family that would give me a convenient home. Nevertheless I repeat it, I must depart; since the grandmother has been here I have lost my tranquillity, my peace. I am afraid to say a word, I am afraid not to say it; I am afraid to go into the drawing-room, I am afraid not to go into it; I am afraid to go for a walk, I am afraid not to go for a walk; everything is changed and misinterpreted by that lady, otherwise to be respected, but who, being blind and very old, hears badly, understands badly, and forms an erroneous judgment on everything. As she has been very much deceived in her life, she thinks and says so openly, that apart from her family the whole world is composed of rogues, hypocrites, false friends, etc.; also, I do not doubt, that she seeks to persuade my friend that I am, like the rest of the world, a false friend, and a cheat who seeks to deceive her; that is no doubt the cause of the sharp words which she throws at me at moments when I least expect them. Yes, I must go away, for I confess that, in spite of my constant efforts, I cannot succeed in conserving for two minutes running that favour which is more precarious than the wind, as it changes more often.

"*The 30th.* I have received this morning a letter which gives me some hope of success ; may God will that it be so.

"We are expecting society in the house ; we have therefore, Miss—— and I, offered our rooms to Mrs. E. for her friends, so that I am writing this in one of the drawing-rooms which we have made our bedroom for two or three nights. We have each a large sofa arranged for sleeping, and as the room contains a large number of family portraits, this morning, on waking up, and on seeing all these old portraits hanging round the room, and seeming to regard us, some smiling, others frowning, I was almost tempted to hide myself under the blankets so as not to be exposed to the mockery and censure of passed generations.

"*The 31st.* It is midnight ; I have just packed my things once more in their journeying carriage, that good old trunk. I have received a letter from the lady that I spoke of above ; she asks to have an interview with me, so I shall depart to-morrow for London. Good-bye then W. . . ., good-bye peaceful residence ; good-bye hospitable manor. Good-bye dear, good friend who have received me so amicably under your roof. May the Eternal render this blessing to your children ! May they find, like me, a friend in this strange world, if misfortune overtakes them.

"To-morrow is Sunday ; I shall go for the last time to that pretty church of W., and in saying good-bye to it, my eye will turn itself towards the marble stone which contains the remains of a friend, and will deposit there, in parting, the tear of remembrance."

There is a pretty picture at Wotton, by Buck, of the six little boys. They are dressed in picturesque suits with lace collars, and they have bare arms and necks. Edmund, the youngest, is standing on a chair in a white frock and blue sash with his mother's arm round him, and the rest are standing in various positions.

On January 2, 1832, old Mrs. Dennis died. Her grandchild, Mrs. Evelyn, wrote in a small diary on that date :

"My dearest Grand Mother expired at 6 o'clock in the

morning. Her death was truly that of a sincere & perfect Christian. Death was, with her, a source of rejoicing."

On May 16 of the same year she writes, "Mrs. Russell came to me as Governess."

George Evelyn, in his will, had appointed his wife and the Rev. J. Boscawen, Rector of Wotton, joint guardians of his children, with the provision that in the event of Mrs. Evelyn remarrying, her guardianship should cease and Mr. Boscawen should remain sole guardian. Mrs. Evelyn had resolved never to marry again. Mr. Boscawen, however, noting the provision in the will, and desiring to have the management of the children's affairs in his sole hands, attempted to bring about a second marriage, and with this object in view, introduced to her a curate of the name of Courtenay, who became tutor to the six boys. Mr. Courtenay was encouraged by Mr. Boscawen to pay attentions to Mrs. Evelyn, and, to her astonishment, eventually proposed to her. She refused him, and Mr. Boscawen then made out that Mr. Courtenay had received encouragement. The result was considerable friction between the Evelyns and the Boscawens, and the boys were forbidden to have any further intercourse with Mr. Courtenay.

In the year 1834 William lost three near relations. The first death was that of his grandmother, Mrs. Massy-Dawson, on March 14 of that year. Her Christian names were Eliza Jane, and she was the daughter of Francis Dennis of Jamaica, and Mary Burke, his wife, daughter of Nicholas Burke of Corry, County Mayo. There is a pretty picture of her as a small child, at Wotton, where she is represented as dancing with her sister, both little girls being attired in white dresses and pink sashes. Both have brown hair and blue eyes. The parents are watching them dance, the father in a standing position, and the mother seated and accompanying her children on a banjo.

The second death in the family was that of William's aunt, Frances, his father's only sister, who died at Florence after a lingering illness on April 22.

The third death was that of his grandfather, James Hewitt Massy-Dawson, who died on October 2, aged fifty-five.



MR. AND MRS. DENNIS OF JAMAICA
WITH THEIR CHILDREN, ELIZA AND MARIA

This bereavement of both her parents was probably a terrible blow to William's mother, who must often have been in need of their counsel and experience, particularly in the management of her six boys, who grew up with the disadvantage of having no father to advise them.

William was educated first at East Sheen, and from there, in January 1835, he went to Cheam School which was kept by Doctor Mayo. His brothers, George and Frederick, went there at the same time. He was about fourteen and a half years old at this time. His brother Charles was already there, as he had been sent there in January 1834, just a year before. The following little sketch concerning his schooldays at Cheam has been written by Miss Mayo, a daughter of Doctor Mayo :—

“ Mr. Evelyn was sent to Cheam School in January 1835, and remained there till June 1837, when he went to Rugby. He was one of Doctor Mayo's favourite pupils, partly perhaps at first through sympathy with the young widowed mother of six sons, and through interest in the eldest who would never know a father's guiding hand, but must be prepared to fill a high position in after life. Soon after, Doctor Mayo perceived rare qualities of excellence both in intellect and personal character, veiled by a natural shyness which he did his best to counteract, and as it were to draw the boy out of his shell. A great attachment sprang up between master and pupil. Mr. Evelyn would often say, in after years, that his days at Cheam were the happiest in his life, and would speak of the interest he took in the subjects of Natural History and Chemistry which then were taught nowhere else. He took great pleasure in a visit to Wotton from the master, Mr. Reiner, who gave these lessons, and in showing him his own little boy. His remembrance of those days seemed to be as fresh as ever till the end of his life. He would tell of a great school-friendship with a boy who shared a garden in the playground with him. At one time there was a rupture, but he could not remember the reason, or how a reconciliation was effected, but there must have been one, as he recalled returning from a walk when he was not well and leaning on this boy's arm. All this he would relate with an amused

chuckle. Mr. Evelyn was very faithful to some of his Cheam School friends, and would often talk about them. There was one in particular whom he much regretted, through no fault of his own having lost sight of. This man died not very long ago. About fifteen years before his death, Mr. Evelyn asked a friend to go over to Cheam with him, and was delighted in being shown over the old house which was considerably altered. He identified his own bedroom and one or two original schoolrooms, and was so charmed to find a man who said that as house-boy he had often blacked Mr. Evelyn's boots, that he gave him a sovereign. He visited Dr. Mayo's grave, and copied the inscription, speaking of him with the greatest affection."

The following is a quotation from a letter, dated June 22, 1901, which William Evelyn wrote to Miss Mayo concerning his time at Cheam :—

"All that I can say in regard to Cheam School is that I was very happy there, and shall always retain a most affectionate recollection of your parents. Well do I remember when I was ill that your mother came to my bedside and spoke such kind and comforting words to me that I was much moved by her affectionate interest in my welfare."

He also wrote the following letter to Miss Mayo, in which he refers to the school :—

"August 22, 1888.

"DEAR MISS MAYO,—Accept my best thanks for the cuttings of cabbage roses and also for the most interesting photograph and lithograph which you have so kindly sent. Cheam is a spot of earth most endeared to my recollection, and the day when I left the school was an ill-starred day for me. I was truly pleased to revisit Cheam with you and to revive old memories.

"Believe me,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN."

Two great friends of William Evelyn at Cheam were Hugh Proby (son of the third Earl of Carysfort) and Wyndham Hoste.

TRANSLATION BY WILLIAM EVELYN AT THE AGE OF FOURTEEN
(TAKEN FROM THE "CHEAM SCHOOL JOURNAL" OF 1836)

"Ulysses' Farewell to Calypso"

"Goddess, farewell ! the hour of my departure has arrived. That time which I have been so long desiring comes at last, and I now return to my native country, to Ithaca, where I shall behold once more my wife and son, who perhaps even now suppose that their Ulysses is no more, swallowed up by the ocean. Yet, think not that I am ungrateful, O Goddess ! think not that I shall cease to remember your benefits. You saved my life, and rescued me from the raging deep. You not only rescued me, but received me into your island, when I was an unhappy wanderer, cast upon your shores by the tempest. You supported me, and even promised me immortality if I would consent to stay here, giving up all thoughts of returning to my native land. I acknowledge all your kindness ; but not the delights and pleasures of your island, not the happiness of having a goddess for my wife, not all the delights of immortality, can wean my affections from my native country. They cannot allay the grief that I feel as a husband and a father ; they cannot banish my anxiety as a king. Many a tedious day and sleepless night I have passed on the shore of your island, lamenting my hard destiny, despairing ever to see Ithaca again, and looking sorrowfully on the turbulent sea, desiring in vain to return to my native country. Then, O Goddess ! your promises and pleasures were all in vain ; they could not assuage the grief of my mind. In vain you tried to dissuade me from my return ; in vain you attempted to divert my attention to other objects—yourself, in detaining me, caused me grief. Even if I had accepted your offers—even if I had consented to stay here, enjoying with you the delights of immortality—I could never have been happy while absent from Ithaca. I confess that my Penelope is far inferior to you in beauty and mien. She is a mortal and you are a goddess. I allow that the delights and pleasures of Ogygia far exceed those of Ithaca ; but so strong is the tie

that binds me to my native land that nothing can destroy it. You tell me that I shall endure many misfortunes, and encounter many accidents, before I see again my native shores ; but no perils can deter me. Though I must alone encounter the tempest, though perhaps I may lose my life in the ocean, rather let me perish thus than renounce all thoughts of return. Once more, O Goddess, farewell.

W. E.—Age 14.”

On March 28, 1837, William's godmother, Mrs. Evelyn of St. Clere, died, and as she left no children St. Clere passed to William and his five brothers, according to the law of Gavelkind which then prevailed in Kent, which provides that if a person dies without making a will, his land shall be divided equally between his nearest of kin. Finally it came to belong to Edmund, the youngest brother, who bought up his brothers' shares. He afterwards sold it, and it now belongs to Sir Mark and Lady Collet.

In June, 1837, William left Cheam and was sent to Rugby. He was now nearly sixteen. He was contemporary at Rugby with several boys who were destined to become distinguished. Among them were the Earl of Derby, Matthew Arnold, Tom Hughes, and Dean Stanley. Matthew Arnold and Tom Hughes (author of *Tom Brown's Schooldays*) were his personal friends. The celebrated Dr. Arnold was at this time head master.

With regard to his Rugby schooldays, a friend of his, Mr. Augustus Orlobar, the Slogger Williams of *Tom Brown's Schooldays*, writes as follows :

“ Though I was at the School House and a great friend of W. J. Evelyn, I am sorry I can give very little useful information. He was always considered clever and well read, and I think I remember his gaining prizes in the Sixth Form. We had no school magazine at that time. He was a diffident and shy boy, and did not take much part in the games, though he played up well at football occasionally. He was an intellectual boy, and set a good example of high-minded morality. I was with him in the Sixth Form, and again at Oxford ; and I was at Wadham when he was at Balliol. In

after life, I stayed with him at Wotton, and he was godfather to my second son, named after him Evelyn Henry, now a retired Colonel in the Marines."

Another old schoolfellow, Mr. Henry A. Olivier, writes as follows :

" Evelyn was senior to me at Rugby. I only remember him as a quiet, gentlemanly boy, whom I much liked. . . . He did not signalise himself by gaining any prize, as far as I remember, nor by prominence in either cricket or football, or running Hare and Hounds."

Mr. John G. Hollermy writes as follows :

" It is more than seventy years since I was at Rugby with William Evelyn, and my memory, like my frame, is very feeble. I was intimate with him at school ; he was a very quiet sort of fellow, and I cannot remember his taking any part in any magazine or the like, nor was he prominent in school games or in school work as far as I recollect. He had literary tastes, and I have a vague recollection of being introduced by him to the older English dramatists and attending " readings " of their dramas in Evelyn's study (at the end of the bottom passage in the School House). I rather think he, as well as I, was a member of the Oxford and Cambridge Club, and we used to meet there in after years."

From Rugby he went on to Oxford, where he entered Balliol College (the same College in which Sylva Evelyn took his degree). He took his degree of M.A. in 1844.

The following is an extract from Lord Beaconsfield's Correspondence with his sister, 1832-1852, published in 1886 :—

" *September 1843.* We returned from Deepdene this morning, after a most agreeable visit, with beautiful weather. One night I sat next to Mrs. Evelyn of Wotton, a widow ; her son, the present squire, there also ; a young Oxonian and full of Young England."

" Yours,

" D."

Mrs. Evelyn used to relate in after years that, on hearing that she was William Evelyn's mother, Disraeli remarked

thoughtfully : " Ah, the Evelyns have always had good mothers," a fact he could hardly have been aware of if true.

Disraeli was the leader of the association which went by the name of " Young England " and which was made up of young men joined together to carry out its policy. The following description of the movement is taken from the *Earl of Beaconsfield and his Times*, by Alexander Charles Ewald :—

" Let us here say a few words respecting the new association which, during the earlier years of the Peel administration, was sneered at as " Young England." Mr. Disraeli was the chief—its presiding and inspiring genius. With him were associated Lord John Manners, his staunch friend and supporter throughout the whole of his political career ; the brilliant George Sydney-Smythe ; Henry Hope, the son of the author of *Anastasi*us ; Monckton Milnes the poet ; Faber, who afterwards completed his Tractarianism by embracing the faith of Rome, and others of lesser note. The animating spirit of the new creed was that the salvation of the country was to proceed from its youth, the ' new generation.' . . ."

" The faith of the ' new generation ' might be sentimental, but it was to be at the same time eminently practical. The higher classes were to visit the cottages of the poor, and by sympathy, kindly charity, and gentle counsel, bridge over the gulf which separated ' the two nations.' Henceforth the peer and the pauper were not to be the strangers they had been to each other ; the peer was to lose his pride, the pauper his prejudices. The Church was to be no longer the mechanism of a creed, but a real, animating influence ; once more her doors were to be thrown open to all classes, her walls thronged with worshippers, her priests alive to the mission for which they had been consecrated, and the piety which had built our monasteries and founded our chapels once more to be restored in all its purity and vigour. The apostles of the new faith met with much ridicule in their day, yet the creed they taught was a holy and unselfish one. It did its work well, and to its example we owe, in no small measure, our churches free and filled, our charity organisation societies, our work-

men's clubs, our homes, asylums, and refuges, and the other numerous institutions at the present day which have for their object the spread of religion, the advancement of education, and the mitigation of the miseries of humanity."

CHAPTER III

EARLY MANHOOD AND FIRST PARLIAMENTARY EXPERIENCES

AFTER leaving Oxford William went on a course of travels. Among other places he visited Egypt, and went beyond the second cataract of the Nile as far as New Dongola, which was considered a great undertaking in those days.

In August 1849 a vacancy occurred in the representation of West Surrey by the death of Mr. Denison, the Liberal member. William Evelyn, although only twenty-seven years of age, contested the seat in the Conservative interest. His opponent was Mr. Wyatt Edgell, of Milton Place, Egham.

At this time the Whig party was in power under their leader, Lord John Russell, who had succeeded Sir Robert Peel (the leader of the Tory party) in 1846, the memorable year of the potato famine in Ireland and of the repeal of the Corn Laws.

Polling took place at Chertsey, Chobham, Dorking, Epsom, Farnham, Godalming, and Guildford, and at the end of the first day's voting it was found that William Evelyn headed his opponent by 156. Mr. Edgell thereupon retired.

William Evelyn had for his colleague in the representation of West Surrey, William Drummond of Albury.

On April 26, 1850, a large ball was given at Wotton, the first to take place there since William Evelyn's election. William Evelyn had recently had a new road made to replace the old carriage drive. The old road wound itself over the very steep hill to the north of the house. The view from it of the house and woods surrounding it must have been lovely but the extreme precipitancy of this approach was inconvenient. The new road curves round gradually to the main

road with only a slight incline nearly all the way, and is of course much more convenient, but the magnificent view unfortunately is entirely lost.

In February 1852 Lord John Russell resigned and the Whig Government went out of office. The Tory Government which then came into power was under the leadership of Lord Derby, who avowed his intention of re-opening the question of Protection, and this declaration resulted in the Free Trade League being again organised. This was a year of excitement in England, as people feared that the country might be invaded by France, and it was owing to this that the volunteer movement came into existence.

In the beginning of July Parliament was dissolved and a general election took place.

William Evelyn again contested his seat, and after a severe contest was again returned.

The election figures were as follow :—

EVELYN,
1646.

DRUMMOND,
1610.

CHALLONER,
1385.

William Evelyn therefore again had Mr. Drummond as his colleague in the representation of West Surrey.

The Tories came back into office with a small majority. Parliament met in November 1852, and Protection was now completely dropped. The Government did not long remain in office, and what was called the Coalition Government was formed. Lord Aberdeen was Prime Minister, Lord John Russell, Foreign Secretary; Lord Palmerston, Home Secretary; and Mr. Gladstone, Chancellor of the Exchequer. The Crimean War broke out in 1854, and in the beginning of 1855 the Coalition Government came to an end. William Evelyn had a personal interest in the Crimean War, as two of his brothers went out there—his brother George on active service, and Edmund as chaplain to the forces. The war came to an end in the beginning of 1856, and the next year, 1857, the war with China began, which centred round the dispute about the lorcha *Arrow*, a Chinese pirate boat which, while flying a British flag, was in October 1856 boarded by a party of Chinese, and twelve men taken prisoners on a charge of

piracy. William Evelyn, in common with so many others, disapproved of this war, and when on February 26, 1857, Mr. Cobden brought forward a motion condemning Lord Palmerston's Government for embarking on it, and the resolution was carried by a majority of sixteen, William Evelyn recorded his vote in favour of the resolution.

He was always a strong opponent of centralisation, and he was a prominent member of Mr. Toulmin B. Smith's Anti-Centralisation Association. He introduced a Bill for restoring self-government to English parishes, which was drafted by Mr. Toulmin Smith; but although the Bill passed the first reading, he was obliged to withdraw it (like most Bills of private members), as he met with no support in the House.

He continued to represent West Surrey till 1857, when he voluntarily retired.

In the following year, 1858, William Evelyn, urged by influential deputations, resolved to come forward as a candidate for Guildford. His Liberal opponent was Mr. Guildford Onslow, who afterwards came much before the public notice by his championship of the Tichborne claimant. The contest was very keen, and was won by Mr. Onslow, William Evelyn being defeated by a majority of twenty-nine. The Guildford Conservatives, however, in token of esteem, presented him with a testimonial, which is now at Wotton.

The following is an extract from the *English Note-Books* of Nathaniel Hawthorne, with an account of his visit to Wotton and his meeting with William Evelyn in April 1856, when the latter was thirty-four.

“ WOTTON

“ Wotton stands in a hollow, near the summit of one of the long swells that here undulate over the face of the country. There is a good deal of wood behind it, as should be the case with the residence of the author of the *Sylva*; but I believe few, if any, of those trees are known to have been planted by John Evelyn, or even to have been coeval

with his time. The house is of brick, partly ancient, and consists of a front and two projecting wings, with a porch and entrance in the centre. It has a desolate, meagre aspect, and needs something to give it life and stir and jollity.

“The present proprietor is of the old Evelyn family, and is now one of the two members of Parliament for Surrey; but he is a very shy and retiring man, unmarried, sees little company, and seems either not to know how to make himself comfortable or not to care about it. A servant told us that Mr. Evelyn had just gone out, but T—p, who is apparently on intimate terms with him, thought it best that we should go into the house, while he went in search of the master. So the servant ushered us through a hall—where were many family pictures by Lely, and, for aught I know, by Vandyke and by Kneller, and other famous painters—up a grand staircase and into the library, the inner room of which contained the ponderous volumes which John Evelyn used to read. Nevertheless it was a room of most barren aspect, without a carpet on the floor, with pine bookcases, with a common whitewashed ceiling, with no luxurious study-chairs, and without a fire. There was an open folio on the table, and a sheet of manuscript that appeared to have been recently written. I took down a book from the shelves (a volume of annals connected with English history), and T—p afterwards told us that this one single volume, for its rarity, was worth either two or three hundred pounds. Against one of the windows of the library there grows a magnolia tree, with a very large stem, and at least fifty years old. Mrs. T—p and I waited a good while, and then B—h and T—p came back, without having found Mr. E. T—p wished very much to show the Prayer Book used by King Charles at his execution, and some curious old manuscript volumes; but the servant said that his master always kept these treasures locked up, and trusted the key to nobody. We therefore had to take our leave without seeing them; and I have not often entered a house that one feels to be more forlorn than Wotton—though we did have a glimpse of a dining-room, with a table laid for three or four guests,

and looking quite brilliant with plate and glass and snowy napery. There was a fire, too, in this one room. Mr. E. is making extensive alterations in the house, or has recently done so, and this is perhaps one reason of its ungenial meagreness and lack of finish.

“Before our departure from Wotton, Tupper had asked me to leave my card for Mr. E. ; but I had no mind to overstep any limit of formal courtesy in dealing with an Englishman, and therefore declined. Tupper, however, on his own responsibility wrote his name, Bennoch’s, and mine on a piece of paper, and told the servant to show them to Mr. ——. We had experience of the good effect of this ; for we had scarcely got back before somebody drove up to Tupper’s door, and one of the girls, looking out, exclaimed that there was Mr. — himself and another gentleman. He had set out, the instant he heard of our call, to bring the three precious volumes for me to see. This surely was most kind ; a kindness which I should never have dreamed of expecting from a shy, retiring man like Mr. E. So he and his friend were ushered into the dining-room, and introduced. Mr. — is a young-looking man, dark, with a moustache, rather small, and though he has the manners of a man who has seen the world, it evidently requires an effort in him to speak to anybody ; and I could see his whole person slightly writhing itself, as it were, while he addressed me. This is strange in a man of his public position, member for the county, necessarily mixed up with life in many forms, the possessor of sixteen thousand pounds a year, and the representative of an ancient name. Nevertheless, I liked him, and felt as if I could become intimately acquainted with him if circumstances were favourable ; but, at a brief interview like this, it was hopeless to break through two great reserves ; so I talked more with his companion—a pleasant young man, fresh from college, I should imagine—than with Mr. E. himself.

“The three books were really of very great interest. One was an octavo volume of manuscript in John Evelyn’s own hand, the beginning of his published diary, written as distinctly as print, in a small, clear character. It can be read just as easily as any printed book. Another was a Church of

England Prayer Book, which King Charles used on the scaffold, and which was stained with his sacred blood, and underneath are two or three lines in John Evelyn's hand, certifying this to be the very book. It is an octavo, or small folio, and seems to have been very little used, scarcely opened, except in one spot; its leaves elsewhere retaining their original freshness and elasticity. It opens most readily at the commencement of the common service; and there, on the left-hand page, is a discoloration of a yellowish or brownish hue, about two-thirds of an inch large, which, two hundred years ago and a little more, was doubtless red. For on that page had fallen a drop of King Charles's blood.

"The other volume was large, and contained a great many original letters, written by the King during his troubles. I had not time to examine them with any minuteness, and remember only one document, which Mr. E. pointed out, and which had a strange pathos and pitifulness in it. It was a sort of due-bill, promising to pay a small sum for beer, which had been supplied to His Majesty, so soon as God should enable him, or the distracted circumstances of his kingdom make it possible—or some touching and helpless expression of that kind. Prince Hal seemed to consider it an unworthy matter, that a great prince should think of 'that poor creature, small beer,' at all; but that a great prince should not be able to pay for it is far worse.

"Mr. E. expressed his regret that I was not staying longer in this part of the country, as he would gladly have seen me at Wotton, and he succeeded in saying something about my books; and I hope I partly succeeded in showing him that I was very sensible of his kindness in letting me see those relics. I cannot say whether or no I expressed it sufficiently. It is better with such a man, or, indeed, with any man, to say too little than too much; and, in fact, it would have been indecorous in me to take too much of his kindness to my own share, B—h being likewise in question.

"We had a cup of coffee, and then took our leave, T—p accompanying me part way down the village street, and bidding us an affectionate farewell."

CHAPTER IV

EXPERIENCES WHILE HIGH SHERIFF OF SURREY

IN 1860 William Evelyn became High Sheriff of Surrey, and it was while he was Sheriff that Mr. Drummond, the representative of West Surrey, died. In August of 1860 Lord Chief Justice Cockburn and Mr. Justice Blackburn were presiding at the Surrey Assizes at Guildford. In consequence of a representation to William Evelyn of an insufficiency of grand jurors at previous Assizes, he gave instructions for a larger number to be summoned, and there were fifty present in Court. Mr. Justice Blackburn made some complaint as to the noise in Court, and eventually ordered the public to be cleared out of it. For eight days the Court remained closed to the general public. The story as told by Mr. Toulmin Smith, barrister-at-law, in the *Parliamentary Remembrancer* of that year is as follows :

“THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE

“ A case has lately occurred, which involves matters of such first-rate importance to the dearest interests of the public, and touches so fundamentally the course of the administration of justice, that it would be an unpardonable omission to let it pass unnoticed in these pages. It would have been noticed before but that the published statements were so various and inconsistent that it was impossible to know what the true state of facts was : while it was plain that everything depended upon the exact state of the facts. Means have now been taken to ascertain these facts with the exactest care, and upon evidence which has been verified beyond

possibility of doubt. The correctness of the following short statement may therefore be guaranteed.

“The circumstances took place at the Surrey Assizes which sat at Guildford, for the first day on Friday, August 3. The Court House in which the circumstances took place is one that has been praised for its convenience by former distinguished Judges. It is light, lofty, and airy. It has, indeed, the characteristic which all Courts used to have, of being on one side not closed in by a wall, but separated from the highway by open-worked iron rails and gates; so that the administration of justice shall be, in truth, as the Law of England has always required that it shall be, open—‘*Corum populo*’ (Bacon, *On Government*, ii. p. 54). The Court itself is divided into two parts: the one being close upon the highway, into which it opens by open-worked iron gates; the other rising, by two or three steps, from the former, and there being, at the top of these steps, open-worked iron rails and gates, which gates, like those opening from the front Court on to the highway, have always heretofore been set wide, for public access, during every Assizes. Across the middle of the raised part of the Court there is fixed a light wooden bar, to separate, for obvious convenience, those who are actually engaged in pending or coming trials—that is, the Sheriff, Jury, Judge, Counsel, Attorneys, Parties, Witnesses, and reserve Jurymen—from the public. The space between this wooden bar and the gates at the top of the steps is the one appropriated to the public. The open Court below is, and always has been, the means of access to the part of the raised Court which is thus appropriated to the public; and those who wish to wait in a less crowded part, could do so on seats set in that open Court. The latter is not, as has been alleged, ever used during the Assizes as a corn-market.

“Such being the facts as to the *place*, the Court met on Friday, August 3, the High Sheriff and the Judge being in their respective places. The Judge made some complaint of the Court. He complained also of noise—the probable cause of which was the fact that, through the stoppage of an adjoining road, more carts, etc., were obliged to pass along the highway next the Court than usual. Presently the

Judge ordered that the above described part of the Court between the steps and the highway should be cleared, and the gates closed. He did not make his complaint to the Sheriff and request his interference, as would have been the regular course if there had been any real cause of complaint, but gave this order himself. The part in question was cleared and the gates were closed. The part of the raised Court which is appropriated to the public still remained filled by the public. Presently, the Judge again complained of noise; and again, without any reference to the Sheriff, *and while the public then present were perfectly quiet*, he ordered this part also of the Court to be cleared. This order also was obeyed; and with some difficulty, and for the first time in the history of an English Court of Justice, the entire part thus appropriated to the public was forcibly cleared of the public, and the gates were locked against the access of either those same people or any other of the public to the part of the Court appropriated to public use. The Court remained thus closed, and barred of access, from that day, Friday, August 3, till Saturday evening, August 11. Again, presently, a few of those thus ejected from the raised part of the Court having remained in the outer part, between the steps and the outer gates, the Judge gave, in the same manner, a *third* order of clearance.

“No access whatever was open to the public during all the eight days above named. There is a double door, in quite a different part of the Court House, on the folds of which are painted respectively the words ‘Counsel and Attorneys’ and ‘Witnesses,’ and at which door an officer usually stands, to take care that none but those apparently concerned in the business before the Court come in by that way. The access of the public to the part of the Court appropriated to it remained, for eight days, entirely closed.

“Shortly after these clearances had been made, the Grand Jury came into Court. The High Sheriff had previously suggested to the Judge that it would be desirable that, in thanking the Grand Jurymen, a word of thanks should be given to those who had, at equal inconvenience, and with equal devotion to their public duty, come up ready to serve

if necessary. The Judge rejected the suggestion. He shortly thanked the Grand Jurymen. The High Sheriff then rose, and attempted to add one sentence of thanks to the others. Instantly that he began, the Judge, in a tone of great rudeness, called on him to sit down. The High Sheriff still went on. The Judge then said that he fined the High Sheriff £500, and ordered the fine to be recorded. The High Sheriff, not daunted by this extraordinary exhibition of petulance in the Judge, still attempted to finish his sentence; when the Judge, raising his hand to suit the action to the word, threatened to put him under arrest (he must have entirely forgotten that he was addressing the Sheriff of the shire). The High Sheriff, utterly astonished at such an unbecoming and irregular exhibition by the Judge, and unwilling to be party to the continuance of a 'scene,' sat down.

"It must be particularly noted that, when the High Sheriff rose, there was no case before the Court. He interrupted nothing, but was merely discharging a very simple and obvious duty. The only irregularity, or breach of order, or interruption to public business, was caused by the Judge's inconsiderate interference.

"The High Sheriff soon after retired; but, yielding to the suggestion of several friends, and without taking sufficient time to consider what the real merits and bearings of what was involved in the transaction were, he went into Court in the afternoon of the same day, and expressed his regret for what had taken place. This was a very great mistake. Seeing this expression of regret, nobody has troubled himself to go into the real merits; and all have naturally concluded, at once, that he who was, in fact, perfectly in order and discharging a graceful duty, was in the wrong, and that he who alone did really commit what irregularity and breach of decorum there was, was in the right.

"The irregular proceeding thus stated had an incidental consequence, irrespective of its own merits. Without the act of, or any appeal made by the Judge to, the High Sheriff, the Court had been cleared, and was kept closed. It would

naturally be supposed that an English Judge would, after a night's rest, have seen the extraordinary error and unlawfulness of the course he had taken. But when, day after day, the Court still remained with the public barred out from access, it became exceedingly embarrassing to the High Sheriff. It was his clear duty to maintain an open Court. But he was anxious to avoid another collision with the Judge. To offer any suggestion to the Judge had been found, by experience, to be useless. To appeal to his brother Judge on circuit, would seem offensive. To open the gates to the public, as the law required should be done, without a word of explanation, would be certain to be misrepresented. It was suggested that a written Protest, signed by the High Sheriff and several County Magistrates, should, at the close of the Assizes, be handed to the Judges of Assize, and sent to the Home Office. But this would imply a tacit permission of what was known to be an unlawful course, up to the end. After much consideration, a course was adopted which was the most consistent with the obvious public duty of the High Sheriff. He issued a Proclamation, which should make known, at the same time, the exact state of the facts; the duty that arose thereupon; and the course he had taken in order to fulfil that duty. The Proclamation was in the following words:—

*“ ‘ To the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the County
of Surrey*

“ ‘ GENTLEMEN,—On Friday, August 3, Mr. Justice Blackburn, in my presence but without addressing himself to me, ordered that part of the Court which is appropriated to the public to be cleared, at a time when perfect quietness prevailed among the public, who were then present according to custom. From that time, the public have been barred out from the Court where Mr. Justice Blackburn presides; and the prisoners have been tried, and causes heard, without the possibility of the law being fulfilled which requires that “so many as will or can” shall “come so near as to hear.” As your Sheriff, and feeling that the general dissatisfaction

is well-grounded, it is my duty to record my protest against this unlawful proceeding. And I have given directions that the Court shall be open again to the public, according to the custom and the law. All persons, so long as they conduct themselves with decorum, have a lawful right to be present in Court; and I hereby prohibit my officers from aiding and abetting any attempt to bar out the public from free access to the Court.—I am, Gentlemen, your faithful servant,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, *Sheriff*.

“ ‘GUILDFORD, *Saturday, August 11, 1860.*’

“ In order to prevent any danger of disorder in the Court, the posting of this Proclamation was withheld, by express instructions, until after the Judge had arrived on Monday morning, August 13; and written instructions were given, under the hand of the High Sheriff, to the Under-Sheriff, that, ‘should any persons be disorderly in Court, you, as Under-Sheriff, will of course give directions for the immediate removal of the offenders by the Javelinmen’; and, to the Javelinmen themselves, ‘to keep strict order in Court—to remove any disorderly person or persons.’ Thus the High Sheriff, while fulfilling what was his absolute duty, in order to secure the legality of the Court itself, by taking care that it should be an ‘Open Court,’ took especial pains that no breach of order or decorum should be committed.

“ The result was that the Court, which had been unlawfully sitting for eight days with the public access barred, was, on Monday, the 13th of August, opened again; and that the public, thus again admitted, behaved as before with perfect order and decorum.

“ But the unlawful barring out of the public from the Court by the act of the Judge, and this re-opening of it by the act of the High Sheriff, in accordance with his imperative duty, put the Judge who had acted thus unlawfully in rather an awkward position. To close the Court again he did not venture to attempt. The terms of the Proclamation showed, too clearly, that the High Sheriff knew very well what he was about. The whole of Monday, 13th August, the Court remained open—it being thus most significantly

admitted that the High Sheriff was right and the Judge wrong. Late on that night, the High Sheriff received a summons to appear in the Crown Court the next morning, to answer for a 'Contempt' in publishing the Proclamation. When men usurp the power of being plaintiffs, judges, and executioners in their own cause, the process is singularly easy. The High Sheriff appeared the next morning in his usual place and state. He treated the matter with the dignity becoming his office and the duty he owed to the public. And the unbecoming spectacle followed of his being fined £500 for the fulfilment of his duty. Such a travesty upon the administration of justice needs no comment here. The facts speak for themselves. It is not the first time that Judges have attempted to cover over their wounded self-love by imposing fines for the setting aside of their own illegal acts. . . .

"Of the unlawfulness of the fine imposed in the present case there cannot be the slightest doubt in the minds of any who really know anything of the Laws of England. But John Hampden himself submitted to the judgment which was given against him in the great Ship-Money Case ; though Parliament itself declared, shortly afterwards, 'That the Judgment in the Exchequer in Mr. Hampden's case is against the laws of the realm, the right of property, the liberty of the subjects, and contrary to former resolutions in Parliament and to the petition of right.' Every one of these words of condemnation applies, even more strongly, against the arbitrary proceeding adopted in the present case.

"All who respect the institutions of the country will desire that the Judges shall be held in high respect. It is painful when any course is taken by the latter which is inconsistent with the respect which their office should ensure. But it is undeniable that there have been tendencies lately which are alarming enough. The Judges, highly paid for the discharge of their functions, have too often forgotten the full gravity and responsibility of the duties they are called on to fulfil. But no case has ever yet gone to the extraordinary lengths reached in the present

instance, in a direction that strikes at the very foundations themselves of the pure administration of justice.

“That all Courts where Justice is administered in England are open and public Courts is an absolute rule of law, which has, hitherto, been always deemed so much a thing of course that it is a matter of continual allusion by all the best writers on our Laws and Institutions, without their deeming the proposition to need an argument in itself.

“To multiply illustrations would fill a volume. Everybody knows that, in point of fact, at the present day the Assizes are times when the Sheriff always appears in state. In the case of the present High Sheriff of Surrey, he went to meet the Judges, at the Spring Assizes of the present year, accompanied by more than a hundred gentlemen and yeomen of the County on horseback—which recalls the incident when an ancestor of the High Sheriff of 1860, being High Sheriff of the same county in 1633, was in like manner well accompanied by his neighbours. And, curiously to complete the coincidence, the earlier Sheriff Evelyn, like the later, had the misfortune, during his shrievalty, to fall into unpleasant relations with a Judge, who, as it happened, was himself obliged, at the next Assizes, to declare the revocation of an order (on another matter) which the Judges of Assize (he being one) had made at the last Assizes. (Compare Evelyn’s *Diary*, November 3, 1633, and 2 Rushworth, pp. 191, 192.) So that Judges of Assize were no more infallible then than they are now.

“Coming up, as the number of good men of the county did on the present occasion, out of respect for the summons of the High Sheriff, to fulfil a public duty which had of late years been too laxly fulfilled in that county—a state of things which the High Sheriff was anxious to see amended—there can be but one answer to the question, Whether the welfare of the County, and the administration of justice there, will be better promoted by the refusal of the Judge to thank them, and his so irregularly stopping the Sheriff in the course of thanking them, than it would have been

had the wish and attempt of the Sheriff been fulfilled ? The Sheriff and the rest have received a rude repulse, solely on account of their anxiety duly to aid the administration of justice. Will this encourage others ? . . .

“The functions of the Sheriff and the Judge are as distinct as those of the Judge and the Jury. The Sheriff must keep the Court of the County open, must prevent disorder, and must instantly suppress it if it arise. But the Judge cannot administer his functions unless the Court is kept open to all the County ; and, instead of its being in his power to close the Court, it is his bounden duty to see that where he is sitting is the lawful and open Court of the County, and to call upon the Sheriff to make it so, should he find it otherwise. Hence the High Sheriff of Surrey, however embarrassing, under the circumstances before-named, had become his position, had the imperative duty cast upon him at the last Assizes to keep the Court open. This duty he fulfilled ; and the fulfilment of it the Judges of Assize have taken upon themselves to call an Act of ‘Contempt,’ while they do not venture to attempt, again, to overrule the fact of the Court being an Open Court.”

A LETTER ADDRESSED TO THE MAGISTRATES OF THE COUNTY
OF SURREY BY WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, SHERIFF

“ To the Magistrates of the County of Surrey

“WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING,
January 1861.

“My LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,—The misunderstanding with Her Majesty’s Justices, during the late Guildford Assizes, and the imposition of a heavy fine on me at the will and pleasure of those learned Judges, are matters that have doubtless engaged your attention. And though no public demonstration of opinion has taken place, yet knowing as I do, from many communications that I have received, that the County has not looked unmoved upon those proceedings, but that, on the contrary, one general feeling of amazement has pervaded all classes in Surrey, and that

there is a desire to know the real facts of the case (facts somewhat overclouded by the misrepresentations which have been studiously circulated), I venture to break the silence that I had imposed on myself. In deference, therefore, to the many who have requested me to give them a true and faithful account of those occurrences, and in justice to myself, I proceed to make a communication to the County in the manner that seems to me the most regular and becoming, through the medium of a letter, addressed to the magisterial body.

“And in thus addressing you, I am emboldened by the reflection that several of your number having served in the capacity of Sheriff, have a just appreciation of the nature of the duties appertaining to that office; further, as several of you served on the Grand Jury at Guildford, and were witnesses of a portion of the scenes to which it is my painful duty to allude, you will be able, in some degree, to test the accuracy of my statements. Let me then, without further preface, briefly recapitulate the circumstances that led to the misunderstanding with the Judges. It was on August 2 that Mr. Justice Blackburn, as one of Her Majesty’s Justices of Assize for the Home Circuit, opened the commission at Guildford in due form. On the following day, August 3, his colleague, the Lord Chief Justice, arrived, and the Courts were opened at 10 a.m., Mr. Justice Blackburn presiding in the Crown Court. After the usual forms had been gone through, the names of the gentlemen who had been summoned to serve on the Grand Jury were called over, and twenty-four having answered to their names, these twenty-four were then duly sworn. Here I may be permitted to mention that it had been represented to me by my Deputy Sheriff, Mr. Abbott, that usually the attendance of Grand Jurymen at Guildford had been scanty. I therefore had taken special pains to secure a good attendance, and passing beyond the circle of the Magistracy rather more than is usual, had summoned such gentlemen as I thought would be likely to attend, and many who had never been summoned before received a summons on this occasion. The result was that instead of a scanty attendance there was an un-

usually large attendance (not less than fifty), and many of these gentlemen had come, as I well knew, at great personal inconvenience to themselves. One gentleman had travelled all the way from Clifton the day before. They came disregarding their own personal interests or pleasure; they came, not out of 'compliment' to me, but to discharge a public duty and to serve their Queen and Country in what the *Times* described as a 'thankless and unremunerative office'; and, except the twenty-four who stood first on the list, they had not even the satisfaction of answering to their name in Court. Just before the Judge was preparing to deliver his charge to the Grand Jury, I made mention to him, most respectfully, of this unusually large attendance, and I suggested that a word of acknowledgment from his Lordship would be gratifying to the County, and might have the effect of inducing a good attendance on future occasions. I further mentioned that the attendance at Guildford had usually been scanty. Was there anything unreasonable in my request? Is it an unprecedented proceeding that a Judge should compliment a County for an unusual attendance of Grand Jurymen, or should censure a County for a defective attendance? No; on this point I confidently appeal to your recollections. I have myself heard a learned Judge perform this graceful act; nothing is more common or more befitting. In making the request I had, as Sheriff, a public object in view. I thought that dismissal without acknowledgment might deter gentlemen from attending on a future occasion, while a gracious word from the presiding Judge might encourage them to come forward with the same zeal and goodwill in future years. Surely a request made on public grounds and couched in respectful language—surely such a request, so preferred, merited, if not acquiescence, at least an answer. What was the reception it met with from Mr. Justice Blackburn? He listened to me, answered nothing, charged the Grand Jury, briefly commenting on the cases they had to consider, and concluded his address without condescending to allude to the matter to which I had drawn his attention.

"Unable to comprehend the meaning of this disdain, I

ventured, still observing the same respectful language and manner, to remark to the Judge that I regretted that he had not done me the honour to notice my suggestion.

“He replied with considerable asperity, and concluded by saying, ‘Pray, Mr. High Sheriff, do those gentlemen who are not required to serve on the Grand Jury expect to dine with us?’ (the Judges).

“I assured him that they had no such expectation, but that they would have been glad of a word of acknowledgment. These gentlemen therefore left the town, and I felt ashamed of having given them so much trouble; and I took care to let them know that I had in vain requested the Judge to thank them for their attendance.

“Well, from this moment I can safely say (and I appeal to all who were present in Court to bear witness to the truth of my assertion) that during the whole of the memorable morning nothing could have been more unbecoming than the demeanour of Mr. Justice Blackburn. Indeed, both Judges, as if by concert or compact, abused the Courts in most unmeasured terms. ‘This is a barn,’ said the Lord Chief Justice; ‘it’s a disgrace to the county.’ ‘I cannot hear,’ exclaimed Mr. Justice Blackburn. ‘Why don’t the Sheriff’s officers keep order? This Court is a disgrace to the gentlemen of the county! Where are the Sheriff’s officers? There’s so much talking in the Court that I must clear the Court if the noise continues.’ I may observe here, with regard to the Courts at Guildford, that they have been very unjustly disparaged, both in the newspapers and by the Judges; they are capacious and substantial buildings; and we have the valuable testimony of Mr. Henry Avory, Deputy Clerk of Assize, to the fact that the fittings of the Crown Court left nothing to be desired. But suppose it were otherwise, is it dignified for Judges to revile the gentlemen of the county in open Court? Would it not have been better to have said, in charging the Grand Jury, ‘Gentlemen, I congratulate the county on the numerous attendance, but I cannot congratulate you on the Courts of Justice; and I hope you will see the propriety of improving the present structures, or erecting new ones.’ This, however, is a matter of taste; but in accusing

the people of disorderly behaviour the Judge was guilty of a graver offence than any breach of decorum. The accusation (I hesitate not to say it) was an unjust reflection on the people of Surrey. It is true there was a noise, but it is equally true that that noise proceeded from the High Street and the public thoroughfare that runs by the side of the Court ; it did not proceed from the people within the Court. I pointed out to several persons in Court, and among others the gentleman who officiated as the Judge's marshal, that there was no talking in Court, and that his Lordship was acting under an erroneous impression. Determined evidently to maintain his aggressive attitude, the presiding Judge appeared to be by no means a bright example of order in the Court. I speak confidently on this point, because I watched the people and their countenances, and I am perfectly ready to make a solemn declaration (as my officers have already done) to the fact that perfect quiet prevailed in the Court while the Judge was indulging in these complaints.

“ Presently I heard the order given, ‘ Officers, clear the Court.’ I borrow from the *Parliamentary Remembrancer* a very accurate account of what followed.

“ ‘ The Judge ordered that the part of the Court between the steps and the highway should be cleared, and the gates closed. He did not make his complaint to the Sheriff, and request his interference, as would have been the regular course if there had been any real cause of complaint, but gave this order himself. The part in question was cleared, and the gates were closed. The part of the raised Court which is appropriated to the public still remained filled by the public. Presently the Judge again complained of noise ; and again, without any reference to the Sheriff, and while the public then present were perfectly quiet, he ordered this part also of the Court to be cleared. This order also was obeyed, and with some difficulty ; and, for the first time in the history of an English Court of Justice, the entire part thus appropriated to the public was forcibly cleared of the public, and the gates were locked against the access of either those same people or any other of the public, to the part of

the Court appropriated to public use' (*Parliamentary Remembrancer*, No. 82).

"Thus I had the mortification of seeing the people of Surrey, during the trial of a prisoner, forcibly ejected from their own Court, thrust out at the point of the javelin by Sheriff's officers, reluctantly obeying the orders of a Judge, who thus put an affront both on the county and on the Sheriff.

"I request that you will here refer to the plan of the Court. The only portion of the Court now left open was the official portion; there was an entrance for the Judge and Sheriff; there was also a double door at the side, on one compartment of which was labelled 'For Counsel and Attorneys,' and on the other, 'For Witnesses.' It is pretended by some that this double door was a public door, and that, therefore, the public were not excluded, and could enter the Court; they forget, however, that this door has never been regarded as a public entrance; it is an official entrance for counsel, attorneys, and witnesses; though the javelinman appointed to guard the door might, as a matter of courtesy, admit a few well-dressed and respectable inhabitants of the town; this entrance, I repeat, has never been intended for the general public; indeed, it could not well be otherwise. The admission of the public into the official portion of the Court would lead to great inconvenience, and seriously interrupt the proceedings.

"In fact, the officer stationed to guard this door had much trouble in preventing an intrusion into the official portion of the Court. He had repeatedly to ask the question, 'Are you an attorney or a witness? Have you any business in Court?'—for the public, excluded from the regular entrance, thronged about this door. All this increased the noise, and this increase in the noise was thus owing to the act of the Judge himself. Another consequence of the harsh and inconsiderate proceeding of the Judge tended also to aggravate the evil of which he complained. By a well-known physical law, sound travels with far greater intensity over a smooth than over an unequal surface; and so, when the public part of the Court had been emptied of people, the noises in the High Street, passing over the level stone pavement,

were far more troublesome than when they were deadened and attenuated by a body of men occupying the floor of the Court. Now there was a distinct reverberation, and, consequently, augmented disturbance. Soon afterwards, on quitting the Court, having perceived the discontent and heard the murmurs of the people outside, I mentioned to several gentlemen my own dissatisfaction, and added, that if, on discharging the Grand Jury, the Judge should still omit to acknowledge the numerous attendance, I would myself repair the omission. With this intention, I returned to the Court and took my proper place; presently the Grand Jurymen, having finished their labours, came into Court, and the Judge discharged them, concluding with these words: 'And, gentlemen, I thank you for your attendance.' Hereupon I endeavoured to add, 'And I beg leave, also, to thank those gentlemen who attended to serve on the Grand Jury, but whose services were not required.' But ere I had got through more than two or three words, I was peremptorily ordered to sit down. On my still persisting, the Judge, said, 'Sit down, Mr. High Sheriff, or I'll fine you.' On my still persisting, he said, 'Mr. High Sheriff, I fine you £500. Let the fine be recorded.'

"Still I endeavoured to finish the sentence; on which these words were uttered, accompanied by a gesture of command, 'Sit down, or I'll order you into custody.' I then sat down, and the Judge concluded with these words: 'This is intolerable.' To which I rejoined, '*It is intolerable.*'

"After remaining a short time in Court, I left, and conferred with the gentlemen of the Grand Jury, to whom I explained the circumstances, and requested the benefit of their counsel and advice. One and all they most kindly and courteously expressed their sympathy, and it was most gratifying to see that they determined to stand by me, and in return I placed myself entirely in their hands. A communication ensued with the Lord Chief Justice, and finally I was advised to tender an apology to the Judge on account of my alleged irregularity in not sitting down when he ordered me to do so. A form of apology was drawn up, and submitted to the Lord Chief Justice, who suggested an addition. To

this I assented, and then the foreman of the Grand Jury, accompanied by one or two other gentlemen, took the paper to Mr. Justice Blackburn for his approval. He looked over it, but I am informed that he appeared to suppose I wanted the fine to be remitted. Had I imagined that the Judge had the notion that I was prompted by a mercenary motive to make the apology, of course the apology would not have been made ; as it was, I came into Court, and read it publicly, and received in reply a severe reprimand. The apology was as follows, and the Lord Chief Justice's addition to the paper as originally drawn up is distinguished by italics :

“ ‘ I have to express my regret that, in my anxiety that the large attendance of magistrates and county gentlemen who came to serve on the Grand Jury should be acknowledged, I was led into the irregularity of addressing them in the presence of your Lordship in open Court, and I beg leave to assure your Lordship that it was far from my intention to treat the Court or your Lordship with disrespect, *and if anything I said or did conveyed that impression to your Lordship's mind, I beg leave to express my sincere regret.*’

“ Having finished reading the written apology, I then added of my own accord the following words : ‘ And I thank your Lordship for granting me permission to acknowledge the error, which on reflection I perceive that I have committed.’

“ How was this apology received by the Judge who had just before threatened to imprison me for an act which, even in his view, was but an informality, deserving a very slight rebuke ? I borrow from the *Times* of August 4, 1860, the report of his answer : ‘ Mr. Justice Blackburn stated that he had no personal feeling, but must respect the dignity of the Court, and could not allow any improper interruptions to the business of the Assize.’

“ His Lordship then added, ‘ Let the fine be remitted,’ and the affair terminated.

“ In the same impression of the *Times* from which I have just quoted there appeared a leading article written with great ability, and drawing the public attention to this unusual scene.

“ I wish, however, to correct an erroneous impression

which has prevailed. Allusion was made by the *Times* to a report that the Judge had written a letter to me, offering to remit the fine, and that I had replied by sending him a cheque for £500. It is quite true, as the *Times* stated, that such a report was current in Guildford, but it is equally true that the report was destitute of any foundation. No private communication passed between the Judge and me; nothing occurred but what I have narrated.

“Having set myself right as to this matter, let me make a passing allusion to a part of the Judge’s conduct wherein I think he has been too severely censured. I have pleasure in saying that I entirely exculpate him from the charge of assaulting me in open Court. The gesture used was, as I have said, a gesture of command, and though I must complain of the Judge’s imperious behaviour, I must frankly state that he is not liable to this imputation.

“I have mentioned that when the Judge had finished his reprimand, he said, ‘The fine is remitted,’ or ‘Let the fine be remitted.’ Surely this is an admission of the illegality of the fine; surely no penalty duly recorded can be remitted at the pleasure of a Judge. The power of Judges is, or ought to be, limited by their commission, and the prerogative of pardon belongs to the Sovereign alone.

“If my view be correct, then in one and the same day Mr. Justice Blackburn contrived to trench upon the prerogative of the Crown, the dignity of the Sheriff, and the rights of the people.

“On Saturday, August 4, the Judges were again presiding, but the public still remained barred out of the Crown Court. And this exclusion continued until Monday, the 13th August, when, by announcing to the public the reopening of the Court, I drew down on my head another political thunderbolt, aimed this time by the skilful hand of the Lord Chief Justice.

“And here again I must request your attention to my statement of the facts as they actually occurred.

“During the period (from August 3 to August 13) I quietly performed the usual duties of a Sheriff, and I had daily the honour of attending Mr. Justice Blackburn

into Court (if that can be called a Court from which the public are excluded). But it may be asked, Why did you not interfere? Why did you not remonstrate? By remaining in Court even for a short time, you made yourself a party to the proceedings of which you complain; you have, in fact, given a tacit consent to the exclusion of the public. Further, it was almost insinuated that there was a want of candour in waiting so long before proceeding to act. With regard to the last insinuation, let me say that my intercourse with the Judges during this interval was slight, and I could not with any degree of self-respect make any private communication to Mr. Justice Blackburn. I could not subject myself a second time to the humiliation of having a suggestion treated with contempt. But with regard to the first charge, I must admit that, by my silence and my presence, I did in fact acquiesce in the exclusion of the public; but mine was an unwilling and unwitting acquiescence. Having been once humiliated in the presence of the county, I felt it necessary to be cautious, and to be sure that the rights of the public had really been infringed, before attempting to vindicate those rights. Moreover, I was but little in Court, and every day I expected that the Judge would see the propriety of readmitting the public. Disappointed in this expectation, and uncertain how far the Judge might be warranted in law, I wrote to a friend on Wednesday, August 8, in these words: 'On Saturday, when the Court opened, the people were not admitted; and this exclusion continued during Monday, the 6th inst., during the whole of Tuesday (yesterday), and at this moment,' etc.

"On Thursday, August 9, having been excused from further attendance on the Judges, I took my departure from Guildford, and on the very next day received an answer from the friend to whom I had written, and who is a very competent and learned legal authority. From his answer, dated August 9, I quote the following words: 'The clearing of the Court is new to me, and is very startling. It is utterly illegal. It is a fatal step if it be let pass unchallenged.' In my reply (dated August 11), I wrote: 'Something may yet be done to assert the rights of the people and Sheriff, by

insisting on the opening of the Court now illegally closed to the people by order of this Judge. Can there be any recent statute giving the Judge the power of closing the Court ? ’

“ These extracts are merely quoted in order to show, firstly, that it was not till the day after my leaving Guildford that I became certain that an illegality had been committed ; secondly, that so far from my interference having been a sudden resolve, the whole matter was with me a subject of anxious deliberation during the week.

“ Being now convinced that his Lordship had disregarded the law, I was determined, not only to reopen the Court, but to enter a public protest against the exclusion. It occurred to me, after much deliberation, that the protest should be embodied in a proclamation. I accordingly drew up such a paper, and submitted it to the friend whom I had consulted on the legal question. He made some alterations, advising that the proclamation should be drawn with firmness, but still with great moderation of language. At the same time I sent instructions to the javelin-men and the Under Sheriff, which instructions will be found in the Appendix. To the javelin-men, besides the public instructions which they were to show if called upon, I also gave private instructions, and these too I have thought it fair to produce. It will be seen that every provision was made against the occurrence of disorder in Court. At the same time, if the Judge made any attempt to continue the exclusion of the public, the Under Sheriff and the javelin-men were to retire, and not to re-enter the Court till the people were readmitted.

“ The proclamation ran in these words :

“ ‘ *To the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the County of Surrey*

“ ‘ GENTLEMEN,—On Friday, the 3rd of August, Mr. Justice Blackburn, in my presence, but without addressing himself to me, ordered that part of the Court which is appropriated to the public to be cleared, at a time when perfect quietness prevailed among the public, who were there

present according to custom. From that time the public have been barred out from the Court where Mr. Justice Blackburn presides, and the prisoners have been tried and heard without the possibility of the law being fulfilled, which requires that "so many as will or can" shall "come so near as to hear." As your Sheriff, and feeling that the general dissatisfaction is well grounded, it is my duty to record my protest against this unlawful proceeding; and I have given directions that the Court shall be opened again to the public, according to the custom and the law. All persons, so long as they conduct themselves with decorum, have a lawful right to be present in Court; and I hereby prohibit my officers from aiding and abetting any attempt to bar out the public from free access to the Court.

" ' I am, Gentlemen, your faithful servant,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN,

Sheriff.'

" The words quoted in the proclamation are from Smith's *Commonwealth*. My orders were admirably carried into effect: the proclamation was posted, not in the Court, but fronting the High Street, on the outside of the pillars (marked in the plan T.T.T.), and also on various other public places in the town. The public again appeared in Court, and I learned with pleasure that they conducted themselves with the same perfect order and decorum as on August 3, when they had been so unwarrantably turned out. Nobody ventured to interfere with the public, and so far all was well; but rumours reached me of an impending storm. There were tidings of telegraphic messages, and mysterious councils. As the day wore on, I sent to Guildford to direct my officers (now that my object had been accomplished) to remove the proclamation, and this was carried into effect. Nothing more happened till about 11 p.m., when on approaching my house I found a carriage waiting before the door. Who could this late visitor be? It proved to be no less a personage than the tipstaff of the Lord Chief Justice, who had not waited long, and who now handed to me a letter addressed to myself, and bearing on the envelope the

word 'Immediate.' The contents of the letter were as follows :

“ ‘ HOME CIRCUIT, GUILDFORD,
August 13, 1860.

“ ‘ SIR,—We, Her Majesty's Judges of Assize for the Home Circuit, hereby require your attendance in the Crown Court at this place to-morrow morning, at the sitting of the Court, to answer for a contempt of Court in publishing a handbill bearing your signature of the date of the 11th of the present month.

“ ‘ A. E. COCKBURN,
COLIN BLACKBURN.

“ ‘ William John Evelyn,
High Sheriff of the County of Surrey.’

“ I requested the ‘signor of the night’ to wait till I had written an answer, and presently returning, gave him the following letter :—

“ ‘ WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING,
August 13, 1860.

“ ‘ MY LORDS,—In obedience to your Lordships' requisition, I shall attend at the Crown Court to-morrow at the opening of the Court.

“ ‘ I have the honour to be,
Your Lordships' obedient, humble servant,
WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN,
Sheriff of Surrey.

“ ‘ To Her Majesty's Judges of Assize,
Home Circuit, Guildford.’

“ For me to have disregarded this summons would clearly have been most imprudent, as such a course might have exposed me to a charge of contumacy ; for the right of the Judges to command my attendance cannot be questioned. Resolved not to put myself in the wrong, soon after the receipt of the summons I travelled on the same night to Guildford (that town being about nine miles distant from my house), and was present at 9 a.m., when the Court opened. In a few moments my carriage brought the Judges, who entered the Court, and the Lord Chief Justice, without recognising my obeisance, took his seat. Instead of at-

tempting to describe in my own words the scene that ensued, I prefer to take the account given in one of our local papers. Although some slight inaccuracies might be corrected, and a fuller report given by a comparison of different journals, it is safer to trust to one faithful and detailed account, rather than to incur the imputation of dressing up a narrative.

“ From the ‘ Surrey Standard ’ of August 18, 1860.

“ ‘ On Thursday morning the Lord Chief Justice accompanied Mr. Justice Blackburn to the Crown Court, where the High Sheriff was in attendance, and the room was speedily filled with members of the Bar and others, all evidently much excited by the novel event which they were about to witness. The learned Judges took their seats on the Bench, and Mr. Evelyn, in his official costume, stood on their left hand.

“ ‘ THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE (to MR. EVELYN).—I have to ask you whether this bill, which bears your name, was published by your authority ?

“ ‘ THE HIGH SHERIFF.—It was, my Lord.

“ ‘ THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.—Then, sir, as we consider the publication of this handbill a gross contempt of Court, I have to call upon you to offer any reason why the Court should not proceed to punish you for that contempt.

“ ‘ THE HIGH SHERIFF.—My Lord, I stand here in the painful position of having been summoned to answer a charge of contempt of Court founded on this handbill, the publication of which I cannot deny. I received the summons to appear before your Lordships at my own house, at 11 o’clock last night. (The High Sheriff here hesitated for a few moments, and then proceeded)—Pardon me if I hesitate, oppressed as I am by the novelty of my position.

“ ‘ THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.—If you wish more time for consideration, do not hesitate to ask for it.

“ ‘ THE HIGH SHERIFF.—No, my Lord. I thank you for your courtesy, but I will not interfere with the proceedings of the Court ; anything I omit to say I will trust to your Lordship’s kindness to supply. Permit me to explain the circumstances which led to this step. On the 3rd of August

this Court was cleared by order of the learned Judge then presiding. At that time I doubted whether it was a legal step to take ; and when I sat here, day after day, and saw the Court cleared of people, I felt great doubts whether the learned Judge was not exceeding his duty. I ought, perhaps, to have remonstrated at the time. I ought, I believe, to have gone further. It has occurred to me that it was part of my duty, as High Sheriff, to interfere and prevent what I considered an illegal proceeding. (Some persons in the body of the Court cried "Hear, hear," but silence was immediately restored by the officials.) In not taking that step I exposed myself to a charge of vacillation and inconsistency. But let it be remembered, I have had some painful experience of the small extent of my power to address this Court, and anything I might have said then would have been open to the imputation of contempt quite as much as this document. I sat here, day after day, till last Thursday, when your Lordships were kind enough to excuse my further attendance. The day after that, I became fully convinced in my mind of the illegality of the learned Judge's step in clearing the Court, and that verdicts taken in the absence of an audience were not valid in law. I then no longer hesitated to determine that some step on my part was necessary, but the question was, What step ? It suggested itself to me to come into Court to interfere personally, and to insist that the public should be admitted ; but a due regard to propriety, and a wish to avoid anything which might offend the decency of the Court, led me to give up that idea. I then began to think what other course I should pursue, as I determined that something should be done. By sitting in Court with people turned out of it, I had implicated myself in that proceeding, and I wished to correct my own error—though I was only implicated by suffering the Court to be cleared in my presence ; I wished to enter a public protest against such a proceeding, in order that it might never be drawn into a precedent. I then reverted to this step, well advised or ill advised, it is not for me to say. The handbill contains an address from the High Sheriff to the county of which he is the head ; and surely a High Sheriff has a right to address the people on a

matter which so much concerns them as their right to be present in a Court of Justice. When I heard it said that this document was contempt of Court, I asked myself how it could be ? If I refused to obey the lawful orders of a Court or disturbed its proceedings, I can see how that might be contempt of Court, but—and I speak with great humility and submission in this presence on legal points—I venture to think that a placard posted on the walls relating to the conduct of a learned Judge cannot be a contempt of Court. For, if a person at a public meeting were to reflect upon a Judge's conduct, I presume that his speech might just as well be considered contempt of Court as this writing. On looking over the handbill from beginning to end, I can see nothing which, in my opinion, bears the imputation which has been cast upon it. The concluding words merely prohibit my officers from aiding and abetting what I considered—and still consider—an unlawful attempt to exclude the public from the Court. But I will abridge my observations, though I feel that I have not done justice to the cause I would fain advocate. There is one point, however, on which allow me to touch ; and I trust the observations I am about to make will be received kindly and courteously by your Lordship. Though I may have been injudicious, though this last step of mine may be wrong—but I do not think it wrong—yet let not my motives be impugned, for they were honest motives. I have acted with the greatest deliberation. I came to the conclusion that a wrong had been done, and that this was the best way of remedying it. I have been much pained by hearing it hinted that any feeling of mine against the learned Judge, who now sits on your Lordship's right, led to the production of the handbill. If so, it would be an unworthy act, but I declare, on the honour of a gentleman, that nothing of the kind actuated my conduct. When the learned Judge kindly gave me leave to depart on Thursday, he behaved with the greatest courtesy and kindness, and we separated with good feeling on both sides. And let no unworthy motive be imputed—my object was to assert the principle that no Judge of this land has a right to clear an audience from any Court of Justice

(marked applause, which was, of course, suppressed), and that if any Judge commands a Sheriff or his officers to do so, those officers and that Sheriff are bound to disobey the unlawful mandate.

“ ‘The High Sheriff here sat down for a few moments, but again rose, and said he was prepared to produce evidence of the truth of the allegations contained in the document.

“ ‘MR. JUSTICE BLACKBURN.—There is not the smallest doubt that the Court was cleared.

“ ‘The learned Judges then conferred together for some moments, after which the Lord Chief Justice, in a very solemn tone, and amidst the deepest silence, proceeded to address Mr. Evelyn. His Lordship said :

“ ‘ “Mr. High Sheriff, Her Majesty’s Judges of Assize have now a very painful and distressing, but at the same time plain and straightforward duty to discharge. We cannot entertain the slightest doubt that you have been guilty of a most serious and aggravated contempt of this Court. Mistaken as to your law and as to the course which you ought to pursue, and acting, I will give you credit for believing, with honest motives, yet in ignorance, and with rashness and inconsiderate haste, you have placed yourself in the position which you now occupy. It is perfectly true that Courts in this country are, and I hope they always will be, open to the public, but that rule must be taken with this exception—their primary purpose is the efficient administration of justice, and so far as the exclusion of persons from any part is necessary to that object the public must submit for the sake of the greater good. In this most inconvenient Court the noise from the street was found by my learned brother to be very much aggravated by that which proceeded from the lower part of the Court. It did not arise from the disorderly conduct of the people assembled there ; but as no seats were provided for them, much movement naturally ensued, and a stone floor (as we understood) added to the disturbance. Moreover, the prisoners’ bar intervened and separated the lower portion of the audience from the immediate supervision of the Court. My learned brother found himself unable to hear

the witnesses and prisoners, and from this motive, and this alone—for the proper conduct of business—he directed the lower part of the Court to be cleared. The necessity for that step arose from the defective construction and arrangement of this Court. Your representation of the case goes forth to the public with a perversion of the truth, though not an intentional one, I believe, that the whole Court was cleared. A portion only was cleared, the rest was occupied by the public, and they were freely admitted. Now as to the law, there cannot be the shadow of a doubt that for the purposes of the due administration of justice the Judge has a perfect right to order any portion of the Court to be cleared, if necessary for the proper conduct of business. That right has never been questioned, and all who are acquainted with the practice of the Law Courts know that many Judges of undoubted probity have acted upon it. This exclusion took place, as you yourself have stated, the first day of the Assizes, and continued till yesterday morning. During the whole of that time you were in communication with the Judges, and never suggested to them the propriety of again admitting the public. You left us as far back as Thursday last, having first requested and obtained our consent to your departure ; we parted on perfectly friendly terms, and you had an opportunity then of speaking to us on this subject, but you went away without making any suggestion. During the whole week neither my brother nor myself ever heard a whisper as to any discontent occasioned by the exclusion of the public from a portion of the Court.”

“ ‘ The HIGH SHERIFF.—Am I allowed to speak ?

“ ‘ THE LORD CHIEF JUSTICE. — We have fully heard what you have deemed it advisable to say, and you must now allow me to proceed. After having left this place and divested yourself, as I may say, of the functions of High Sheriff, the Court and Judge, on proceeding to transact business yesterday morning, were astonished to find placarded throughout the town, and affixed to the walls of their halls, a handbill, in which you not only call in question the lawfulness and propriety of my learned brother’s order, but openly declare that you had directed his commands to be disobeyed by your

officers ! And you did this when you were from town, and could not possibly judge of the circumstances which might arise here. By directing your officers, who are under our command, not to keep a portion of the Court clear, you gave them positive orders to disobey the learned Judge ; you have greatly mistaken the law and your duty. If a learned Judge give an inexpedient and improper command, there is a tribunal before which he may be called ; but it is not for you, his officer, his minister—you who ought to be the servant of the administration of justice—to stand forth as the organ of disobedience, and show to others a disobedient and rebellious spirit. Believe me, you altogether forget with whom you have to do. As individuals we are nothing, but as the ministers of justice you and the public are bound to treat us with respect. Judges are the representatives not only of law and order, but of the Sovereign herself—the commands they put forth they put forth in her name, and insult and contumely to them are insult and contumely to her. This act of yours was an act of insult and contumely. You, or any man, have a right to call in question the conduct of a Judge, if you do so in an appropriate manner ; but you act wrongly if, when in this Court, where the administration of justice is carried on in the name of the Sovereign, you take upon yourself to declare in a tone of loud and ostentatious defiance that you will disobey the Judge, and instruct your ministers to do the same. You have put the matter upon such an issue as renders it impossible for us to deal with it as I should have wished—in a mild spirit. I quite acquit you of anything unworthy of an English gentleman—of any intention to offer an indignity to my learned brother in consequence of anything which has passed between you. You *are* an English gentleman, and incapable of anything mean, sordid, or ungentlemanly ; but you have put this case upon the issue whether the High Sheriff or the Judge is the superior power in a Court of Justice. That question having been raised, you stand firm by it, instead of acknowledging you were mistaken. We have no other course to pursue than to meet the question in such a way as shall fully vindicate the superiority of the Judge. We can do no less than sentence you to be fined £500.

“ ‘ The fine was recorded, the Lord Chief Justice proceeded to the other Court, and the business of the day commenced.

“ ‘ After a few whispers had passed between Mr. Justice Blackburn and Mr. Evelyn, the High Sheriff left the Court.

“ ‘ The prisoners’ bar, to which the Lord Chief Justice referred, was removed at the conclusion of the criminal business, and the whole of the Court continued open to the public on Tuesday as on the previous day. The placards which were posted on the fronts of the halls on Monday had been carefully removed before the proceedings commenced on Tuesday morning.’

“ Before proceeding to comment on the speech of the Lord Chief Justice, I will just mention, for your satisfaction, what the mysterious ‘whispers’ were which are said to have passed between Mr. Justice Blackburn and myself. His Lordship merely said, ‘Mr. High Sheriff, I wish to say one word to you—I entirely acquit you of having acted from a personal feeling against me,’ or words to that effect. To this I replied by thanks and by asking if my further attendance might be excused; whereupon I received an answer in the affirmative; and this was all that passed between the learned Judge and me; and, I may add, that during my speech Mr. Justice Blackburn several times bowed a courteous assent to such of my observations as had reference to the motives that had actuated my conduct.

“ Now I will proceed to comment on the speech of the Lord Chief Justice of England, who certainly, on this occasion, proved himself fully sensible of the advantage of having the last word in a controversy. Knowing that I could not reply, he began by making a grave misstatement.

“ Misapprehending the ground of my complaint, he states that I had declared that the *whole Court* was cleared. And on this perversion of my language he proceeded to erect an edifice of invective and denunciation, garnished with all the false glitter of a sophistical rhetoric. My proclamation lay on the desk before him, yet he deigned, he dared, to misquote it. Had he chosen to read it, he might have seen that my words were, not that the ‘whole Court’ was cleared, but

only 'that part of the Court which is appropriated to the public.' To that statement I adhere. Was it then fair and reasonable, first of all, to decline to allow me to produce evidence in support of the allegations contained in my proclamation, and then, abusing the privilege of the last word, not only to declare those allegations to be false, but to pervert and misrepresent their purport? Such artifices may be suitable to a debating club; but surely they are tricks of the forum and the senate which are quite unsuited to the judicial bench.

"That the space appropriated to the public was cleared will be proved by the testimony of my officers, given in the Appendix. With regard to the principle laid down by the Lord Chief Justice, that a Judge has a right to clear a part of a Court of Justice, the country ought to know what are the limits of this power. A whole is made up of parts, and it would seem, that if a Judge has a right to clear any portion of the area of a Court, he may proceed in the exercise of this power until the whole of the Court is cleared. Can this be the law of England? I had supposed, and still suppose, that every Englishman has a lawful right to remain in Court so long as he conducts himself with decorum, and that neither Judge nor Sheriff is justified in keeping the people out of a Court of Justice; though, undoubtedly, it is the duty of a High Sheriff to preserve order, and to eject any person or persons who may interrupt the proceedings. Should there be great and incurable disorder, then the Judge has the undoubted right of adjourning the Court; he may not carry on the proceedings with the public excluded. The Justices of Assize and *Nisi Prius* are empowered by the Statute of 36 Henry VIII, Cap. VI, where a Jury has been reduced in number by challenges, to command the Sheriff to appoint *tales de circumstantibus*, 'such persons of bystanders,' or, in the words of the Act, 'so many of such other able Persons of the said County then present at the said Assize or *Nisi Prius*, as shall make up a full jury.' How could the Sheriff fulfil this command of the Judge if all the bystanders, who had no actual business to transact in the Court, had been already ejected?

“Surely, I need not attempt to show that Courts of Justice in England are open Courts, seeing that even the Lord Chief Justice, in his Guildford speech, was obliged to admit the principle, though with wonderful inconsistency he asserted the right of a Judge to set this principle at defiance. One thing is clear that if this arbitrary power belongs to the Judges of Her Majesty’s Superior Courts, it must belong to all Judges, and must even belong to Magistrates when acting in their judicial capacity.

“Now, there is a case which seems very much in point ; the case of *Collier v. Hickes* (Barnewall and Adolphus’s Reports, vol. ii. page 663), argued and determined in the Court of King’s Bench, in 1831. In this case the plaintiff, Collier, an Attorney, brought an action of trespass against four Magistrates for an assault ; and this alleged assault consisted in his forcible ejection from a police court at Cheltenham, pending the trial of a prisoner before those Magistrates. It was pleaded, on behalf of the Magistrates, that Collier had not quietly remained in Court, as one of the public, but had insisted upon being allowed to act as the prisoner’s advocate. The plea was held good on demurrer, and judgment was given for the defendants, but these Judges (no mean authorities) were most careful, on giving judgment, to preserve inviolate the rights of the public ; and I will quote the words of two of them—Lord Tenterden (then Lord Chief Justice of England) and Justice Parke :

“‘TENTERDEN.—This was, undoubtedly, an open Court, *and the public had a right to be present, as in other Courts* ; but whether any persons, and who, shall be allowed to take part in the proceedings, must depend on the discretion of the Magistrates, who, like other Judges, must have the power to regulate the proceedings of their own Courts.

“‘PARKE.—It is impossible to say that all the King’s subjects have a right to act as professional assistants. . . . ALL MAY BE PRESENT, and either of the parties may have a professional assistant to confer and consult with, but not to interfere in the course of the proceedings. The plaintiff having insisted on the right to act as advocate, the defendants were justified in committing the alleged trespass.’

“ Nothing can be clearer than this judgment. The two other Judges, Sir Joseph Littledale and Sir William Taunton, concurred with their learned brothers, and it is clear that if Mr. Collier had remained quietly in Court, without interfering, he would not have been liable to the indignity of being forcibly ejected into the street by two high constables of Cheltenham, or if such an illegal proceeding had been resorted to by the Magistrates, they would have been liable to punishment for an infringement of the law of the land. Will Sir Alexander Cockburn, or any Judge of the realm, contend that there is one law for the Superior Courts, and another law for the Inferior Courts of Judicature ? No ; the same maxims govern all English Courts of Justice—that which would be wrong in a Cheltenham magistrate cannot be right in a Lord Chief Justice ; and I shall show by and bye that both the Judges at Guildford were perfectly aware of the illegality that had been committed in the Crown Court.

“ I will not occupy your time by citing other cases in support of the principle of open Courts. I may remind you, however, that very recently we had a striking proof of the jealousy with which Parliament in our days still guards this precious birthright of the English people. When it was proposed in 1859 (with a view to the interests of public morality), that in certain cases the doors of the new Divorce Court should be closed, the House of Commons decided that it would not, even in this case, and for an object so beneficial, sanction in a single instance the dangerous precedent of excluding the people from a Court of Justice, and the Lords were obliged to yield the point.

“ As an unlearned Englishman, therefore, I am unable to comprehend what the Lord Chief Justice meant when he asserted at Guildford the right of a Judge to eject from a Court any portion of a well-conducted audience. The law of the land declares that the public has as much right to be present as the Judge himself, and, in fact, the law recognises the public as an essential part of the Court.

“ I must now proceed to consider one or two more points touched upon by the Lord Chief Justice. He took me severely to task for not having communicated with the

Judges before leaving Guildford. Let me say, first, that this lecture on politeness comes with no very good grace from one who had abused the Courts, and inveighed against the County, without first making any communications, either to Sheriff, Magistrates, or Grand Jury. In the second place, I must repeat, that unhappily, after what had passed between Mr. Justice Blackburn and myself in reference to the Grand Jury, I could not, with any degree of self-respect, tender to him a private suggestion. No word of regret had come from him, though I continued to treat him with perfect respect, both in public and in private—I am forced to reply to this argument of the Lord Chief Justice by mentioning the fact that Mr. Justice Blackburn never had the civility to express to me one word of regret for the misunderstanding that had taken place, and for his uncourteous conduct on that occasion. And when I am told of my daily intercourse with the Judges, let me say that that intercourse was extremely slight; from the beginning of the Assize there was no cordiality on the part of the Judges, who even deigned to omit the accustomed civility of inviting the Sheriff's chaplain to dinner.

“I must now comment on the employment of the name of Her Majesty, a somewhat irrelevant rhetorical flourish on the part of the Lord Chief Justice; and as Sheriff of Surrey, let me tell him, that the Judge who exceeds his commission, the Judge who excludes Her Majesty's subjects from a Court of Justice, the Judge who punishes not according to law, but at his own arbitrary will and pleasure—that Judge may more properly be said to be guilty of disrespect to the Sovereign than a Sheriff who upholds the law and vindicates the rights of the people. And when it is said that a Sheriff is the minister and officer of the Judge, I deny the propriety of that description of the office. Both Judge and Sheriff are servants of the Crown; both receive their high commissions directly from the Crown; the Sheriff is not appointed by the Judge, cannot be dismissed by him—though inferior in rank to the Judge, he is an essential part of the Court; and it is an insult to the Sheriff and the County when a Judge, without communicating with the Sheriff, in his presence orders his officers to eject the people from the Court. Neither in the warrant which I hold,

nor in the oath of office which I have taken, is there one word to imply that the Sheriff is the minister and officer of the Judge. That he is the servant of the Court is true ; that he is bound to execute the orders of the Court is undoubted ; but the Judge and the Court are not synonymous. A King of France once said that he was the State ; and now it seems that the English Judges say, ' We are the Court.' Why, the Court consists not only of Judge, but Jury, Sheriff, and even the despised Public ; all these are essential elements of an English Court of Justice ; the Judge by himself is nothing ; an unlawful order, either of Judge or Sheriff, should be entirely disregarded and disobeyed. I repeat that the introduction of Her Majesty's name is most uncalled for ; the Judges are not Viceroys ; they have no regal authority, but their office entitles them to all respect so long as they do not attempt to go beyond their commission. The true idea of loyalty is obedience to law ; that Judge and that Sheriff prove themselves to be the most loyal who show the greatest reverence for law and the greatest respect for the rights of Her Majesty's subjects.

" One word more as to a singular charge which the Lord Chief Justice brought against me, that my speech in Court was couched in a tone of ' ostentatious defiance.' I appeal to those present, to the Magistrates, the general public, and the gentlemen of the Bar, whether the few halting sentences which I uttered, in my anxiety and doubt as to the nature of the punishment which was about to fall on me—I ask confidently, whether these sentences were spoken with haughty insolence ? Nay, let any man read the report of my unprepared defence, and say whether the words, as reported, could have betokened aught but the most respectful deference. Having been told beforehand that I should be perhaps degraded from the shrievalty, perhaps struck off the Commission of the Peace, prudence as well as propriety dictated that I should not by an arrogant tone give a fair pretext for such harsh proceedings. In fact, in looking over what I said, I cannot but think that in the anxiety of the moment I went somewhat too far in the direction of submission ; and that I ought to have entered a firmer protest against the arbitrary

proceedings of which I was the victim. But I suppose that, having in his own mind assumed that if I were allowed to speak I should make an inflammatory appeal to the people, and being disappointed in this expectation, the Lord Chief Justice could not resist the temptation of drawing upon his imagination for his facts ; the notion of my insolence seemed at least to give a turn and a roundness to a few sounding periods ; and though it would not be believed in Surrey, yet it might, perhaps, obtain credence in London, and other places, far from the scene of the occurrence and where I myself was unknown. I had no resolve but to bear in silence this and other mis-statements and unfair inferences which the Chief Justice, from the vantage-ground of his position, was able to make with perfect impunity.

“Throughout his observations the Lord Chief Justice scarcely addressed himself to the difficult task of showing the legality of the act against which I had protested, but (if he be rightly reported) he rested his defence of the exclusion upon the fact that the noise of feet against the stone floor prevented the Judge from hearing the witnesses. The reason why he chose to take this ground is obvious. If the people had been excluded for disorderly conduct on the 3rd, that would be no reason for their continued exclusion on the subsequent days of the sitting of the Court ; whereas this plea, of the shuffling of feet, gives a sort of pretext for alleging that the noise was a necessary consequence of the peculiar construction of the Court, and that so a continued exclusion was expedient and needful. This was the plea set up by the Lord Chief Justice ; but Mr. Justice Blackburn’s public complaints of the talking and the noise, and his censure of the Sheriff’s officers for not preserving order in the Court, are entirely inconsistent with the theory of the Lord Chief Justice ; the people were excluded on the ground of disorderly conduct ; the shuffling of feet is merely an afterthought, the ingenious suggestion of an advocate conscious of the weakness of his case.

“On the subject of the posting of my proclamation, the language of the Lord Chief Justice was ambiguous, and the reader of his speech would naturally be led to infer that these proclamations were posted inside the Courts.

This would be an erroneous conclusion, as you will see on reading the written instructions given to my officers. But, besides these written instructions, it so happens that I verbally intimated to them that they were by no means to post the proclamation within the Court. My object was, not to affront the Judge, but to redress a wrong, and to enter a protest against an unlawful aggression on the rights of the public. Some of the proclamations were (as I have already said) posted on the outside of the pillars facing the High Street, but I repeat that none were posted within the Court. And having, at the conclusion of his speech (a speech uttered in a solemn and almost funereal tone, like that in which a capital sentence is passed upon a criminal), laid down the principle that a Judge is superior to a Sheriff, a principle which I never presumed to call in question, the Lord Chief Justice left the Court in the same haughty manner in which he had entered. The fine was recorded; the scene had been carefully prepared—in some respects it reflected credit on the tact and management of the Lord Chief Justice;—but one thing was omitted—the act for which I had been denounced and sentenced was not reversed: **THE PUBLIC STILL REMAINED IN COURT.** And why were they allowed to remain? Anyone who refers to the case before cited, of *Collier v. Hickes*, may clearly see that if unoffending persons be forcibly ejected from a Court of Justice by order of the English Judge, those persons may bring an action of assault against him who gives the order. Thus the right of the public was triumphantly vindicated at Guildford; the Crown Court, which had been hermetically sealed to the public until August 13, and had been thrown open by me on that day, was allowed to remain open during the whole of August 13 also, and during the whole of the following day (the day when I was fined, and when the business of the Assize was brought to a close). But in not daring to reverse my act, did not the Judges betray a consciousness of their own false position? The whole proceeding resolves itself into an absurdity, and the extortion of a heavy fine from me has no longer any pretence founded on reason or justice.

“ Again, I may fairly ask why the fine was fixed at so heavy a sum ? Assuming that it was desirable to assert the principle of the absolute power of Judges, and that Sheriffs and their officers are bound to obey any and every order of a presiding Judge, however unlawful ; admitting all this, yet I may be allowed to ask, whether a smaller sum would not have equally served to vindicate the principle contended for ? I have always understood that the amount of punishment should correspond to the heinousness of the crime, and that also the character of a penalty should have a certain relation to the character and nature of the offence. In my case, the Judges acquitted me of any intention to affront them ; they admitted that there was no intentional ‘ insult or contumely ’ ; and, therefore, I submit that, on the showing of the Lord Chief Justice himself, the penalty was greater than the pretended offence. As to the character of the punishment, I may be permitted to remark, that where a High Sheriff fails in providing a proper equipage ; where, by an ill-timed parsimony, he fails in showing a proper attention to the Judges of Assize, who bear a high commission from the Crown—then the imposition of a fine may be fit and proper, though even then it is questionable whether such a fine should be imposed at the arbitrary discretion of a Judge. When, on the other hand, a Sheriff has neglected nothing, has spared no expense to pay due honour to those who bear Her Majesty’s commission, when no man pretends that, until the misunderstanding at Guildford, there was any failure in respect, then, surely, coming after the heavy expenses of the office, a large fine was an unsuitable punishment. But I will charitably suppose that the Lord Chief Justice proceeded on the supposition that all landowners are wealthy, and that it would be rather agreeable to me to pay the money. The notion is a pleasant idea, firmly entertained by some people who ought by this time to know a little more about the agricultural classes of England. Every inheritor of land is, in the eyes of a certain class of writers, a millionaire, even though in many cases those fancied riches may have no more real existence than the jewelled casements of Aladdin’s Palace.

“ On Wednesday, August 15 (the day after I had been sentenced to pay the fine), the House of Commons, being in committee of supply, Mr. Edwin James, the learned Member for Marylebone (on the vote for the expenses of criminal prosecutions being taken), embraced the opportunity of calling the attention of the House to the state of the Courts of Justice at Guildford ; and in the course of the discussion (which will be found in the Appendix), Colonel Fitzstephen French, Member for the County of Roscommon, expressed an opinion that the Judge, in clearing the Crown Court at Guildford, had been guilty of a violation of the law of the land ; but Sir George Lewis, the Home Secretary, on the other hand, defended the conduct of the Judge. On the following day (Thursday, August 16), Colonel French ‘ gave notice, that, in going into committee of supply to-morrow (August 17) he would call the attention of the House to the recent occurrences that had taken place at the Assize at Guildford, and ask the Home Secretary whether he was prepared to lay the correspondence that had taken place on the subject on the table.’

“ Let me here say that this notice of motion was not given at my instigation ; I was not even aware of it, Colonel French having acted on his own responsibility, as an independent Member of Parliament, and without communicating with me ; but having seen the notice in the public journals, I transmitted to Colonel French a statement of facts, and then went down to the House on Friday, the 17th. There, while in the lobby, I was informed by several honourable members that the Government was earnestly pressing Colonel French not to bring on the discussion, and that that gallant gentleman had refused to attend to the suggestion. Several members connected with our county most kindly offered me their counsels, recommending, one and all, that I should second the request of the Government ; and it was intimated to me that the Home Secretary would not be disinclined to give a fair consideration to any application for the remission of the fine. I yielded to these friendly counsels, and sent a verbal message to Colonel French to say that I thought it would be better not to bring

on the discussion. Thereupon, the honourable member came into the lobby, declaring that he would not withdraw the motion 'unless I have it from Mr. Evelyn's own lips that he wishes me to do so.' On my making the request, he consented not to bring the matter forward. Nothing, I am bound to say, could have been more courteous than the conduct of Colonel French; he had placed the notice on the paper from a sense of public duty; I had no right to request him not to fulfil that duty, yet he at once acceded to my expressed wish.

"One member of the House, however, who had advised me to let the debate come on, made this remark: 'Now that there is to be no debate, the fine will not be remitted; had the discussion come on, they would have never dared to enforce it.' The sequel of this narrative will show whether or not the honourable member was justified in his prognostication. On Saturday, the 18th inst., I instructed Mr. Abbot, my Deputy Sheriff, to pay the fine, which he did, on Monday, the 27th inst. Had I resisted it, I should have brought on myself great annoyance and additional expense, and should have had a very unpleasant visit from the Coroner, who (in default of payment) was empowered to seize any articles of furniture, and might even have taken the equipage and horses which had been placed at the disposal of the learned Judges from the beginning to the end of the Assize. After having paid the money, my next object was (if possible) to get it back again; and, with this view, I drew up a memorial to the Lords of Her Majesty's Treasury; and I also felt it to be a public duty to present a petition to the House of Commons, praying the House to define and limit the arbitrary power of fine and imprisonment claimed by our English Judges. Mr. Baillie Cochrane, Member for Honiton, took charge of my petition, and kindly volunteered to put a question to Sir George Lewis on the subject of the remission of the fine. This promise he fulfilled on August 22; and I borrow from the *Times* newspaper of August 23 the report of his question and the Home Secretary's answer.

“ ‘HOUSE OF COMMONS,
“ ‘ *Wednesday, August 22, 1860.*

“ ‘ MR. B. COCHRANE.—I rise to ask the Home Secretary the question of which I have given him private notice, respecting my friend, Mr. Evelyn—the High Sheriff; I wish to know whether, taking into consideration the high character of Mr. Evelyn, and the universal respect entertained for him in the County of Surrey, and also the misapprehension under which he issued the placard, desiring the officers not to close that portion of the Court assigned to the public, in opposition to the commands of the Judge presiding in that Court, the Home Secretary will advise Her Majesty to be graciously pleased to remit the fine of £500, which has been imposed on Mr. Evelyn.

“ ‘ SIR G. LEWIS.—I have no doubt at all of the high character of Mr. Evelyn, the High Sheriff of Surrey, but I must take the liberty of remarking that if it is his wish to approach Her Majesty with any petition for the remission of the fine, the proper mode of making the petition is to address it to the Home Secretary, and not to ask any friend of his, however distinguished, to put a question in this House. Not having received any communication from Mr. Evelyn, and not knowing from his statement that there had been any misapprehension, it is impossible for me to give any opinion whatever, as to the advice which I might, in the event of such a petition being presented, tender to Her Majesty on the subject. I will only say that I have seen the handbill which Mr. Evelyn caused to be placarded in the town, and which I believe he also caused to be distributed by the Sheriff's Officers in the Court, and it certainly appears to me that that placard was of a highly objectionable nature for a High Sheriff, under the circumstances, to distribute. Until I receive some information which leads me to a different conclusion, it seems to me to be clear that the Judges were justified in taking serious notice of the proceedings of the High Sheriff.’

“ ‘ I wish to remark on this answer of Sir George Lewis, that I do not understand on what ground he stated that he

‘believed’ in my having given orders to my officers to distribute the placards in Court. The instructions to my officers, given in the Appendix, show no such order, and it would have been better, before expressing his belief, to ascertain that that belief was well founded. Acting on Sir George Lewis’s hint, and in deference to him, I gave up the idea of memorialising the Treasury, as I had hitherto intended, and, instead, addressed myself to him as Home Secretary, and I herewith subjoin this Memorial, which was left at the Home Office on August 24th.

“ ‘ *To the Right Honourable the Secretary of State for the Home Department*

“ ‘ SIR,—I beg leave most respectfully to draw your attention to the fact, that I, being High Sheriff of the County of Surrey, was, by order of Her Majesty’s Justices of Assize, and at their pleasure, sentenced at the Crown Court at Guildford, on Tuesday, the fourteenth instant, to pay a fine of five hundred pounds, for a supposed contempt of Court, in the publication of a handbill, on Monday, the thirteenth instant. In resorting to the measure, on account of which this grievous fine was imposed, I acted from a sense of public duty, and my object was publicly to vindicate a public right, by announcing to the public their readmittance into a Court from which they had been excluded.

“ ‘ I gave the most strict instructions to guard against any confusion at the Court, and my object having been accomplished, I sent orders to take down the handbills, and this was done accordingly by my officers, and on the following morning (Tuesday, the fourteenth instant), not one handbill was visible.

“ ‘ During the period that has elapsed since I have had the honour of being Sheriff, my constant and earnest endeavour has been to treat Her Majesty’s Justices of Assize with profound respect, and to spare no pains for this purpose ; and I venture to hope that, considering the circumstances of the present case, you may feel yourself justified in advising

Her Majesty graciously to remit the fine that has been inflicted.

“ ‘ I am, Sir,

Your Obedient Humble Servant,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN,

Sheriff of the County of Surrey.

“ ‘ WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING,

Thursday, August 23, 1860.’

“ ‘ The Petition to the House of Commons was in the following words :—

“ ‘ *To the Honourable the Commons of Great Britain and Ireland in Parliament assembled*

“ ‘ *The humble Petition of the High Sheriff of Surrey*

“ ‘ SHEWETH,—That your petitioner was on Tuesday, the fourteenth day of this present month of August, eighteen hundred and sixty, by Her Majesty’s Justices of Assize for the Home Circuit, and at their will and pleasure, sentenced in the Crown Court at Guildford to pay a fine of five hundred pounds, for a supposed contempt of Court, in the publication of a handbill on Monday, August the thirteenth.

“ ‘ That your Petitioner, from the time of his appointment to the office of Sheriff, has intended and earnestly endeavoured to treat Her Majesty’s Justices of Assize with profound respect ; and until the occurrences which preceded the imposition of this fine he has reason to believe that his conduct has met with their approval.

“ ‘ That in publishing the said handbill your Petitioner meant only publicly to vindicate a public right, by announcing to the public their readmission into a Court from which they had been excluded for some days.

“ ‘ That as soon as your Petitioner was advised that this exclusion of the public was unlawful, he thought that as Sheriff he was bound to interfere, and when the object proposed had been accomplished, he sent orders to his officers to take down the handbills, and this was done accordingly on the same evening, so that on Tuesday, the fourteenth instant, not one handbill was visible.

“ ‘ Your Petitioner, therefore, having been fined for a

contempt of Court on account of the publication of this handbill, humbly prays your Honourable House to take into your consideration how far Her Majesty's Justices of Assize should exercise an arbitrary and unlimited power of fining and imprisoning Sheriffs of Counties, and whether it may not tend to the public advantage that some measure should be passed declaring and defining the law of the land respecting the right of exercising this formidable power.

“ ‘ And your Petitioner, as in duty bound, will ever pray, etc.
(Signed) WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN, *Sheriff.*’ ”

“ The Petition having been presented on August 24, was referred in the usual course to the Committee on Public Petitions, by whom it was ordered to be printed, and to lie on the table of the House. It is remarkable, however, that (while a clerical error is retained with a scrupulous exactitude) the purport and meaning of the Petition is misrepresented in the report of the Committee. In the report, the petition is described as the petition of the High Sheriff of Surrey ‘ for consideration of his case.’ This is wrong, as a perusal of the document will show. In my memorial to the Home Secretary I asked Sir George Lewis to consider my case ; what I asked the House of Commons to consider was, not my particular case, but the general question of the arbitrary power claimed by English Judges. The printed Petition was not delivered to honourable members till August 30, two days after the prorogation of Parliament.

“ A considerable time having elapsed since my memorial to the Home Secretary had been deposited at the Home Office, and no acknowledgment of its receipt having reached me, the gentleman who acted as my Under Sheriff undertook to make inquiry, and having called at the Home Office on September 22, was informed that the memorial had been forwarded to ‘ the proper quarter,’ and that the High Sheriff would receive an answer. Another interval having elapsed, a friend offered to inquire, and accordingly called at the Home Office on October 3. His application was more successful than that of the Under Sheriff, for it was speedily

followed by the subjoined answer. How long the silence of the Home Office would (but for this second application) have continued, it is difficult to conjecture.

“ ‘ WHITEHALL, *October 4, 1860.*

“ ‘ SIR,—I am directed by Secretary Sir George Lewis to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23rd August last, praying the remission of a Fine imposed upon you by the Judges of Assize at Guildford, for a Contempt of Court ; and I am to inform you, that after a careful consideration of the circumstances of the case, Sir George Lewis is not prepared to advise the Crown to mitigate the Penalty.

“ ‘ I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

H. WADDINGTON.’

“ From the answer given to the Sheffield memorialists on the 3rd of September, it would appear that Sir George Lewis had not then made up his mind ; that he had not arrived at any decision respecting the remission of the fine. Now, however, five weeks having elapsed, this cold refusal was returned, amply verifying in its result the prediction made to me in the lobby of the House of Commons.

“ Doubtless Sir George Lewis referred the matter to the very Judge who had passed sentence on me, and I may fairly suppose it was less a ‘ consideration of the circumstances,’ than his Lordship’s version of those circumstances that the Home Secretary declined to advise the Crown, either to command the remission of the penalty or even its mitigation. Gentlemen, my task is now nearly ended. Earnestly do I trust that in the course of this statement no word of mine may be thought to transgress the bounds of propriety and decorum. With respect to the two distinguished Judges with whom I have unhappily come into collision, I do not doubt their high character or their ability ; but I must protest against their unjust conduct at the Guildford Assize, and I cannot for a moment admit that a Sheriff is bound to give an unreasoning obedience to every order of a Judge. It may be objected that I am presumptuous

in questioning the decision of the Lord Chief Justice of England on a question of law. Yet, presumptuous as I may be thought, and brilliant as has been the career of that learned Judge, and high as is the estimation in which he is justly held, I must be permitted to call in question his authority on a matter which involves the power and authority of the Judicial Office. In another sphere, and in another place, it has been my lot to listen to the eloquence and to appreciate the abilities of Sir Alexander Cockburn. I saw in him a brilliant debater, an assiduous representative, a powerful member of Government, but, above all, an uncompromising partisan. Can it be that he showed at Guildford that same spirit of partisanship which sometimes in the House of Commons leads to a 'memorable reward'? Possibly it may have been so. Possibly, seeing that a difference had arisen between a Judge and a Sheriff, he chivalrously rushed to the rescue of his learned brother, as he would have rushed to the rescue of his political chief. Possibly had a Judge actually assaulted a Sheriff in open Court (an act of which no English Judge is capable), the Lord Chief Justice of England would, with equal readiness, have come forward to make the best case for his learned brother, and to cover the Sheriff with confusion. Of any petty feeling, he is of course incapable; but seeing the growing efforts to exalt the authority of Judges, I would not trust his impartiality in a matter that concerns the powers of the Judicial Office.

"How can the conduct of the Judges at Guildford be explained? I can only conjecture that both came filled with an unreasoning prejudice against the town and its Courts of Justice. To travel so far into the country is inconvenient; some spot nearer London would be more agreeable; hence perhaps they arrived in a bad temper, prepared to find fault with everyone, with the Grand Jury, the Sheriff and the Sheriff's *Posse Comitatus*. But this is conjecture — I can only be sure of the facts as they occurred.

"One word as to the office of Sheriff. That functionary is in some respects less fortunate than are Her Majesty's

Judges. A time there was, when the Sheriff's office was a position of emolument, and the older Sheriffs made what may be called 'a very good thing of it.' The Statute Book shows, that some Sheriffs went to the length of 'farming out their Counties' and continued to remain in office ten years or more. All this is now altered. Statutes were passed in Henry VI's reign, to remedy these abuses, and the Sheriffs of that period would be surprised, could they witness the condition of Queen Victoria's Sheriffs, who, so far from coveting the office, are for the most part not even Volunteers, and only resemble Volunteers from the fact that they receive no pay; and who are often forced against their will into their position of dignified degradation. In fact, that once honourable office is now too often dragged in the mire.

"Some letters given in the Appendix, and written by gentlemen living in the county, will show that I am not alone in saying that the Courts at Guildford have been unduly disparaged. The Crown Court, a temple sacred to Ceres and to Themis, though its proportions might not satisfy the critical eye of a Vitruvius or a Ruskin, is yet a substantial and confessedly an airy building; and the Lord Chief Justice himself might have discerned some merit in the four stately columns of its portico, fronting the High Street, and supporting a pediment with the Arms of Guildford sculptured in bold relief upon the tympanum. As to the Nisi Prius Court, even Surrey's Sheriff must admit that the Town Hall of Guildford is not quite so grand as the Town Hall of Carthage, described in the second Book of the *Æneid*, and certainly the wars of Troy are not pictured on its walls; though, instead of the wars of Troy there may be seen the portraits of three Stuart Kings, of William and Mary, and of two eminent members of the House of Onslow—one distinguished in the Senate, the other on the Ocean; but I need not dwell on this topic, seeing that at the General Quarter Sessions, held at Newington, on January 1, a committee was appointed to report on 'the present state of the Assize Courts and Shire-hall at Guildford.' These structures, with some modifications and precautions against the noise of the High Street, might be suitable for conducting the business of the Assize,

though the Town Hall is scarcely quite large enough for all County purposes; since at County elections the Court is often adjourned by common consent, and the proceedings held in the open air.

“I have little more to add. In re-admitting the public to the Court at Guildford—and in protesting against the conduct of a learned Judge—I acted in a difficult position, on no light grounds, and on behalf of the public good. Since the date of those occurrences, whenever it has fallen to me to appear at a public meeting, I have never abused the occasion by dwelling on the personal wrong which I have sustained. And if the degradation of the office of Sheriff concerned only the individual, it would matter little—that a ‘paltry Squire’ (to use the words of an anonymous correspondent) should be treated with indignity, is of small moment—but let me tell my unknown friend that a Sheriff, whether he be a paltry Squire, or a member of the ruling oligarchy, is by virtue of his office the temporary head of his County, and a blow aimed at him is really aimed at the liberties of the community. I may remind you that this is not the first instance within living memory, of a dispute between Judge and Sheriff in our County. I believe it is true that some twenty years since, a gentleman, now occupying a distinguished position, and then serving the office of High Sheriff, on being severely reprimanded by a learned Judge in the Public Court, replied with becoming spirit, and carried with him the sympathies of the auditory.

“The exposition of facts which I have now given has occupied much more space than I had anticipated or wished. I will conclude by observing, that now the time is drawing near when my official year will come to a close; after what has occurred, I do not repine at the reflection that, thanks to the Statute of Henry VI, a man can be a Sheriff but once in his life. There is, however, some satisfaction in having tried to hand over the dignity of the office untarnished, the rights of the people unimpaired. My duty has been done, though at some cost to myself; and my statement (imperfect as it is), I trust, drawn up in a truthful and dispassionate spirit.

“ Respectfully soliciting your candid consideration of that Statement

“ I have the honour to be,

MY LORDS AND GENTLEMEN,

Your faithful and obedient Servant,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN,

Sheriff.”

EXTRACT FROM THE APPENDIX

“ *To the Queen's Most Excellent Majesty,*

“ *The Memorial of the Sheffield Foreign Affairs Committee.*

“ HUMBLY SHEWETH,—That one of the main safeguards of a nation is the due and proper administration of the law ; securing for it a high regard and inviolable attachment and an invincible repugnance to those who break it.

“ That the frightful effects of a mal-administration of the law and disregard of its requirements, may now be seen in the disordered state of Sicily, Naples, and elsewhere on the Continent, where those who are successful in trampling under foot all laws, both human and divine, are idolised and worshipped.

“ That it is therefore in the highest degree incumbent on all who desire the true welfare of their country, to be constantly having a watchful regard over the administration of the law.

“ That it is an essential characteristic of the law of England that all the public Courts wherein adjudication is sought are and must be open.

“ That when an attempt was made to close the recently established Divorce Court, it was found that it could not be done without the authority of Parliament, and Parliament refusing its sanction, the Court necessarily remains open.

“ That notwithstanding the incontrovertible evidence from time immemorial that it is indispensable for the judicial tribunals of England to be open, and wholly unlawful to close them, Mr. Justice Blackburn did close the Court at the recent Assizes held at Guildford, and did it in such an improper manner (by wholly ignoring the High Sheriff), as showed that he had forgotten at the time that he was a gentleman. That the High Sheriff, as in duty bound, afterwards discharged his

officers from obeying this unlawful order, and therefore Mr. Justice Blackburn, in conjunction with his colleague, fined the High Sheriff in the sum of £500.

“That for an official, who has broken the law and is wholly in the wrong, to punish another who has obeyed the law and is in the right, is manifestly absurd and unlawful.

“That in order to prevent the evil effects on the public of so scandalous an example, it is indispensable that the acts of Mr. Justice Blackburn and his colleague should be reversed in the most marked manner.

“Your Majesty’s Memorialists therefore, humbly pray, that your Majesty will be graciously pleased to command that the fine on Mr. High Sheriff Evelyn be remitted, that the Lord Chief Justice may be severely reprimanded, and Mr. Justice Blackburn suspended, as being wholly unfit for his high office.

“And your Majesty’s Memorialists as in duty bound will ever pray

“Signed by order and on behalf of the Committee,

“ISAAC IRONSIDE, *Chairman*.

JOSEPH PEARSON, *Secretary*.

“SHEFFIELD, *August 31st, 1860.*”

“WHITEHALL, *3rd September 1860*

“SIR,—I am directed by Secretary Sir George Lewis to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 31st ultimo, forwarding a Memorial to the Queen, signed by yourself and Joseph Pearson; and I am to inform you that the Judges of the Superior Courts are not removable at the pleasure of the Crown.

“I am, Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

H. WADDINGTON.”

THE *TIMES*, THURSDAY, AUGUST 16, 1860

“To the Editor of the *Times*.

“SIR,—Your comments have given to the recent incidents at Guildford so much prominence that I venture to ask you to allow me to correct an impression which has prevailed with respect to the clearing of the Crown Court in that town.

"Whatever view may be entertained of the good taste or discretion of my proceedings, I must reiterate that on the 3rd of August, at the Crown Court at Guildford, the whole of the space appropriated to the public was entirely cleared, and from that date to Monday, August 13, when I interfered, that space was empty. The only entrances left open were, first, the entrance for counsel, witnesses, jurors, and officials; and, secondly, the Judge's entrance; and numerous complaints were made to me on the subject. I cannot but maintain that I was substantially right in the course taken. It was with apparent reluctance that the learned Judges felt it their duty to inflict so severe a sentence, and it is a satisfaction to me to believe that both the Lord Chief Justice and Mr. Justice Blackburn gave me credit for acting from a sense of duty.

"Having said thus much, I do not desire to trespass further on your columns by entering into any apologetic statement, however inclined to ask your permission to do so; and, if I do not ask it, it is not that I affect to despise public opinion.

"I am, Sir, your obedient Servant,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN.

"WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING,
August 15."

Forty-two years later, on January 25, 1902, William Evelyn referred to the incident with the Judges in a speech which he made to some of the Dorking tradesmen, on their presentation to his son of a gift in commemoration of the latter's wedding which took place two days later. In this speech he said that "he might remind them that he had served the county in Parliament; he had fought three elections in his life—one unsuccessfully at Guildford. That was in 1858, and he should ever retain a sense of the great courtesy he met with, but the contest was too difficult for him. After the Guildford election, much against his will, he was compelled to take the office of High Sheriff, an honour which he did not aim at. But it might be of interest to know that he was the third High Sheriff which his family had given to

the county. He thought it very hard upon him, after three expensive election contests, to have this office thrust upon him—an office, very honourable and ancient, but which, after all, led to nothing. And then came the unfortunate unpleasantness with the Judges, which caused him very great annoyance. It was right that it should be known that during that affair he acted on the high legal advice of Mr. Toulmin Smith, the author of a very learned work on parish law.”

In olden times Surrey and Sussex had in general one Sheriff between them, but in 1637 each county had its own Sheriff, and so it has continued ever since. The other two members of the Evelyn family who have served the county of Surrey as High Sheriffs were Richard Evelyn, the father of John Evelyn (Sylva) who was appointed Sheriff in 1634, and Sir John Evelyn, Bart., of Marden Park, in the parish of Godstone, who became High Sheriff of Surrey in 1666. The following passage from Evelyn’s *Diary*, referring to his father being made High Sheriff, is given, on account of the remarkable coincidence of the experiences of Richard Evelyn in 1634 and of William John Evelyn in 1860 :—

“1634. My Father was appointed Sheriff for Surrey and Sussex before they were disjoyned. He had 116 servants in liverys, every one livery’d in greene sattin doublets ; divers gentlemen and persons of quality waited on him in the same garbe and habit, which at that time (when 30 or 40 was the usual retinue of the High Sheriff) was esteem’d a great matter. Nor was this out of the least vanity that my Father exceeded (who was one of the greatest decliners of it), but because he could not refuse the civility of his friends and relations, who voluntarily came themselves, or sent in their servants. But my Father was afterwards most unjustly and spitefully molested by that jeering judge Richardson, for reprevving the execution of a woman, to gratifie my L. of Lindsey, then Admiral ; but out of this he emerged with as much honor as trouble.”

CHAPTER V

MARRIAGE AND SECOND PARLIAMENTARY CAREER

WILLIAM EVELYN was married, October 28, 1873, at the age of fifty-one, to Frances Harriet, eldest daughter of the Rev. George Vaughan Chichester, brother to Lord O'Neill of Shanes Castle, Co. Antrim. Mr. Chichester was at that time Vicar of Randalstown in Co. Antrim. The bride was only twenty-three years of age. The wedding took place at Randalstown. Three years after the marriage a son was born who was christened John Harcourt Chichester, and subsequently four daughters, viz., Ada Jane, Helen Elizabeth, Florence, and Henrietta Frances.

William Evelyn was patron of the three livings of Wotton, Abinger, and Oakwood, all of which are adjoining parishes. He appointed his youngest brother, Edmund, to the family living at Wotton in 1857, and on the latter's resignation in 1875, he gave the living to his father-in-law, who retained it till his death in 1898. He gave the living at Oakwood to his eldest brother-in-law, the Rev. Edward Chichester, afterwards Vicar of Dorking.

In 1879 William Evelyn felt obliged to bring an action for libel against a former estate agent of his named John Evelyn Liardet, who was distantly related to the family and who, after his dismissal in 1878 from the management of the estates, began to spread about the report that William Evelyn's grandparents had not been properly married, and that therefore their son, George Evelyn, was illegitimate, with the result that his son, William John Evelyn, had no legal right to the estates in Surrey, Kent, or Middlesex. Of course it was an easy matter to disprove this report, the only seeming foundation for which was that William Evelyn's grand-



MRS. W. J. EVELYN (1850-1897)

From a portrait (1884) by Sant

father, Mr. John Evelyn, while employed in the East India Company's Civil Service, was married at Dacca in April 1787 to Miss Anne Shee, and, as was the custom in those days in remote parts of India, when it was impossible to procure a clergyman, the ceremony of marriage was performed by a layman. In this case it was performed by one Matthew Day, chief or collector of the revenue of Dacca. On November 24 of the same year, however, another ceremony of marriage was performed at Calcutta by a clergyman of the Church of England. Their son, George Evelyn, was not born till 1791, and his birth took place in Galway. This case was naturally a great worry to William Evelyn, who was always so sensitive about anything which concerned the honour of his family. The counsel he employed was Sir Henry James. The following letter was written to his mother :—

“WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING, SURREY,
Friday, 12 December 1879.

“MY DEAR MOTHER,—On the 9th instant I attended a consultation which was most satisfactory, and the letter of Mr. Boscawen which you were so kind as to lend me will be of very great service. I had hoped (and I expressed that hope to my leading counsel Sir Henry James) that we might be able to spare you the trouble of giving evidence; but were you not to be called as a witness your absence would be commented on by our unscrupulous adversaries. For this reason I must, though most reluctantly, ask you to appear as a witness. Very few questions will be asked you; you will be called on to state your certainty of the falsehood of the wretched and monstrous statement about my father and to certify to the genuineness of Mr. Webber's narrative. I do not think that your examination will occupy ten minutes. I deeply regret that it is not possible to spare you this trouble.

“Sir Henry James is a man of first-rate ability as a lawyer; and he is also a thorough gentleman. We shall make very short work of Mr. Liardet, and I do not think that Lady Evelyn will venture (after Liardet's defeat) to persevere in her monstrous pretensions.

“As a matter of course I shall be examined in detail.

“I am very sorry that George was unable to be present at the consultation.

“It is certain that my father was born at Galway on the sixteenth day of September 1791, and it is all but certain that he was baptized in the Protestant church of Galway. But unfortunately the baptismal register does not go back so far as 1791.

“The trial will probably come on in about a week. You will have due notice. I am alone at Wotton just now but expect Frances this evening.

“Trusting that you are quite well,

I remain,

Your affectionate son,

W. J. EVELYN.”

Four days later he again writes to his mother on hearing that she had refused to give evidence :

“WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING, SURREY,
16 December 1879.

“MY DEAR MOTHER,—This morning I received from the Messrs. Walters a letter enclosing a copy of your letter to them dated the 13th instant which I may consider to be your answer to my letter dated the 19th instant. I trust that you will reconsider your refusal to give evidence. I certainly understood from you that though objecting to make an affidavit, you would be quite willing to appear as a witness. The case is not now likely to be tried before the end of February.

“I thank you for so kindly sending to the Messrs. Walters your copy of Brayley’s *History of Surrey* to which you contributed a most interesting account of my father’s life and a continuation of the pedigree to the year 1841, when Brayley’s work was published. Unfortunately that pedigree does not assist us because of the mistakes of Mr. Bray, some of which are reproduced in Brayley. For instance my uncle’s (John Evelyn) age is set down at ten years when he died whereas it should have been five years. Again my great-grandmother is stated both by Bray and Brayley to be

daughter of Michael Tankerville Chamberlain, whereas she was really daughter of Christopher Chamberlain. One of Mr. Bray's mistakes (viz., that my father was born at Bath) is not repeated in Brayley; but on the whole I fear that Brayley's work will not be of service though I will consult counsel on the matter. As I have two copies of Brayley's work, the Messrs. Walters will return to you the copy you have lent lest it should be damaged. The pedigree is in vol. v. pp. 27-31.

"There is no intention of publishing Mr. Webber's *Memoir* and you are quite right in saying that it was 'not intended for publication.' All that will be done with it is to make use of one passage in proof of my father's birth at Galway in 1791.

"We were very pleased to see you yesterday. Frances and Mary have driven to Norbury. Were they at home they would unite with me in love to you.

"I remain,

Ever your affectionate son,

W. J. EVELYN."

He writes to his mother again a few days later :

"WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING, SURREY,
Saturday, 20 December 1879.

"MY DEAR MOTHER,—Your visit to-day was so brief that I had not time to speak on matters of business.

"I regret to have to tell you that your evidence cannot be dispensed with in the Trusteeship action. Such is the opinion of counsel. Every British subject (including even the members of the royal family) is bound by law to give evidence when required. No-one except the Sovereign (or persons labouring under some special disability) is exempt from this duty. I wish I could spare you the trouble and vexation but I cannot.

"The Trusteeship action will come on perhaps in January. I do not think that Lady Evelyn's¹ monstrous claim will come on at all.

¹ Lady Evelyn was the widow of Sir Hugh Evelyn, the 5th and last baronet in the Evelyn family, and was acting in concert with Liardet.

“ At such a moment when the honour of the family is assailed surely all the members of the family should act in harmony. In my letter to you dated the 12th instant I explained that very few questions will be put to you ; and I trust you will give your evidence willingly.

“ Frances tells me that you expect Edmund this evening and that he is to leave you early on Monday. I regret that the shortness of his stay will prevent our calling on him. I hope that he is quite well.

“ With our united love and trusting that you will soon get rid of your cold.

“ I remain,

Your affectionate son,

W. J. EVELYN.”

On December 22 William Evelyn again wrote to his mother, this time giving her a list of questions which he thought she would very likely be asked if she gave evidence in Court. Old Mrs. Evelyn, however, wrote to her son on the 24th, again reiterating her decision not to appear as a witness. A day later her son wrote to her again as follows :

“ WOTTON HOUSE, NEAR DORKING,
Christmas Day, 1879.

“ MY DEAR MOTHER,—I was glad to see you to-day and to wish you a merry Christmas and happy new year ; but I regret that I must write a line to say how deeply I deplore that you should have sent me such a letter as you wrote yesterday, so abruptly worded and not even acknowledging the receipt of my letters of the 22nd and 23rd. I am very sorry that you should have been advised not to give evidence in the action I have brought against Liardet. I should have thought that respect for my father’s memory would have induced you not to withhold your testimony. I beg of you to reconsider your decision. Sure I am that if you adhere to it you will deeply regret having done so, and on —— will rest the great responsibility of having tendered to you such fatal advice. From the tenor of his letters it is clear that you are guided by him. It is not too late to reconsider your decision, but I fear that it is useless for me to attempt

to counteract the influence that has overcome your better judgment.

“The astounding decision that you have arrived at will be laid before counsel. I must in the approaching trial do my best to uphold the honour of the family under the great disadvantage that your decision will entail. We must either not call you at all or subpoena you as an unwilling witness and as a witness unwilling to give your testimony in a case which concerns not only the honour of the family, but your own personal honour; for you are quite aware of the imputation cast upon you of complicity in fraud, etc.

“I remain in sorrow,

Your affectionate son,

WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN.”

In a letter to one of his relations, William Evelyn says, “Now that the honour of the family is assailed, surely the members of the family should be united. Frances joins with me in this feeling; and we should be happy to see you at Wotton if you will pass a day or two with us any time during the next fortnight.” In another letter he says, “I have already in several letters explained painfully and carefully to my mother why she ought to appear and I have also, in answer to her inquiries, stated what questions in my opinion are likely to be asked. I have written as kindly dutifully and considerately as it was possible for a son to write, but without result. Acting on ——’s advice she declined to make a deposition but promised to give her evidence in open Court. Again acting on his advice she now declines to give any evidence. I do not wish to say anything harsh, but it is well before it is too late that —— should consider the tremendous responsibility of offering such advice in opposition not only to me but to the wishes and judgment of my brother Colonel George Evelyn whose conduct towards me during this trouble has been worthy of his father’s son (I can give it no higher praise) and will ever be gratefully remembered by me.

“As to my mother’s health, I thank God that she is in the enjoyment of excellent health; she called here yester-

day. But of course you will inform —, what Mr. Booty will confirm, viz., that if my mother's physician certified that her health would suffer by appearing in Court her evidence would by permission of the Court be taken at her own house."

Old Mrs. Evelyn eventually agreed to give evidence in Court, and the case ended satisfactorily as, of course, it was bound to do.

The following letter by William Evelyn, on the proposed desecration of Shakespeare's tomb, appeared in the *Times* and also in the *Kentish Mercury* for September 7, 1883 :—

"SIR,—I gather from the statement of a Stratford-on-Avon newspaper correspondent that the Vicar of Stratford Parish, after acquiescing in the proposal to desecrate Shakespeare's tomb, puts in a claim to be 'neutral' in the matter. This plea of neutrality cannot be allowed; it is deplorable that any clergyman should be neutral in regard to so scandalous a meditated outrage against the illustrious dead. Doubtless Mr. Mayon is right in thinking that a protest against the monstrous proposal would be all but unanimous in Great Britain. Nay, more; surely America and Germany would not be behind-hand in the expression of their indignation. The monumental bust of Shakespeare is undoubtedly from life, and should be regarded as a test of the genuineness of the various supposed portraits of the great poet. In illustration of this subject I may instance the case of the father and mother of John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*, both of whom died in Charles I's reign. Their portraits are at Wotton House, their kneeling likenesses in alabaster are in Wotton Church, and their persons are very graphically portrayed at the beginning of their son's diary. Now, in comparing the verbal description, the portraits and the monumental figures, anyone can see that the three authorities tend to verify one another, and that in the sculptured monumental figures we have exact likenesses of the persons represented. And this was the case generally with the sixteenth and seventeenth century monuments. Many of these monuments were probably finished during life, the space for the inscriptions being left in blank. Some years

ago Mr. Martin Tupper informed me that in visiting Stratford he found that the Church had been restored, and that the old font—Shakespeare's font—had been removed and had been replaced by a brand new font; that after some trouble he found the old font, and after some more trouble obtained a promise that it should be replaced in the Church.

“Let us hope that as one act of disrespect to the memory of Shakespeare was annulled and set right through the interference of Mr. Tupper, so the present more atrocious and deliberate design may come utterly to naught, and that its authors may at once abandon their prospect of desecrating Shakespeare's tomb, a project alike discreditable to themselves and offensive to the national sentiment.

“I am, Sir, etc.,

W. J. EVELYN.

“WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
September 4.”

In the beginning of 1885 William Evelyn was selected as a Conservative candidate for Deptford. His opponent was Mr. Lalmohun Ghose, an Indian barrister of much culture and ability. The election did not take place until the end of the year, but his election address was issued in January and ran as follows :

“GENTLEMEN,—In compliance with the invitation of the Deptford Conservative Association, I beg leave to announce that, should the Redistribution of Seats Bill in its present shape become law, I propose to offer myself as Conservative Candidate to represent the future constituency of Deptford.

“A careful survey of the present aspect of politics has led me to distrust both the home and foreign policy of the present Government. The difficulties in Egypt, South Africa and Afghanistan, the growing discontent of our most important colonies, the lowering of the national reputation by alternate arrogance and vacillation, are among the results of their foreign policy. At home we find increased taxation combined with commercial distress, the expenditure of the present Administration during the first four years of its existence greatly exceeding that of the late Government for

an equal period, and the contention that the present perplexities are the legacies of the late Government seems to me fallacious.

“ Armed with the severest Coercion Act ever passed, the present Ministry has entirely failed to restore contentment and prosperity to Ireland. What Ireland requires, in my opinion, is a lenient and just administration, with as much local self-government as is consistent with the security of the Empire.

“ In reference to the subject of elementary education, public opinion has strongly condemned the London School Board for inconsiderate treatment of the poor, and for extravagant expenditure resulting in a constant and alarming increase of the School Rate. In these views, though a friend to the cause of education, I fully concur.

“ As to the London Government Bill, I have already expressed my sentiments in public at Deptford. Having ever been an opponent of centralisation and an advocate of municipal institutions, I could not support a measure which, besides infringing a local self-government, would probably tend to increase our local rates.

“ I am in favour of a Commission of Enquiry into the causes that have led to the present depression of trade. Such a Commission might determine whether the policy of free imports from countries which have refused to receive our productions has not tended to create or to increase the depression by sacrificing the interests of British producers to those of our foreign competitors.

“ The most momentous questions of the day are those affecting the social welfare of the people. All measures tending to promote the independence of the working classes, and the comfort of their homes, will ever receive my earnest support ; and assuring you that, if elected, I shall not fail in attention to your local interests,

“ I have the honour to be, Gentlemen,

Your obedient and faithful servant,

W. J. EVELYN.

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,

1st January 1885.

The Redistribution of Seats Bill mentioned in the foregoing address was passed early in the year, and had been rendered necessary by the many flagrant anomalies connected with the returning of Members to Parliament. In some cases small boroughs with scanty populations of a few hundred returned as many representatives as some of the large counties.

The Liberal Government had been in power since 1882, and in 1883 a Coercion Act had been passed for Ireland, which was still in force but was to expire on August 14. It was an important question whether or not it was to be continued. On May 15, Mr. Gladstone announced that should the Liberals be in office certain clauses of it would be continued. The Gladstone Government were defeated in a vote of censure in connection with Mr. Childers' budget on June 8, and went out of office. The Conservative party then took office under Lord Salisbury. It was to their interest to conciliate the Irish party as the Liberals were still in a majority in the House of Commons. Rumours were current, and had been current for some little time, that the Conservative party and the Irish party had come to some agreement, and it was said that in exchange for the Nationalist support the Tories would agree to drop coercion. Lord Carnarvon, who was known to have lenient views in regard to Ireland, was made Lord Lieutenant, and this was very popular with the Home Rule party. He even had an interview with Mr. Parnell, the leader of the Nationalist party, in a London drawing-room at the end of July, and was in favour of Home Rule for Ireland with proper safeguards against the danger of separation, but it is not known how far Lord Salisbury shared his views. Parliament was prorogued on August 14, the same day that the Coercion Act expired, and people soon began to prepare for the general election which took place in November and December. The Irish vote in Great Britain was given to the Conservatives.

The election lasted from November 23 to December 19, and resulted in the Liberals returning 334 Members; the Conservatives, 250; and the Nationalists, 86. The Liberals therefore had a majority over the Conservatives of 84, but not

a majority over the Conservatives and Nationalists combined, so the Tories again took office.

William Evelyn was returned for Deptford by a majority of 367, the numbers being respectively—

EVELYN	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	3928
GHOSE	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	3560

In his election speeches he frequently referred to the advantages of Protection of British Industries, or Fair Trade, as it was then often called. He blamed the Gladstone Government for embarking on the Sudan campaign. The following extract from a speech of his at Deptford in February will show his attitude towards the working classes :—

“ I consider that Conservative principles are directly opposed to destructive principles. (Hear, hear.) The so-called working-man’s candidate goes in for destruction—‘ We will destroy the Monarchy and the House of Lords.’ Now I am for destroying nothing, but for adapting our institutions to the present circumstances of the country. (Hear, hear.) I would not say ‘ Pull down the mansions ’ and let us have a dead level of equality throughout the country, but I should like to see the inhabitant of the cottage equally happy with the inhabitant of the mansion. (Hear, hear.) Let Mr. Chamberlain enjoy his expensive orchids while the cottager enjoys the humble primroses and wall-flowers.”

The following extract is from the *Kentish Mercury* for May 29, 1885, and shows the very deep affection with which he was regarded at Deptford :—

“ An interesting and very suggestive incident occurred at the meeting in support of the candidature of Baboo Ghose in the Deptford Lecture Hall, so creditable to all parties, and so honourable to one that we are constrained to refer to it. When Baboo Ghose alluded to his Conservative opponent and mentioned the name of Mr. Evelyn, it was received with loud sympathetic cheers, and not a single sound indicating hostility or ill-feeling was heard. We do not wish to be understood as attaching the slightest political importance to this unusual demonstration, for we are aware that the meeting

was composed of the friends and supporters of Baboo Ghose, but it was an expression of personal respect and esteem for Mr. Evelyn which must be all the more gratifying to that gentleman because it proceeded from outspoken political antagonists. It is, we believe, a circumstance without a parallel in the election experience of Deptford and Greenwich that a spontaneous tribute of this kind should be paid to the standard bearer of the opposite party. We take it as a happy augury of the spirit in which the battle in Deptford will be fought, and we feel it right to record our sense of the fair and generous spirit manifested by the men composing this Liberal meeting. It was a testimony to the worth of Mr. Evelyn beyond price."

With regard to coercion William Evelyn said in a speech in July that :

"The question whether he was in favour of coercion was answered by his address, in which he expressed the hope that Ireland would be governed without the necessity of recurring to measures like the Crimes Act. That address was issued on January 1, but he was happy to say that he saw no reason for wishing one word of it altered. With the advent to office of a Conservative administration he trusted that all necessity for further coercive measures in regard to Ireland would have passed away. (Hear, hear.) He looked to the conciliatory spirit of Lord Carnarvon to assure to Ireland a period of tranquillity and just government. (Hear, hear.) It was a happy omen that the new Lord Lieutenant was able to go about without an armed escort. (Hear, hear.)"

The following is an extract from the *South-Eastern Herald* for November 27, 1885. After giving an account of the polling at Deptford, it says :—

"A great number of people had gathered outside the Conservative Club in New Cross Road, doubtless because it was known that the victorious candidate was within, and was expected to make a speech. Loud calls for Evelyn and the Squire were raised and the crowd refused to be satisfied with a deputy. . . .

"The electors continued to make vociferous demands for the member himself, and at last Mr. Evelyn, who was naturally much fatigued by the work and excitement of the day,

made his appearance at the open window of the first floor of the Club. He was received with intense enthusiasm, and so great were the demonstrations of joy that he was only permitted to deliver his speech in short sentences, his voice being then drowned amidst the continuous cheers with which his references to the happy result of the conflict were received. He said :

“ ‘ Gentlemen, the brilliant triumph that we have achieved this day is to me enhanced very much by the kind acclamation of your congratulation. I thank you, Electors of the borough of Deptford, for the great honour you have conferred on me. I regard this moment as the happiest of my life. The electoral struggle in which we have been engaged was of an arduous nature, and the eyes of England were fixed on the borough of Deptford, which, let me remind you, was considered the most difficult for the Conservative candidate of the three boroughs into which the old constituency is divided. This victory then is very remarkable, and it is an augury, I hope, of equally brilliant success in the two remaining parts of the old borough. To-morrow, I hope our friend Mr. Boord will be returned for Greenwich and that they will secure an equally brilliant victory at Woolwich. Happy and proud as we all are of the victory we have achieved, we shall not be contented unless the borough of Deptford is surrounded by Conservative constituencies. We shall, I hope, be able to congratulate ourselves on the return of Lord Lewisham, and I hope our friend Mr. Bauman will be returned for Peckham.

“ ‘ A word to you who are Liberal electors of this borough. I ask you, gentlemen, if after all you do not admit that I and my friends have fought this battle fairly ? Had the result been adverse to me, had I been the rejected candidate, I should have bowed to the verdict of the constituency, and accepted that verdict with perfect equanimity. But the brilliant result that has been achieved, adds a new and honourable dignity to the ties which have so long connected my family with this ancient town. Rest assured, gentlemen, that it will be my best endeavour in the House of Commons to justify the choice that you have made.’ ”

“After the member had withdrawn from the window, the crowd remained cheering for a considerable time, and inside the Club he was besieged by congratulatory friends.”

The new Parliament opened on January 21, 1886, and in the Queen's speech it was stated that coercion for Ireland would be resorted to if the ordinary law proved insufficient to control the organised intimidation which prevailed.

This change of policy on the part of Lord Salisbury's Government put William Evelyn in a difficult position. He had always had a strong feeling against coercion. He wrote a letter to the Head Whip, Mr. Akers-Douglas, to express his regret that the Government should have changed its policy, and the great difficulty he should feel if a Coercion Bill should be brought forward.

Lord Salisbury's Government soon went out of office. Mr. Jesse Collings, at that time a strong Radical and Home Ruler, proposed, on January 27, an amendment to the address from the Throne, expressing regret that no measure had been announced by the Government for the relief of agriculture, and especially for affording facilities to agricultural labourers to obtain small holdings on good terms as to rent and fixity of tenure. This was known afterwards as the “Three acres and a cow” Amendment. The Amendment was carried by 329 votes against 250, and the Conservative Government immediately went out of office. The Gladstone Government took its place, and Parliament re-assembled on February 3.

Mr. Gladstone introduced his Home Rule scheme on April 8, but the Liberal Unionists held the fate of the Bill in their hands, and it was doomed to be defeated.

William Evelyn was at this time opposed to Home Rule, although he was always deeply attached to the Irish nation. This attachment, which he retained throughout his whole life, was no doubt partly due to the Irish blood in his veins, owing to which he was, in character and temperament, far more akin to the Celtic than to the Saxon race. The following extract is from a speech which he made at Deptford towards the end of April :—

“ In the few observations that I shall make to you, I shall address myself more particularly to the Irish element of this constituency. I am the last man in the world to use invective against the Irish nation. (Cheers.) Among many powerful considerations which would deter me from such a course, I cannot forget that Irish blood flows in my own veins (Applause), nor can I ever cease to be grateful to the Irish and Catholic electors of Deptford for the very valuable support which they gave us during the late arduous contest. (Cheers.) In my address of thanks I especially made my acknowledgments for that support, and I am not going to withdraw from any pledge that I gave during the late election. Mr. Marchant has made allusions to Grattan’s Parliament, and I agree with much that he said. Undoubtedly that Parliament showed elements of corruption in the manner in which it allowed itself to be bribed by Pitt into passing the Act of Union ; still I would remind my friends that Grattan’s Parliament was exclusively a Protestant Parliament, and that though it was perhaps too exclusive in its composition, yet it passed some enlightened measures. It gave votes to the Roman Catholic electors ; it allowed the Roman Catholics to hold leases of 999 years in Ireland, whereas they were previously excluded from any possession of landed property ; it gave the death-blow to the odious system of penal laws which disfigured the eighteenth century, and the recollection of which, I fear, has embittered the relations between the two countries. (Hear, hear.) Now we come to the question immediately before us, and here I cannot but differ very much from the remarks of Mr. Gladstone in his speech of three hours and twenty-five minutes in introducing the Home Rule question, when he stated that there was no alternative between granting Home Rule and re-introducing the system of coercion. (Hear, hear.) We know that the system of coercion has prevailed during the whole of the present century, that it was inaugurated during the last century when that terrible penal code was established in Ireland which we have now happily got rid of altogether. While I am opposed to Home Rule, such as it is proposed in Mr. Gladstone’s Bill, I adhere to those

pledges which I gave during the last election, and am also opposed to anything like special coercive legislation in regard to Ireland except in the face of some desperate extremity such as I cannot conceive possible. Mr. Gladstone, we know, put down the Land League, and what was the result? Secret societies permeated the land, and the evil was more intensified than when there was an open body with public meetings and public agitation. So it would be now if we attempted to suppress the National League which has succeeded to the Land League. I fear that if we attempted by special legislation to put down the National League we should embark on a dangerous policy. I fear that secret societies would revive, and perhaps we might make worse instead of better in Ireland. These views are consistent with the pledges I gave during the election. I then praised the Government of Lord Carnarvon, contrasting it with that of Lord Spencer, and approved of the Government dispensing with the Crimes Act. The policy of the late Government altered after it came into office. I am far from blaming them on that account; no doubt they had good grounds in their view for a change of policy, and for announcing the probability of a return to the policy of coercion. I personally regretted that they found such a course necessary, and therefore, as the fall of the Government seemed certain, it was some relief to me that Providence sent Mr. Jesse Collings with his cow to trip us up, before the special question of Irish coercion came on. (Laughter.) Now, therefore, I beg you to understand that in opposing the policy of Mr. Gladstone's Bill I am not at all deviating from the pledges I gave that I should be opposed to special restrictive legislation with regard to Ireland. (Hear, hear.)"

The following is an extract from a speech of Mr. T. P. O'Connor on June 3, in the House of Commons, during the debate on the Home Rule Bill :—

"What I say is that throughout the English constituencies large numbers of Tory candidates asked for the Irish vote on the ground of no coercion absolutely, solely and without conditions, and that same party, on January 26, came out with a policy which rejected the pledges on

which large numbers of its Members were returned. I pass from these facts, which have much significance to my mind, to Tory declarations. I do not think that honourable gentlemen above the gangway, who were fortunate enough through the Irish vote to become Members of this House, will particularly care to have some of these declarations brought back to their memories. Those declarations form a not entirely agreeable contrast with the policy of their leaders at the present moment. For, sir, what is the policy of the present Conservative party as enunciated by its leader? The policy of coercion and depopulation. There is no policy against which Conservative declarations were more frequent and more emphatic during the election than the policy of coercion and depopulation. Here, for instance, is a quotation from the speech of the honourable gentleman now the Member for Deptford (Mr. Evelyn):

“ ‘With regard to Ireland, I am informed that the Deptford Irish held a meeting yesterday in this hall, with what result I know not; but if the Irish electors here vote for a supporter of Mr. Gladstone, I will give the Irish credit for being the most forgiving of people. Have they forgotten the jury-packing? the convictions of innocent men? the long imprisonments without trial? the suborning of evidence? the nameless scandals of Dublin Castle? Will they be untrue to the memory of O’Connell who denounced the Whig party as the base, bloody, and brutal Whigs? Under the blighting influence of Whig misrule the population of Ireland has declined between 1841 and 1881 from 8,000,000 to less than 5,000,000.’ ”

The next day, June 4, William Evelyn made the following speech in the House of Commons:—

“ Mr. Speaker, sir, I should not have risen for the purpose of taking part in this debate had it not been for a personal reference made to me by the Member for Liverpool (Mr. T. P. O’Connor) yesterday evening. (Hear, hear.) But for that I should not have intruded upon the House, for I am thoroughly in accord with the majority of the honourable Members on these benches, that this discussion has pro-

ceeded at too great a length, and that the division should be taken to-night. (Hear, hear.) For it would be impossible to conceive a more dismal set of orations than we have had from that side (the Liberal) of the House. (Hear, hear.) We first of all had a lugubrious jeremiad from the honourable Member for Bradford (Mr. Illingworth), lamenting the disunion of the Liberal party, but that is a matter for which we, on these benches, can hardly be expected to offer much sympathy. (Opposition laughter.) Then there came the speech of the Under Secretary of State for the Colonies (Mr. Osborne Morgan), and then the speech of another honourable member, the Member for East Cambridge (Mr. Newnes). The speech of the right honourable gentleman, the Under Secretary of State for the Colonies, was a speech distinguished by its moroseness and ill-nature, and, as if half despairing of enlivening the House in any other way, he fell to abusing the noble lord, the leader of the Conservative party, in which example he was followed by the honourable gentleman the Member for East Cambridge. There was one statement in the speech of the right honourable gentleman, the Under Secretary of State for the Colonies, which I noted very much at the time when he made it. It was that so long as six months ago he was in favour of Home Rule, and that therefore his conversion was not sudden nor recent. But I remember about eight months ago that the right honourable gentleman came down to Deptford to stump in favour of my Oriental opponent, and, if I am not mistaken, he said not a word then about Home Rule. (Hear, hear, from the Opposition.) The two subjects which the right honourable gentleman carefully avoided making any reference to were Home Rule and the Contagious Diseases (Women) Acts, of which Acts, whether good or bad, he was a distinguished champion. (Hear, hear.) I therefore think that his conversion, if so long ago as six months, was not so long ago as eight months. I was very much astonished by a gross historical mis-statement made by the right honourable gentleman. I mean his allusion to the state of Norway. I am sorry that the right honourable gentleman is not in his place, because I should

be sorry to misrepresent him in the slightest degree. (Hear, hear.) I think I have heard him say that the Norwegians regard the Danish dominion with much the same feeling as the Irish regard the Cromwellian dominion. (Hear, hear.) The tradition of the rule of the Danes over their country is a tradition of the time when most grievous oppression existed. (Hear, hear.) Then the right honourable gentleman talked of the union of Norway and Sweden, and he used that illustration as an argument in favour of the principle of separate Parliaments for those two countries, and as an argument in favour of the present Bill; then he declared that Norway and Sweden were on good terms and that there were never any differences between them. It is astonishing that the right honourable gentleman in his position should be so singularly ill-informed about modern history as he seems to be. (Laughter.) I don't so much blame him for being misinformed about the history of Norway and Sweden, because we are not supposed to be acquainted with the history of every part of the world; but this I do say, sir, that when a gentleman comes forward to instruct us he ought to take care that his facts are at all events well-founded. (Hear, hear.) I think on examination of the recent history of Sweden and Norway, it will be found that there have been great difficulties in the connection between the two countries, that there has been a political crisis, that a few years ago separation was nearly brought about, and I am not at all sure that the difficulties there are terminated. (Hear, hear.) The King of Sweden's authority was disavowed in Norway, there was a ministerial crisis, and it was only by some humiliating concessions that an absolute revolution was averted. (Hear, hear.) I cannot, therefore, think that the right honourable gentleman was exact in the information which he gave to the House as he might have been, had he taken the trouble to inquire into the real facts of the case. (Hear, hear.) I think the prolongation of this debate is to be deprecated on this ground, that amid the crash of political battle and the hurly-burly of the *melée* we are in danger of confusing the real issue by losing sight of instead of elucidating it. (Hear, hear.) That real issue,

I cannot think, is an abstract resolution. The only thing tangible we have in our hands is the Bill before us. The only question we have to decide is whether it is a workable, sensible, and carefully worked out Bill, and whether it will tend to the pacification and happiness of Ireland, and to the promotion of good feeling between the two countries. (Hear, hear.) There is another point of very considerable influence in this discussion, and that is whether the Prime Minister has a right to spring a Bill like this upon Parliament before the country has been consulted. (Hear, hear.) I think there are occasions when a Minister might take so great a responsibility, but I would ask whether in this case there is such a crisis. The right honourable gentleman who is at the head of Her Majesty's Government has declared that there is such a crisis, and yet in his speech in introducing this measure he declared the condition of Ireland in 1885 has immensely improved to what it was in 1832. I will quote the words of the right honourable gentleman. He says :

“ ‘The whole criminal offences in Ireland were 1400 in the former, and in the latter, 2683.’

“ The right honourable gentleman also states as to the present time :

“ ‘The serious agrarian crimes in Ireland, which in 1881 were 1011, in 1885 were 245.’

“ So that the right honourable gentleman lays it down as a fact that the condition of Ireland is steadily improving, and yet he says there is such a crisis and a dangerous condition of things that to avoid peril it is absolutely necessary to take this specific step to introduce a measure which alters completely the relations between the two countries. (Opposition cheers.) I cannot but think that there is some inconsistency in that view of the right honourable gentleman. I wish, sir, now to say a few words of a personal character as regards myself, because I was alluded to last evening by the honourable Member for Liverpool (Mr. T. P. O'Connor), who, I fear, is not in his place on this occasion, and who, although he belongs to a different party to myself, would not wish, I am sure, to misrepresent my conduct in the late

election at Deptford. I would say in regard to quoting election speeches, that I am surprised at honourable gentlemen below the gangway endeavouring to use a weapon of that kind, because we know that they live in glass houses in that respect. (Hear, hear.) If any Members ever lived in glass houses they are the Members below the gangway, and also some members of the Government. (Hear, hear.) They tell us they are not in favour of the separation of the two countries. I accept that statement as sincere, but nevertheless in the heat of political controversies in the provinces they must admit that they would be placed in a very awkward position, if the speeches which they then delivered were brought forward against them. (Hear, hear.) It might have happened that in the exigencies of the Deptford election, when I had a formidable opponent who was supported by letters from the Prime Minister and his son and by the right honourable gentleman, the Secretary of State for the Colonies, who stumped for him, that I might have used some expressions which seemed to be in fault, but I can assure the House that I offered no sentiment in that election that I need recall or that I am not prepared to abide by. (Opposition cheers.) Throughout the whole of that election the question of Home Rule did not come up at all ; I never was asked a single question on the subject of Home Rule, but I must admit that there was a great deal said about coercion, and in my election address I stated that Ireland ought to have the largest amount of self-government which was consistent with the security of the Empire. (Home Rule cheers.) I also blamed the Government—the late Liberal Government—for its coercive policy, by the doctrine adopted towards Ireland. I don't know that I have anything now to retract in this matter, and I can assure honourable gentlemen opposite that I am not prepared to back out of any pledges I gave during that election, in spite of the assertions of the honourable Member for Liverpool (Mr. T. P. O'Connor.) (Opposition cheers.) I can only repeat what I said in my speeches during the election, that I deeply regret that it was thought necessary by the Conservative party to refer to the coercion ; and it was some relief when Mr. Jesse Collings came forward with his cow—

(a laugh)—and when we approached the Irish question, seeing that we must have fallen, I preferred that we should be tossed by that cow. (Hear, hear, and a laugh.) We knew that we were in a difficulty then, and I now venture to hope that the state of Ireland will continue to improve and that there may be no necessity for coercive legislation in that country. (Hear, hear.) But when it is said by the Chancellor of the Exchequer that coercion is the old Tory policy, the traditional policy of the Tory party towards Ireland, I should like to know where he gets his support for that theory from? (Hear, hear.) It is the fact that the great majority of the coercive Acts relating to Ireland were passed by Liberal administrations, crowned by that most severe coercive Act of all—the Crimes Act. (Hear, hear.) I was not one who thought it was a mistake to allow the Crimes Act to lapse. (Hear, hear.) In making these remarks I would again say that as the Conservative party are now placed they are united as one man; that we will give to Ireland all she wants in the way of redressing just grievances, but we are not prepared to embark on a dangerous course which would risk the supremacy and unity of the Empire. (Cheers.) When so much is said about an alternative policy, I cannot help thinking that there is a very great fallacy in that constantly reiterated charge against us, that we have no alternative policy. What is the meaning of an alternative policy? You bring forward a Bill to greatly modify the Act of Union between England and Ireland in a way that we think dangerous, and our alternative policy seems to me to be simply to vote against the Bill you have brought in (Conservative cheers), or if you brought forward an abstract resolution, to vote against the abstract resolution. (Renewed cheers.) The Prime Minister seems to regard the whole British Constitution as a growth of upas trees (Cheers and counter-cheers), and when he begins with his axe to attack the Church, the Monarchy, I suppose, will be attacked another time (Oh, and opposition) if we pass this Bill, and then we shall be asked what is our alternative policy? Why, if the Monarchy had been attacked our alternative policy would have been to have opposed the measure. I think that is quite a sufficient

answer on that point. (Hear, hear.) I would say to the honourable Members below the gangway (the Parnellites) that all of us on these benches (the Conservatives) are desirous to redress the just grievances of Ireland. (Hear, hear.) I am not ashamed to acknowledge that I had the Irish support at the last election (Hear, hear), and although I shall vote against this Bill, I hope there will be no ill-feeling. I cannot separate myself from my party and vote for a measure which is not in accordance with my convictions. As this measure is not in accordance with my convictions, I can do no more than honestly go into the lobby against it, and I can assure honourable members that I shall at the same time keep all the pledges which I gave at the late election. (Cheers.)”

After the Home Rule Bill had been defeated in the House of Commons on June 7, Parliament was immediately dissolved, and a general election took place which ended about the middle of July. The Conservatives and Liberal Unionists combined returned 393 members; and the Radicals and Home Rulers, 275. The Liberals thus were left in a minority of 118.

William Evelyn again contested his seat at Deptford and was again returned, this time with a majority of over 600. His opponent was again Mr. Lalmohun Ghose. His election address was as follows :—

“ To the Electors of Deptford

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
June 23, 1886.

“ GENTLEMEN,—At the last general election having had the honour (after a candidature of nearly eleven months) of being returned to Parliament as the first representative of the Borough of Deptford, I now come forward to solicit a renewal of the high trust reposed in me last November.

“ You will remember that at the outset of my former candidature I expressed myself as opposed to the general policy of Mr. Gladstone’s second administration at home and abroad, especially to the Irish policy, resulting in the severe and harassing Crimes Act of 1882.



WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN

From a portrait by Havell (1884)



“ In my first election address, issued on New Year’s Day, 1885, I declared that what Ireland needed was ‘ a lenient and just administration, with as much local self-government as is consistent with the security of the Empire.’ You will also remember that on the accession to office of a Conservative Ministry in June 1885, I expressed my desire that a fair trial should be given to a Government which undertook the conduct of public affairs under very difficult and trying circumstances.

“ It is for you now to pronounce whether, during the short but eventful Parliament which, after a duration of less than six months, is now on the eve of dissolution, I have or have not endeavoured to fulfil my election pledges and do my duty towards the constituency which honoured me with its confidence.

“ A great and a new issue is now before us. Mr. Gladstone, having succeeded in overthrowing the late Government—which continued in office with great public advantage for seven months—has signalised his third premiership by bringing forward a Bill for setting up in Ireland a separate Parliament and a separate Government. From the condemnatory vote of the House of Commons rejecting the second reading of this Bill, the Premier now recklessly appeals to the country, regardless alike of political consistency and public convenience, while there has been a necessary postponement of sound practical legislation tending to the real improvement and benefit of the people of Great Britain and Ireland.

“ To this so-called Home Rule measure Mr. Gladstone has appended a plan for buying out Irish landlords at the risk of British tax-payers. This monstrous project he brought forward with much parade as an important part of his Irish policy.

“ The issues thus raised are above the level of ordinary party politics. In opposing such perilous and retrograde legislation, I rely on the support, not only of Conservatives, but of intelligent and patriotic Liberals, who, desirous as they are of redressing all just grievances of Ireland without resorting to what is called ‘ Coercion,’ yet view with distrust and alarm the measures on which the present Ministry

finds its appeal to the nation whose mandate it has exceeded and whose confidence it has abused.

“ I have the honour to be, gentlemen,
Your obedient and faithful servant,
W. J. EVELYN.”

William Evelyn expressed himself on the subject of Home Rule in the following terms at a meeting in June, at Sayes Court, of the members of the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League and of the North Ward of the Deptford Conservative Association :—

“ Mr. Ghose and his friends may ask, ‘ Why should we not have a local legislature in Ireland ? We have given self-government to the Colonies, why refuse it to the sister country ? ’ It is true we have given it to the Colonies, but there is a very great difference between granting self-government to the Colonies and granting it to Ireland in the way of affecting the supremacy of the Imperial Parliament of the United Kingdom. We have granted self-government to Australia, New Zealand, and Canada, and with very beneficial effect and little risk. The risk is that self-government may lead to separation, but if that happens in a distant country England still remains a great country, as she did when she lost the sway of the United States. But if we entered upon a course that led to a separation with Ireland, our very existence as a nation would be threatened. (Hear, hear.) We cannot afford to incur any such risk. Anything short of that we might be willing to grant to Ireland, and I am sure that Members on the Conservative side of the House would be as **anxious** to do anything in the way of justice as those on the Liberal side, or even, perhaps, as those somewhat noisy friends who sit on the same side as we do, but sit below the gangway and follow the leadership of Mr. Parnell. (Laughter.) ”

Further on in the same speech William Evelyn says :

“ When Mr. Ghose says that the only alternative is coercion, I cannot say he is logically right in that idea. I do not see why Ireland should not go on under a just and firm Government which would redress Irish grievances and not resort to any extraordinary or exceptional legislation, unless

some desperate circumstances arose which rendered coercion necessary. (Cheers.) ”

William Evelyn again, in a speech delivered at the New Cross Conservative Club in July, expressed his views on Home Rule in the following words :—

“ Your chairman has reminded me of my former career in Parliament. When I was returned as a very young man, perhaps too soon, to Parliament, one of the chief things I took up at that time was the principle of self-government, and I remember belonging to an Anti-Centralisation Society. I rank myself amongst the most ardent supporters of the principles of self-government, but this measure of Mr. Gladstone’s goes far beyond any reasonable principle of local self-government. (Cheers.) I am sure we should all be glad to give the Irish people all reasonable power of managing their own affairs (Hear, hear), but we are not prepared to have suddenly and violently forced upon us the proposal of two Parliaments in this United Kingdom. No, gentlemen, we will rally round the old principles of England, we will support the dignity of the Crown, the honour of the country, and if we are true to ourselves we will place in office, whether it is a Ministry of Conservative statesmen or of Liberal statesmen, men who will be true to the principles that we have inherited from our ancestors, principles which we hope to bequeath untarnished and unblemished to our posterity. (Loud cheers.) ”

In another speech in the New Cross Hall, William Evelyn said in reference to the Irish question :

“ Now, with regard to the Irish policy of the Government, you are aware two Bills were brought into the late House of Commons, one was the Government of Ireland Bill, and the other the Irish Land Purchase Bill. In the Government of Ireland Bill there was a provision for repealing, or rather for modifying the Act of Union, and for establishing a separate Parliament in Ireland, a statutory Parliament for the purpose of managing Irish affairs. In the provisions of that Bill there were a great many restrictions to prevent the proposed statutory Parliament from exceeding its duty. There were provisions against any interference with religion or establish-

ing a rival creed. Then the new Irish Parliament was forbidden to alter the customs or excise duties in Ireland, and there were many others greatly restricting the powers of this Statutory Parliament which would be a body very different from the old Parliament of Grattan, which was really an independent Parliament which had the power of discussing not only local questions, but Imperial questions, such as Peace and War, and which, by the Constitution of 1782, was rendered a perfectly independent Parliament, so that from 1782 to the Act of Union we had two separate and independent legislatures in this country. Mr. Gladstone now proposes to establish a Statutory Parliament, and declares it can be done with perfect safety for the supremacy of the Imperial Parliament and with no violation of the principle of unity of the Empire. (Oh, oh.) The question before you is whether Mr. Gladstone is justified in that assertion or not. (No, no.) . . .

“I must now tell you why I think this proposal of Mr. Gladstone for the modification of the Act of Union is a dangerous one. There is in it no element of finality. Under the Bill, should it become law, Ireland will have to pay a considerable sum, about £5,000,000, to the English Exchequer, and then Ireland will be restricted from any tampering with the excise and customs, and restricted otherwise. It would have no power to protect Irish industries, which was the one great object of Grattan, whose memory the Irish so reverence. There would be powers of restriction against interfering with religion or tyrannising over what is called a Loyalist minority. In all these matters I think the restrictions just and necessary if the Bill is to pass. But what would be the result? Why, constant agitation to bring back the Parliament of Grattan, the independent Parliament. (Cheers.) We shall not end the Irish question by granting Ireland a separate Parliament, but bring about the commencement of a new and more dangerous agitation than ever yet existed in that country. (Loud cheers.) There will be a constant effort to shake off the onerous restrictions which the Irish will say are unjustly imposed upon them. (Cheers.) A great agitation will be raised, and they will ask why they should not have Grattan’s Parliament of 1782. So that I am quite

certain, even if Mr. Parnell and his followers were sincere in saying they will be content with the present measure, they are not able to bind posterity. (Hear, hear.) I say, however sincere they may be—and it is a great stretch to give them credit for sincerity considering their former assertions—they could never answer for future generations and prevent the mischievous agitation which would certainly ensue supposing Mr. Gladstone's dangerous proposals were carried out. (Cheers and interruption.) Now we come to the question of coercion, which I have told you is not actually a question before us. It has been dragged into the controversy, and Mr. Gladstone, in his manifesto to the electors of Midlothian, declares there is no alternative between passing his measure of Home Rule and a policy of cruel and unjust coercion. (Oh, oh.) Now, I cannot for the life of me see the force of that reasoning. In the House of Commons and in many speeches of the Gladstonian party, I saw the same thing repeated over and over again. I cannot see why the maintenance of the liberty of the Parliament is inconsistent with a just and lenient administration of Irish affairs. (Hear, hear.)”

The result of the election at Deptford, ending as it did in a victory for William Evelyn, was a surprise to many, as it was known that some of the Irish Roman Catholics who had voted for him at the last election would vote against him this time. There was also a strong element of Nonconformist Liberalism in the constituency.

William Evelyn awaited the declaration of the poll all night in the Deptford Conservative Club, where there was a large gathering. It was about 3 o'clock in the morning when the result of the poll became known. Thousands of working men had remained to hear it declared, and when the result was announced at 3.30 there was an enthusiastic demonstration by the crowd outside the club and also by his friends inside it. The figures were as follows :—

EVELYN	3682
GHOSE	3055

William Evelyn therefore had a majority of 627. A working man in the crowd called out, “He is a fine old

English gentleman," and the phrase was taken up and vociferated with enthusiasm. William Evelyn tried to say a word or two, but he could not, for his feelings overcame him and his eyes filled with tears.

Soon after the election he left England to make a short stay in Ireland. He stayed with his maternal uncle, Mr. Massy-Dawson of Ballinacourty, Tipperary, and visited Cork among other places.

Lord Salisbury's Government came back into office, and Parliament opened on January 22, 1887. Sir Michael Hicks-Beach was Chief Secretary for Ireland, but he gave up his post, which was taken by Mr. Arthur Balfour, who, up to that time, had been holding the new office of Secretary for Scotland.

In a speech made at a meeting of the Deptford Conservative Association on January 14, William Evelyn, referring to Ireland, said that whilst he was prepared to support the rights of the landlord, he could not but regret the cruelty and barbarity of the evictions in Kerry, poor sickly people being turned out of their homes, etc.

He was always very attentive to local matters, and at this time he interested himself in the desire of the people of Deptford to establish free communication with the other side of the Thames. It was a question whether this would be best effected by a bridge, a subway, or a free ferry. On January 26 he presided at a meeting at Deptford to consider this question, and in the following May he accompanied two succeeding deputations to the House of Commons to interview the Chairman of the Metropolitan Board of Works. On both occasions he introduced the deputation, and made a speech in which he advocated the claim of Deptford for a free ferry. As this had no result, although a memorial signed by 5000 working men had been presented by the second deputation, another deputation was got up in July for the same object. William Evelyn accompanied it, and again made a speech in which he urged the great hardship and inconvenience to Deptford working men whose employment lay on the other side of the river to have to pay daily for crossing it.

He also interested himself in the question of the importation of butterine, or imitation butter, and the harm that

this was causing to the industry of butter-making in the country.

During the parliamentary sessions of 1886 and 1887 he was on the public committee on forestry.

The following speech of his was delivered in Parliament on April 1, during the debate on the Criminal Law Amendment Bill, on Mr. Parnell's amendment :—

“Sir, having the honour to represent a constituency containing a considerable Irish element, I trust that the House will allow me, in a very few words, to state the reasons why I feel bound to vote against the amendment proposed by the honourable member for Cork (Mr. Parnell). Notwithstanding such vehement invectives and imputations as we have just heard from the junior member for Northampton (Mr. Bradlaugh), public opinion in the country will, I think, acknowledge that, in bringing forward the present measure Her Majesty's Government were actuated by high and conscientious motives. To me, individually, it is a matter of regret that without any pressing or proved necessity a measure should have been introduced which, in some of its clauses, at least, is acknowledged to be an extreme measure of exceptional legislation for Ireland. Yet it must be evident to candid and impartial minds that since the action taken by the Government is not the easiest or most convenient from a party point of view, and since it was sure to lead to a strenuous opposition in this House, and to a stormy agitation in the country, that action must have been prompted simply by a sense of what its authors deemed to be their duty. The attacks on the Government during the present debate have proceeded from two of the four minorities into which the right honourable gentleman the Member for Midlothian (Mr. W. E. Gladstone) has declared that the House is divided—that is, from the Irish party on the one hand, and, on the other, from the regular Opposition. Now, with regard to the Irish party, it must be admitted that, in opposing coercion, they have been straightforward and consistent. In attacking the Government they are acting within their right, and though their language may be somewhat strong, some allowance should be made for the Oriental fervour of the Irish

temperament ; and I, for one, would not be disposed to connect the Irish party with crime or be too hard on them for speeches delivered in this House during the excitement of debate, or at agitated public meetings in the country. Admitting, as I do, their honesty of purpose, I am willing to believe in their disclaimer of all sympathy with crime. But the language of the regular Opposition is scarcely entitled to the same indulgent consideration. And when the right honourable gentleman the Member for Midlothian rises in his place in the front Opposition bench and, in solemn tones, lectures down on the present occupants of the Treasury bench, as if in this matter of Irish coercion they were sinners above all the Galileans, I cannot quite agree with the honourable member for Northampton that there is anything unfair in reminding the Member for Midlothian that his culpability is greater than that of any gentleman in this House, not excepting the right honourable gentleman the Member for Derby. The honourable member for Cork, in the eloquent and impressivespeech delivered by him this evening, favoured us with a laboured analysis of this Irish Coercion Bill of the Government, which is not yet printed. He also contended that the Gladstonian Coercion Act of 1870 was less stringent in its provisions than the Bill now under discussion. But on that particular point he was completely refuted by the right honourable gentleman the Chief Secretary for Ireland (Mr. A. J. Balfour) ; and I cannot but feel surprised that the honourable member for Cork, who is usually more careful, should have committed himself to a statement so inaccurate that it seems to have been made at haphazard. Then the honourable member for Cork adverted, at considerable length, to some jury cases, and to a Land Bill of the Government which is now before the other House ; but it is somewhat remarkable that, throughout the whole of his speech, he scarcely made a passing allusion to the amendment which he brought forward. Now, in bringing forward that amendment, I have no doubt that the honourable member for Cork acted in accordance with the constitutional precedent ; but though the amendment taken by itself may be perfectly regular, yet it seems open to the imputation of being perfectly

unpractical. We have already, in the Reports of Commission, and in the Returns laid on the tables of the House, ample information as to the state of Ireland. To go into Committee of the whole House on that subject would be a mere waste of time. The amendment then viewed by itself is simply obstructive ; it is a part of a policy of delay, a policy scarcely worthy, if I may say so, of the honourable member for Cork. But, Sir, when I consider the amendment not by itself, but in connection with the violent and intemperate attacks on the Government which has characterised this discussion, then the whole matter clearly resolves itself into a challenge of confidence in the present Government. We, on this side of the House, have to meet an attempt to overthrow the present administration and to replace it by a ministry presided over by the right honourable gentleman the Member for Midlothian. Such an attempt, if successful, would not, in my humble judgment, tend to the public advantage. It is true that, as a Unionist, and in the interests of the Union itself, I deplore the revival of coercion in a permanent form, and the departure from the policy of Lord Carnarvon in 1885. During my election contests in 1885 and 1886 I encountered the arguments of my able and eloquent Oriental antagonist, Mr. Lalmohun Ghose, by maintaining that coercion was a thing of the past, and that the Imperial Parliament would do for Ireland all, and more than all, than she could expect from a native Parliament at College Green. A similar line was adopted by other Conservative candidates ; but, henceforth, I fear that we must look abroad for other arguments in support of the Union. The adoption of the amendment could but lead to delay, and the honourable member for Northampton has truly said that the Bill is 'sure to pass.' Then why should all English and Scotch legislation, why should all legislation affecting the working classes of the United Kingdom be indefinitely postponed, in order to prolong a useless discussion which can only end in one way, as the honourable members have already made up their minds ? And be it remembered, also, that though this particular Bill is new, yet the subject itself has been discussed since the beginning of the century ; and the

present Bill is said to be the 87th Coercion Bill since the Union, and is based on the same principles as former measures of the same character. Let that which must be done, whether right or wrong, be done quickly. Surely the prolongation of this discussion would not be advantageous either to Ireland or to the Irish party in this House. Surely it would be better to get rid of this painful subject, and to proceed without delay to the consideration of the remedial measures which are to follow. To these measures I look forward with confidence, hoping and believing that they may not only complete and perfect the Land Acts of 1881 and 1885, but also succeed in restoring to distracted Ireland the blessings of tranquillity, prosperity, and contentment."

During the six years that the Conservatives were in power the split in the Liberal party widened and the Liberal Unionists even joined with the Tories over coercion. In the latter part of 1886 what was called the Plan of Campaign had been started in Ireland, which consisted in a combination among the peasants designed to protect themselves from the exaction of exorbitant rents.

The Government appointed a Commission under Lord Cowper, called the Cowper Commission, to inquire into the material resources of the country and particularly into land rents and land purchase, and this Commission reported in February 1887 that the refusal of some landlords to reduce rents, and the fact that the peasants could not pay them owing to the fall in prices, restriction of credit by the banks, and other circumstances, was the cause of the tenants combining. The Commission recommended "an earlier revision of judicial rents, on account of the straightened circumstances of Irish farmers." This induced the Government eventually to introduce a Bill which initiated some amelioration with regard to rents.

The new Crimes Bill surpassed in severity all former Coercion Acts, and a new departure was made in the fact that it was henceforth to be the permanent law of Ireland, and could be brought into force whenever the Government pleased.

On Monday night, April 18, William Evelyn voted in the

House of Commons in favour of the second reading of the Crimes Bill, which was carried by 370 votes to 269. This may seem inconsistent with his former declarations against coercion, but it must be remembered that his position was a very difficult one, and at present his feeling against a harsh Irish policy was balanced by his desire not to injure his party in any way. Meeting with no sympathy in his views about coercion either among acquaintances or the members of his party, the tide was too strong for him this time and he could not resist it. As Mr. Blunt said of him in his book called *The Land War in Ireland*, he had not the fibre of a fighter, and it would have required more than ordinary moral courage to stand quite alone and unsupported in such a crisis.

The next day, Tuesday, April 19, William Evelyn addressed the members of the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League at a concert in the Amersham Hall. In referring to his vote of the evening before he said :

“ You know that we had a division in the small hours of this morning, and I have passed a very anxious night waiting for the result. A messenger came to look me up at my house, and visited several clubs in search of me. What other places he visited I do not know ; I should exceedingly like to know, because it would give me some idea of what, in the opinion of the Whips of the Conservative party and the leaders of the Conservative party, are the haunts in which they are most likely to find me. About midnight I received a letter from Mr. Smith saying that every vote was of the greatest importance ; and of course it was a question upon which the fate of the Government depended. I therefore recorded my vote in favour of the Bill. (Prolonged cheers.) ”

William Evelyn had received the following letter from Mr. Frayling, a licensed victualler of Deptford, in reference to the Coercion Bill :—

“ THE TIGER TAVERN,
“ PRINCE STREET, DEPTFORD, S.E.,
“ April 18, 1887.

“ DEAR SIR,—I have the honour to forward you the first instalment of a memorial praying you to, *at least*, abstain from voting in favour of the present Coercion Bill.

“As one of the signatories to the memorial, I have been requested by some Conservatives, as well as Liberal friends, to take charge of it and send it to you.

“Trusting you will accede to its prayer,

“I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant and political supporter,

(Signed) C. B. FRAYLING.”

The memorandum was as follows :—

“*To Mr. Evelyn, M.P., the Honourable Member for Deptford*

“The Memorial of the Electors and other Residents of Deptford, of all shades of political opinions, sheweth that in the opinion of your memorialists, coercion is no remedy for the grievances of the people of Ireland, neither would it tend to the observance of law and order, but, on the contrary, exasperate the people of a country which is at present remarkably free from agrarian and other crimes.

“Your memorialists would remind you of your professions of anti-coercion in your address to the electors in 1885 and also in 1886, when in your election address and your speeches you confirmed your former professions. Your memorialists are deeply concerned at the apprehension of the troubles which may ensue should an extreme and permanent measure of coercion such as is now proposed by the Government become law.

“Your memorialists, knowing you to be a sincere supporter of the great Conservative party in all measures they intend for the public good and the welfare of the Empire, nevertheless implore you to withhold your vote, and at least abstain from supporting such a drastic Coercion Bill as is now before Parliament.”

(Then follow the signatures.)

William Evelyn's reply was as follows :—

“HOUSE OF COMMONS, *April 19, 1887.*

“DEAR SIR,—I write to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated yesterday, together with a memorial (numerously

and influentially signed by Deptford constituents, Conservative as well as Liberal) requesting me to abstain from voting on the second reading of the Criminal Law Amendment (Ireland) Bill, and reminding me of my election pledges against coercion. My views on that subject remain unchanged, but I could not well avoid voting on a question which involved the existence of the Government. In supporting the second reading I am not bound to uphold every clause of the Bill.

“ I remain,

Yours very truly,

(Signed) W. J. EVELYN.”

The following correspondence on the same subject also took place, and is taken from the *Greenwich and Deptford Observer* of April 29 :—

“ 352 NEW CROSS ROAD, S.E.,

“ April 12, 1887.

“ DEAR SIR,—I see in the *Daily News* of to-day it is reported that you have decided against coercion. If this is correct, I cannot doubt that it will give great satisfaction to many of your constituents.

“ I am aware that during the last contest we understood from your speeches that you were opposed to coercive legislation, but so many members of the present House of Commons seem to have forgotten their election pledges on this subject.

“ If not troubling you too much, I should like to know whether you have decided to vote for or against the second reading of this unrighteous Bill.

“ With compliments, I am, dear Sir,

Faithfully yours,

(Signed) JAMES BILLS.”

William Evelyn's reply was as follows :—

“ 119 PICCADILLY, W., April 19, 1887.

“ DEAR SIR,—I write a line in reply to your letter dated the 12th inst. With much reluctance I came to the conclusion that, as a member of the Conservative party, I had

no alternative but to vote for the second reading of the Irish Crimes Bill. Up to last night I had intended to absent myself from the division, but I found that I should be the only Conservative absentee unpaired or not prevented by illness from being in his place. I adhere to my views against coercion and can but hope that the more stringent clauses of the Bill will be amended in committee.

“ Believe me,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.”

On April 28 a meeting was held by the Deptford Radical and Liberal Association at the New Cross Public Hall, to protest against the Crimes Bill. Mr. Herbert Gladstone was in the chair, and the following speech of his is taken from the *Greenwich and Deptford Observer* for April 29, 1887 :—

“ The Chairman, in opening the proceedings, said their late candidate, Mr. Ghose, had contested the Borough with a gallantry and ability only equalled in his judgment by the generosity of the Liberal voters of this division, who accepted Mr. Ghose, although a stranger and connected with a distant land. Mr. Evelyn recorded his vote in favour of the Coercion Bill, in spite of his word pledged in his election address, and in letters which he had written to the leaders of the local Liberal party. Since Mr. Evelyn had voted he had written one of his constituents a letter which was the most extraordinary one he (the Chairman) had ever seen. He had no doubt Mr. Evelyn’s case was one of many of the Tory party. If Mr. Evelyn had voted against the Government, he would have been an outcast from Tory society, and would have been turned out of every Primrose Habitation, and blackballed from every club to which he had applied for admission. The Government said, whether there was crime or no crime, the National League was equally to blame, and must be put down at any cost. In his opinion, if there had been no evictions, there would have been no crime in Ireland. Crime was an evil thing in Ireland and England, and he considered that if English and Scotch people had to put up with the govern-

ment that Ireland had had, there would have been far more and far worse crime than there was in Ireland."

William Evelyn referred to the above speech shortly afterwards at a meeting in connection with the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League, which was held at Sayes Court, Deptford. In the course of it he said :

" Private members have their own opinions, but it would never do to forget that the Government of England after all is a party Government, and that, if each individual in the Conservative party or any other were to stand on his own crochets and refuse to give way there would be an end to government by party, and I think it would not tend to the advantage of public affairs. (Hear, hear.) So in what was said of me by Lord Spencer and the others, really, when we come to look at it, it really comes to nothing at all. I certainly pledged myself to oppose coercion, but I was not so much pledged as many Conservative candidates belonging to what I have called the left wing of the party. I don't know how it was with my friend, Mr. Baumann. I don't know whether he had 'votes for Baumann and no Coercion' adorning the streets of Peckham. I can only say that at Deptford there was nothing of the kind. All I said was that I was opposed to Coercion, and to exceptional measures for Ireland, and I had chiefly in view Mr. Gladstone's Crimes Bill of 1882, which, with its curfew clause and other severe enactments, was much more of a Coercion Bill than this Bill brought in by Lord Salisbury. (Hear, hear.) When Lord Salisbury's first Government was formed, I looked forward in the hope, as did Lord Salisbury himself, that we might have governed Ireland without exceptional measures, and that he might have had the high honour of putting an end to the era of special legislation. But in that hope we were disappointed. When I said that I reluctantly voted for the Bill of the present Government, the Criminal Law Amendment (Ireland) Bill, it was not that I considered that measure a measure of coercion, compared with former measures that have been brought in by former Governments, yet there were some clauses that I thought had a savour of coercion in them, and required to be very carefully watched. The Bill itself

may well be passed, and, having been well considered in committee and amended, I do not think it will deserve to be called a Coercion Bill. (Hear, hear.) Still, on looking through the clauses of the Bill, I saw there were some I did not like, and therefore it was that I had some little hesitation in supporting the measure. The first clause has been already very much improved by the concessions made by the Government, and so, as we go through the clauses of the Bill, if we ever get to the end at all, I trust it will come out of the House of Commons a really good and workable measure. (Hear, hear.)”

William Evelyn concluded his speech by defending himself from the recent attack by Mr. Herbert Gladstone. He complained that the latter did not attack him in the House of Commons, but chose to come down to Deptford and attack him there, and said that he had not met with much courtesy or consideration from either Mr. Herbert Gladstone or his father.

The following is a correspondence which took place between William Evelyn and Mr. Herbert Gladstone :—

“ 119 PICCADILLY, *May 4, 1887.*

“ SIR,—At a speech delivered at a public meeting in the New Cross Public Hall, on Thursday, April 28, you are reported to have said that I pledged myself to vote against the Irish Crimes Bill. All the Deptford local journals concur in attributing to you words to that effect. My object in writing to you is to ask you on what authority you made the above statement, which is incorrect, for I never gave any such pledge.

“ I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

W. J. EVELYN.”

The following was the reply of Mr. Herbert Gladstone :—

“ HOUSE OF COMMONS, *May 9, 1887.*

“ SIR,—I regret that, owing to pressure of engagements, I have not been able to reply earlier to your letter of the 4th inst.

“ My speech at Deptford was not reported in the leading London papers, except in the usual abbreviated shape, and as you do not quote any passage I am unable to write as definitely as I could wish.

“ You tell me that I am reported to have said that you pledged yourself to vote against the Irish Crimes Bill. Undoubtedly I spoke to that effect. On April 18 you wrote in these words to the Deptford Liberal Association. ‘ With regard to the question of Irish Coercion, after a very careful consideration of the provisions of the Criminal Law Amendment (Ireland) Bill, I have most reluctantly come to the conclusion that, desirous as I am of supporting Lord Salisbury’s Government, I am unable to vote for the second reading of the Bill.’ As these words stand I agree that they did not bind you to vote against the Bill. But considering that this Bill affects personal liberty, and that it is being passed in the teeth of five-eighths of the Irish representatives, it seemed to me almost inconceivable that any member could in justice to his constituents refrain from voting one way or the other on so vital a question. In your case, moreover, you had strongly denounced coercion in your election speeches, and your words seem to me to have pledged you to one course only in the clearest and most unmistakable way. These were your words : ‘ I have been asked whether I would vote for coercion in Ireland. I have always considered, long before I ever thought of being a candidate for Deptford, that the Crimes Act, which was introduced by Mr. Gladstone and a Whig Government in 1882, was a most abominable and unconstitutional measure.’

“ If that act was abominable, seeing that at the time the majority of Irish members were not opposed to coercion, and that crime then was far worse than now, it appears to me *a fortiori* that the present Bill is more ‘ abominable ’ and more ‘ unconstitutional.’ By the light of your election speeches I could only interpret your letter of the 18th in one way. Even the ‘ tremendous pressure ’ which you in a subsequent letter to the Deptford Liberal Association said was put upon Conservative members presumably to vote against their election pledges and their consciences, cannot relieve you of

the responsibility of having before your election led the public to believe that you were going to take a course which you subsequently repudiated.

“ I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

HERBERT J. GLADSTONE.”

William Evelyn received this letter on May 10, and he wrote in reply to it the same day as follows :—

“ 119 PICCADILLY, *May 10, 1887.*

“ SIR,—I have duly received your letter dated yesterday, which, unless I hear from you to the contrary, will be sent to the local Deptford press ; for, in addressing my constituents yesterday evening, I read a copy of my letter to you dated the 4th inst. and complained of not having received a reply thereto.

“ Though you admit that you had no authority for stating that I had pledged myself to vote against the Criminal Law Amendment (Ireland) Bill, it does not seem to occur to you that you owe me an apology for the misstatement.

“ I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

W. J. EVELYN.”

Mr. Herbert Gladstone replied as follows :—

“ 4 CLEVELAND SQUARE, *May 10, 1887.*

“ SIR,—I have no objection whatever to the publication of my letters.

“ It certainly has not occurred to me that I owe you an apology, for I do not admit that I had no authority for saying that you had pledged yourself to vote against coercion. I quoted the words you yourself used with reference to coercion during your election contest, and you do not dispute their authenticity.

“ I hold that these words pledged you to vote against exceptional repressive legislation for Ireland. This may be a matter of opinion, but it is an opinion which I think I am

justified in holding. Had you not felt that you were committed to your constituents to oppose coercion it is difficult to see why on April 18 you wrote to say that you could not support the second reading of the Crimes Bill which that very evening you did support, or why the next day you wrote to the effect that it was only 'tremendous pressure' and the fear of absolute isolation that forced you to vote against your own convictions.

"I shall be obliged if you will publish this with my first letter.

"I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

HERBERT J. GLADSTONE."

The following was a subsequent letter from Mr. Herbert Gladstone :—

"HOUSE OF COMMONS, *May 16, 1887.*

"SIR,—My attention has been called to a speech of yours as reported in the *Kentish Mercury* of May 13.

"Most of your remarks personal to myself though offensive and inaccurate are harmless. This passage, however, I am obliged to notice, 'Mr. H. Gladstone was in 1881 the minority Member for Middlesex (*sic*), a three-cornered constituency, and if he had gone to his constituents he would inevitably have lost his seat. What did Mr. Gladstone do? He resorted to the ingenious device of making an additional lordship of the Treasury for his hopeful son, and Mr. H. Gladstone, a Lord of the Treasury, without pay. In 1885 this second ingenious device was resorted to. He was given a nominal Deputy-Commissionership of the Board of Works which did not require him to vacate his seat, and then the salary of the lordship of the Treasury was given to him, not in respect of that but in respect of the office of Deputy-Commissioner of Works. A more flagrant job and evasion of the law could hardly have been perpetrated.' I was given no nominal Deputy-Commissionership in 1885. In February of that year the First Commissioner being in the House of Lords the duty of doing the business of the office in the House of Commons was assigned to me, and from April 1 to

June 20 I drew the salary belonging to a lordship of the Treasury.

“There never was a minority Member for Middlesex, a fact which I should have thought was well known to the least informed Member of Parliament. In 1881 I was one of the Members for Leeds, and in August of that year, upon being appointed a Junior Lord of the Treasury, I vacated my seat and was re-elected without opposition.

“I ask you whether a more flagrant falsification of facts than this statement of yours could possibly be perpetrated?

“I am sending this letter to the Deptford papers, and remain,

“Your obedient servant,

HERBERT J. GLADSTONE.”

The reply was as follows :—

“HOUSE OF COMMONS, *May 17, 1887.*

“SIR,—I write to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated yesterday correcting my statement as to your having represented Middlesex. On this minor point I was undoubtedly mistaken. You were an unsuccessful candidate for Middlesex in April 1880, you were elected for Leeds in May 1880, and on your appointment as a Lord of the Treasury you vacated your seat for Leeds, and were re-elected in August 1881.

“You do not dispute my main contention that a super-numerary Lordship of the Treasury was expressly created for you.

“Recollect that in this controversy you are the assailant. Your speech at New Cross Public Hall seems to me better to deserve the epithets ‘offensive and inaccurate’ than anything that I may have said at Deptford in reply and self-defence on the 9th inst.

“I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

W. J. EVELYN.”

Mr. Herbert Gladstone replied as follows :—

“HOUSE OF COMMONS, *May 18, 1887.*

“SIR,—I do not wish to prolong this correspondence *ad infinitum*. I have shown that without the smallest justification you made a most serious charge by a complete reversal of facts. You now say that I do not dispute your ‘main’ contention that a supernumerary Lordship was expressly created for me. Most certainly I do. Had you considered the matter at all you would have found that the Treasury is in commission and that the Crown can add at will to that commission, according to the interests of the public service. On my appointment I was attached to the Irish office and was under Mr. Forster until May 1882.

“If you now confine your attack to the subject of my being put into office it is obvious that I cannot reply to you, and when you justify this attack by saying that I was the assailant, I fail to see why because I attack you for your Irish views, you should reply by accusing the Prime Minister of perpetrating a job, the grossness of which you endeavoured to substantiate by extraordinary misstatements. In conclusion I must express my regret if anything that I have said or written bears the character of an attack on your personal honour and good faith. I don’t think that it is so, though I adhere to the strongest condemnation of your political action in the Irish question.

“There can be no question that the baseless charge which you have made and which I have demonstrated to be without foundation, and for making which you have expressed no regret while admitting your grave inaccuracy, does impute not to me only, but to the late Prime Minister as well, the meanest and most contemptible motives.

“It may be as well to send these last letters with any reply you like to make to the Deptford papers.

“I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

HERBERT J. GLADSTONE.”

William Evelyn's reply was as follows :—

“ HOUSE OF COMMONS, *May 18, 1887.*

“ SIR,—I reciprocate your wish that this correspondence should not be prolonged ; moreover, I accept all your statements of fact touching yourself as correct, and where those statements differ from information given to me I will conclude that my informants were wrong and that you are right.

“ I never meant to complain, and no sensible man could complain that Mr. Gladstone should desire to place his son in a post for which he was fitted by capacity and education. What I found fault with was that whereas there had previously, according to universal custom and precedent, been only three Junior Lords of the Treasury, Mr. Gladstone should have created a fourth. You state in answer that ‘ the Treasury is in commission.’ This is true in itself, but does not prove that the First Lord of the Treasury is morally justified in increasing the number of Treasury officials whenever his personal exigencies suggest such increase.

“ When I addressed my constituents on the 9th instant, I did so with the feeling that you had somewhat bitterly and unfairly assailed me, and that you had omitted to reply to my letter dated the 4th instant.

“ Regretting that any part of my speech should have given offence.

“ I am, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

W. J. EVELYN.”

On May 12 William Evelyn presented a petition to Parliament in favour of leasehold enfranchisement.

On Thursday, June 14, there were five divisions on the Criminal Law Amendment Act, but William Evelyn was absent.

During the summer of 1887 Queen Victoria's Jubilee was celebrated all over England. On June 16, William Evelyn attended a banquet given by the West Kent and Carlton Club to celebrate it, and in the course of his speech he said :

“He did not quite agree with Mr. Boord’s suggestion that the Crimes Act should be made to apply to England, but without dwelling too much on matters on which they might differ he would remark that they were all agreed on the general principle of Conservatism, and in confidence in the present Premier. (Applause.) In his foreign policy Lord Salisbury upheld manfully the interest and honour of England. (Cheers.) In his domestic policy they felt that he was also a true Englishman, and that they might trust him to the fullest extent that any political party ever trusted its leader.”

On June 19 William Evelyn presented a petition from the inhabitants of Deptford and the vicinity in favour of the establishment of an Anglo-American Tribunal for the decision of all questions affecting the mutual relations of the two nations. The petitioners referred to the importance of avoiding such friction as that which had recently taken place on the fisheries question, and expressed the hope that the establishment of such a tribunal as that proposed would lead to an international system of arbitration. The petition had 750 signatures.

On the same evening William Evelyn presented two petitions from inhabitants of New Cross and the neighbourhood and women ratepayers of Hatcham and Lee, in favour of the extension of the franchise to women.

CHAPTER VI

END OF PARLIAMENTARY CAREER

ON September 9 a very unfortunate incident occurred at Mitchelstown in Co. Cork. The following account of it is a quotation from John Morley's *Life of Gladstone*.

"A meeting of some six thousand persons assembled in a large public square at Mitchelstown, in the county of Cork. It was a good illustration of Mr. Gladstone's habitual strategy in public movements, that he should have boldly and promptly seized on the doings at Mitchelstown as an incident well fitted to arrest the attention of the country. 'Remember Mitchelstown' became a watchword. The Chairman, speaking from a carriage that did duty for a platform, opened the proceedings. Then a file of police endeavoured to force a way through the densest part of the crowd for a Government note-taker. Why they did not choose an easier mode of approach from the rear, or by the side; why they had not got their reporter on to the platform before the business began; and why they had not beforehand asked for accommodation as was the practice, were three points never explained. The police, unable to make a way through the crowd, retired to the outskirts. The meeting went on. In a few minutes a larger body of police pressed up through the thick of the throng to the platform. A violent struggle began, the police fighting their way through the crowd with batons and clubbed rifles. The crowd flung stones and struck out with sticks, and after three or four minutes the police fled to their barracks—some two hundred and fifty yards away. So far there is no material discrepancy in the various versions of this dismal story. What followed is matter of conflicting testimony. One side alleged that a furious throng rushed

after the police, attacked the barrack, and half murdered a constable outside, and that the constables inside in order to save their comrade and to beat off the assailing force, opened fire from an upper window. The other side declare that no crowd followed the retreating police at all, that the assault on the barrack was a myth, and that the police fired without orders from any responsible officer, in mere blind panic and confusion. One old man was shot dead, two others were mortally wounded and died within a week.

“Three days later the affray was brought before the House of Commons. Anyone could see from the various reports that the conduct of the police, the resistance of the crowd, and the guilt or justification of the bloodshed, were all matters in the utmost doubt and demanding rigorous inquiry. Mr. Balfour pronounced instant and peremptory judgment. The thing had happened on the previous Friday. The official report, however rapidly prepared, could not have reached him until the morning of Sunday. His officers at the Castle had had no opportunity of testing their official report by cross-examination of the constables concerned, nor by inspection of the barrack, the line of fire, and other material elements of the case. Yet on the strength of this hastily drawn and unsifted report received by him from Ireland on Sunday, and without waiting for any information that eye-witnesses in the House might have to lay before him in the course of the discussion, the Irish Minister actually told Parliament once for all, on the afternoon of Monday, that he was of opinion, ‘looking at the matter in the most impartial spirit, that the police were in no way to blame, and that no responsibility rested upon anyone except upon those who convened the meeting under circumstances which they knew would lead to excitement and might lead to outrage!’ The country was astounded to see the most critical mind in all the House swallow an untested police report whole; to hear one of the best judges in all the country of the fallibility of human testimony, give off-hand in what was really a charge of murder, a verdict of *Not Guilty*, after he had read the untested evidence on one side. The rest was all of a piece. The Coroner’s inquest was held in due course. The proceedings

were not more happily conducted than was to be expected where each side followed the counsel's ferocious exasperation. The jury after some seventeen days of it, returned a verdict of wilful murder against the chief police officer and five of his men. This inquisition was afterwards quashed (February 10, 1888) in the Queen's Bench, on the ground that the Coroner had perpetrated certain irregularities of form. Nobody has doubted that the Queen's Bench was right ; it seemed as if there had been a conspiracy of all the demons of human stupidity in this tragic bungle, from the first forcing of the reporter through the crowd, down to the inquest on the three slain men and onwards.

“ The Coroner's inquest having broken down, reasonable opinion demanded that some other public inquiry should be held. Even supporters of the Government demanded it. If three men had been killed by the police in connection with a public meeting in England or Scotland, no Home Secretary would have dreamed for five minutes of resisting such a demand. Instead of a public inquiry, what the Chief Secretary did was to appoint a confidential departmental committee of policemen privately, to examine, not whether the firing was justified by the circumstances, but how it came about that the police were so handled by their officers that a large force was put to flight by a disorderly mob. The three deaths were treated as mere accident and irrelevance. The committee was appointed to correct the discipline of the force, said the Irish Minister, on December 3, 1888, and in no sense to seek justification for actions which, in his opinion, required no justification. Endless speeches were made in the House and out of it, Members went over to Mitchelstown to measure distances, calculate angles, and fire imaginary rifles out of the barrack window ; all sorts of theories of ricochet shots were invented, photographs and diagrams were taken. Some held the police to be justified, others held them to be wholly unjustified. But without a judicial inquiry, such as had been set up in the case of Belfast in 1886, all these doings were futile. The Government remained stubborn. The slaughter of the three men was finally left just as if it had been the slaughter of three dogs. No other in-

cident of Irish administration stirred deeper feelings of disgust in Ireland, or of misgiving and indignation in England.

“Here was in a word, the key to the new policy. Every act of Irish officials was to be defended. No constable could be capable of excess. No magistrate could err. No prison rule was over harsh. Every severity technically in order must be politic.”

During September there began to bearumour that William Evelyn intended to resign his seat in Parliament owing to his intense disapproval of the Irish policy of the Government. In that month a meeting of working men was held at Deptford at which a resolution was passed that the Government should make a searching inquiry into the conduct of the police in firing on the people at Mitchelstown. The Chairman of the meeting forwarded the resolution to William Evelyn together with the following letter :—

“TIGER TAVERN, PRINCES STREET, DEPTFORD,
September 14, 1887.

“Sir,—I beg to forward you the copy of a resolution unanimously passed at a meeting of working-men electors at Deptford, held last evening (13th) at the Tiger Tavern ; and will thank you if you will kindly give an expression of opinion on it.

“I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

CHARLES COMPTON.”

William Evelyn replied as follows :—

“OXFORD AND CAMBRIDGE CLUB, PALL MALL, S.W.,
September 14, 1887.

“DEAR SIR,—I have duly received your letter enclosing the copy of a resolution passed at a meeting of working-men electors at Deptford yesterday evening, and you ask me for an expression of opinion on the resolution. In answer, I beg leave to say, that I so far agree with the resolution as to think that the deplorable occurrence at Mitchelstown on the 9th inst. is so grave as to require an official investigation before

some reliable and impartial tribunal. So far as I can judge at present, the police in firing on the people exceeded their duty. I am aware that this opinion of mine is not shared by the extreme Orange party in Ireland, but much as I value the honour of representing Deptford, I would rather resign my seat than appear by my vote to sanction any cruel proceedings against the Irish people.

“ I remain,

Yours faithfully,

W. J. EVELYN.”

A few days after this another conference was held at Deptford to further consider the attitude of William Evelyn towards the Irish policy of the Government. A copy of a letter from the First Lord of the Treasury, at which he said an inquiry was to be held into the Mitchelstown affair, was sent to William Evelyn, who replied as follows :—

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
September 23, 1887.

“ MY DEAR SIR,—I thank you for sending me a copy of the official reply to your letter of the 15th inst., addressed to Mr. Smith. I do not consider the reply as satisfactory, inasmuch as the ‘ inquiry ’ is (if I mistake not) to be conducted by the notorious Captain Plunket.

“ Believe me, yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.”

A general conversation then took place, during which William Evelyn’s present conduct was highly approved of. It was resolved to convene a public meeting of Irishmen to hear what William Evelyn had to say with regard to his line of conduct and to hear what his future course of action would be.

On September 27, William Evelyn wrote the following letter to Mr. Compton, chairman of the above-mentioned meeting, which was read at a future conference at Deptford :—

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
September 27, 1887.

“ DEAR SIR,—In reply to your letter dated the 22nd inst., which I hope you will pardon me for not having sooner

answered, I beg leave to assure you that my opinion on the action of the police at Mitchelstown remains unchanged. Looking at the present aspect of the Irish question, I am obliged to reconsider my position as Member for Deptford. I hope to address my constituents in January, when in view of the late regrettable and painful development by Lord Salisbury's Government of a severe and harsh Irish policy, I may feel it my duty to resign the high trust which the constituency of Deptford has twice done me the honour of reposing in me.

“ I remain, yours faithfully,

W. J. EVELYN.

“ *P.S.*—I have received a letter, dated Mitchelstown, the 24th inst., from Mr. Wilfrid Blunt, who, as you may perhaps remember, was in 1885 the Conservative candidate for North Camberwell. I subjoin an extract from Mr. Blunt's letter :

“ ‘ What Chamberlain is reported to have said about the police nobly defending their barracks is utter nonsense. The barracks were not attacked except by a few boys throwing stones, and as a matter of fact there are only six panes of glass broken, two of which were admittedly broken by the police themselves. ’ ”

The Chairman said that as a Conservative he regretted the prospect of losing William Evelyn's services as Member for Deptford, but at the same time he could not help feeling that the honourable gentleman's self-sacrifice, dictated as it no doubt was by high conscientious motives, did him great credit. After full deliberation the conference decided to postpone further action until the intended public meeting had been held.

The full letter from Mr. Wilfrid Blunt was as follows :—

“ MITCHELSTOWN, *September 24, 1887.*

“ MY DEAR MR. EVELYN,—I think you will like to hear from me from this place. I came here last Wednesday and have attended the inquest and also O'Brien's trial. With regard to the first, although it is not yet over, it seems to be absolutely certain that the police will be proved to have been

throughout the aggressors and to have had no sort of justification for firing on the people. I heard Dillon give his evidence, and the counsel for the police hardly attempted to shake his evidence, while the police themselves have confessed to firing without orders. I have examined the locality thoroughly and find the corner of the square, where the mob was, fifty-four yards from the barracks and so placed that, in order to fire into the square, it must have been necessary for the police to lean quite out of the window, for the square is to their right, and as you know a man firing from the right shoulder has a very awkward shot. It was not therefore in self defence but in anger and revenge. I notice a very bad and aggressive feeling here on the part of the police towards the people ; and yesterday under Captain Plunkett's orders they very nearly managed to bring about another fight, and it was only Dillon's presence that prevented trouble. This I saw with my eyes.

"As to the trial, though there is no doubt O'Brien did speak more or less in the sense complained of, there has not been produced an atom of *evidence* which would weigh with an English jury. It is clear that the reports by the police were written after they had seen the newspapers and in collusion with each other ; and the whole thing has been a mockery of law, whatever may be thought of its political necessity.

"I am glad you have protested against the bloodshed. If the Government is to carry through its policy—and it *cannot* really succeed—it must be through rivers of blood.

"I see here things I could not have believed possible in any English speaking country in this year of grace 1887.

"Yours very truly,

WILFRID SCAWEN BLUNT.

"What Chamberlain is reported to have said about the police nobly defending their barracks is utter nonsense. The barracks were not attacked except by a few boys throwing stones—and as a matter of fact there are only six panes of glass broken in it, two of which were admittedly broken by the police themselves."

William Evelyn's position was made doubly difficult by the fact that his views on Ireland met with no sympathy

among a great number of his acquaintances, for most of them, being Conservative in their sympathies, shared the views of the majority of the Protestants in Ulster. William Evelyn was always strongly averse to any violence, and the thought of any human being suffering injustice or oppression of any kind always aroused his indignation. He afterwards described his attitude towards the Mitchelstown affair in a speech on November 3, in these words :

“ So my difficulties continued, till the Mitchelstown affair on the 9th September. When I read on the 10th September the account of that horrible event (Cheers)—the bloody shooting of the people at Mitchelstown and the slaughter of three innocent men, I felt that that was the last straw, to use the proverb, that breaks the camel’s back. (Cheers.) I could stand it no longer. On that very day, the 10th of September, I wrote a letter to Mr. Smith, the leader of the House of Commons, in which I strongly urged the Government to disavow the firing on the people at Mitchelstown. I added this sentence in my letter, ‘ Unless the Government take this course (that was to disavow the action of the police in firing on the people), I cannot support them in that which really can only be designated as a policy of slaughter.’ ”

On October 6 a special meeting of the Executive Committee of the Deptford Conservative Association took place at Deptford. William Evelyn was present at it, and a resolution was unanimously adopted asking him to reconsider his intention of resigning his seat. A further conference was held soon afterwards in consequence of the receipt of another letter from William Evelyn which ran as follows :—

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
October 13. ”

“ MY DEAR SIR,—Adverting to your letter dated the 11th inst., and received by me to-day, it is quite true that such a resolution was carried. It is not correct to say that I acquiesced in it. There is no chance of my retracting my expression of my opinion as to the present aspect of the Irish question. The only point under my consideration is whether or not I should resign my seat for Deptford, and as I do

not think it fair to keep the constituency in suspense, I shall probably in a very few days publicly notify my decision.

“Believe me, yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.”

On October 19, William Evelyn wrote the following letter to Mr. Jacob, Vice-Chairman of the Deptford Conservative Association :—

“WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
October 19, 1887.

“DEAR MR. JACOB,—At a meeting of the Executive Committee of the Deptford Conservative Association on the 6th instant, the Committee, after requiring and receiving from me an explanation of my views on the recent Irish policy of Lord Salisbury’s Government, passed a resolution expressive of a hope that I would reconsider those views. You, as Vice-chairman of the Association, presided at the meeting. I was there by desire of the Committee.

“I now write to request you to let the Committee and the Association know, not only that further consideration has confirmed the views expressed by me at the meeting, but that I have most reluctantly come to the conclusion that, under present circumstances, I can no longer be of service to our party in the House of Commons and that, on the re-assembling of Parliament, I shall feel it my duty to resign my seat, and not to seek re-election. You and the Committee will be so good as to regard this resolve as fixed and final, and to take measures accordingly in view of the expected vacancy.

“Neither the Conservative leaders nor my friends at Deptford should be surprised at this announcement. Since the memorable change of policy in 1886, my parliamentary position in regard to the Irish question has been difficult—I may almost say—painful. Strongly opposed to the policy of coercion, yet most reluctant to separate myself from the party, I have at various times made representations to the Leaders. The last occasion of my doing so was on the 10th of September, when, on reading in the London Journals the account of the Mitchelstown affair, I strongly urged that, assuming the newspaper reports to be correct, the Govern-

ment should disavow the action of the police in firing on the people. A few days afterwards the Chief Secretary for Ireland, in the House of Commons, justified and upheld all that the police had done at Mitchelstown.

"The Irish Crimes Act, which we were told was to be employed for the repression and detection of crime, is now openly perverted to such political purposes as the suppression of public meetings and of the liberty of the Irish Press. In the recent utterances of Conservative leaders I see no indication of any intention to recede from the fatal policy on which the Government has entered. And if they do not recede they must go forward.

"To inflict on Ireland, under the name of Law and Order, a system of one-sided tyranny, to attack the liberty of the Press, to suppress public meetings by force, this is not government, but a confession of inability to govern. And if we cannot govern Ireland the only way left is to allow the Irish to try the experiment of governing themselves. We must, in fact, concede their claim for a separate Parliament and a separate Executive. Hence the present action of the Ministry (as I endeavoured to show on the 6th instant) is not only at variance with the best traditions of our Party, but it is a deadly blow at those Unionist principles for which we have contended.

"Thanking you and other friends for past kindness and support.

"I remain, dear Mr. Jacob,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.

"*P.S.*—As my conduct has been publicly commented on, I reserve to myself the right of publishing this letter."

William Evelyn received the following letter from Mr. Bills:—

"16 SOUTH STREET, GREENWICH,
October 19, 1887.

"MY DEAR SIR,—You will probably remember my writing to you in April last on the subject of the Coercion Bill which was then before the House of Commons, and in your reply

you stated that 'you voted for the second reading with great reluctance and hoped that the more stringent clauses might be amended in Committee'—but there seems to be more stringency than many even of its supporters dreamed of.

"Allow me, therefore, as one of your constituents to assure you how highly many of us regard the very honourable course you are now taking, and some of us even would be glad if you could see your way clear to take the same action as Mr. Buchanan, one of the Members for Edinburgh.

"With compliments,

I am, dear Sir,

Yours faithfully,

JAMES BILLS."

On October 24 a crowded meeting of Liberal electors was held at Deptford to consider the steps to be taken by the Liberal party in view of William Evelyn's resignation, and the following resolution was carried :—

"That this meeting of the Electors of Deptford cordially endorses the views laid down in the recent letter of Mr. Evelyn to his constituents, that the fatal policy of the Government in inflicting on Ireland under the name of law and order, a system of one-sided tyranny, attacking the liberty of the press, suppressing public meeting by force, is not government, but a confession of inability to govern, and that if we cannot govern Ireland the only way left is to allow the Irish to try the experiment of governing themselves; and we thank Mr. Evelyn for appreciating the situation and stepping out of the way, so that the electors of Deptford may have an opportunity of expressing their views on the subject."

On October 28 the Deptford Conservative Association passed the following resolution at a meeting :—

"1. That this meeting having considered Mr. Evelyn's letter announcing his intention of resigning his seat at the reassembling of Parliament, approve of the course he proposes to take, and trust that he will carry his intention into effect, as soon as circumstances will permit.

"2. That apart from the Irish question, on which this Association totally differs from Mr. Evelyn's views, the Associa-

tion desires to express its thanks to Mr. Evelyn for his past services to the borough as its representative."

One of William Evelyn's greatest friends was Mr. Wilfrid Blunt of Crabbet Park, near Three Bridges in Sussex, and both of them held the same views on Ireland. Mr. Blunt went over to Ireland and held a meeting at Woodford on October 23, under the English Home Rule Union, to express indignation at the cruel evictions which had recently taken place on Lord Clanricarde's estate. The meeting was dispersed by the police, and Mr. Blunt was taken prisoner and was sentenced under the Crimes Act to two months' imprisonment.

The following is an account of the meeting at Woodford from a speech by Sir Horace Davy :—

"The meeting at Woodford was an English meeting, with an Englishman as Chairman, with English ladies present, and English speakers told off to address their Irish fellow-subjects, both chairman and speakers representing the Home Rule movement in England. It was a meeting not of the National League, but of an English association, to express English sympathy with the Irish people, and to protest firmly, but in a manner perfectly orderly, the indignation of Englishmen at the suppression of free speech, and at the heartless evictions of pauperised men and innocent women and children. It was carefully arranged that if the police arrived the assembly should make way for them, and Mr. Blunt announced that he should not desist from holding the meeting until he was arrested. Such a thing as aggressive conduct against the police was not dreamed of for a single moment.

"On Saturday morning Mr. Blunt's posters convened the meeting. At five o'clock in the afternoon of Saturday, the 22nd, the official intimation that the meeting would be suppressed by force was received, and on Sunday morning the Castle proclamation was posted up. The proclamation said, on the ground of certain sworn information, the promoters of the meeting wished to interfere with and resist the law. That meant that they wished to encourage the tenants of Woodford to resist evictions which had yet to take place. But when the meeting was held, the evictions

had been stopped, and the meeting could not possibly have the effect of encouraging tenants to resist what was already past. The meeting was solely a protest against the cruelty exercised upon the tenants already evicted. A breach of the peace was impossible, unless the police interfered, because the whole audience was unanimous.

“The meeting was held in an enclosed field, which is private property. When the meeting began the police attempted to stop it without making arrests. Divisional Magistrate Byrne, who holds a position analogous to that of a sub-sheriff in England, came in person with his myrmidons and personally hustled the occupants of the platform. He struck Lady Anne Blunt in the chest with his fist, and thrust his thumb deep into her neck so as nearly to throttle her. It was only after a long struggle that Mr. Blunt was arrested, and then he walked off quietly to the prison. The people made no movement, but the police charged into them and bludgeoned over thirty people, some of them very seriously. Mr. Keary, who ran to the rescue of a little boy, was brutally batoned. Mr. J. Roche, President of the Local Association, was assailed by a policeman and struck in return. For this he has been sentenced to hard labour, perhaps, too, because he had been Mr. Blunt’s host.

“No time was allowed to obtain counsel, and had Mr. Harrington arrived fifteen minutes later Mr. Blunt would have been undefended. His judges were a decayed racing man (who at the time was being county courted for over £2000, and was therefore dependent on his salary of £500 a year) and an ex-grocer from Limerick. No attempt was made to prove an intention to incite to a breach of the peace. The magistrates were simply set to decide that the police were justified in interfering with the meeting, not because it was wrong in itself, but because a proclamation had been issued against it. The magistrates first said the proclamation was valid by the Crimes Act. Mr Harrington pointed out that in that case he was entitled to a dismissal under sec. 12, subsec. 2 of the Crimes Act, which provides that such a proclamation, to be valid, must appear in the *Dublin Gazette* previously, which it had not done in this case. The magis-

trates then immediately changed their minds and said the proclamation was valid under common law."

William Evelyn received the following letter from Canon Fannan :—

"CATHOLIC CHURCH, DEPTFORD, S.E.,
"October 22, 1887.

"DEAR MR. EVELYN,—I can hardly give adequate expression to my sense of your chivalrous conduct in giving so signal a reproof to the heads of the party with which you have been so long connected, by resigning your seat in Parliament. I felt sure that the cruel and oppressive tactics which that party so quickly exhibited, and is now carrying through with such fatal perversity, would prove repellent in the highest degree to any man of noble and humane instincts, as I know you to be. A few such men, even now, would make the Government pause in its violent courses, but, unfortunately, political honour is almost dead when men violate the promises solemnly given at the last general election, and do not and will not recognise the vital distinction in the mandate given to the Government, so admirably set forth in your letter to Mr. Jacob.

"You are no doubt aware that the vast majority of my flock comes from that ill-fated land, so recently the theatre of what can be called by no other name than legalised murder, of which Mitchelstown is but one of countless scenes. Acquainted as I am with their inmost feeling on all matters touching the interests of their country, I can offer you, on their behalf, as well as on my own, sincere gratitude for the bold and manly course you have pursued—a course so rarely followed by public men in these degenerate days. You stood already high in their regard because of personal worth and kindly heart, but you have now secured a much higher and more lasting place in the hearts of priest and people.

"Permit me, in conclusion, to hope that under happier auspices you may be once again 'to the fore,' as we say in Ireland, to help in securing a peaceful and enduring settlement of the long and bitter quarrel between your country and ours.

"With heartfelt wishes for your welfare,

"Yours faithfully,

M. P. CANON FANNAN."

William Evelyn's reply was as follows :—

“ WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
Monday, October 24, 1887.

“ DEAR CANON FANNAN,—Accept my best thanks for the kind expression in your letter of the 22nd inst. But you give me far more credit than I deserve.

“ If only a few Conservative members would support my protest against the present Irish policy of the Government, ministers might, perhaps, be induced to pause.

“ The suppression of the meeting at Woodford yesterday, and the arrest of Mr. Wilfrid Blunt, are proceedings alike deplorable and futile.

“ Believe me, with much respect,

Yours faithfully,

W. J. EVELYN.”

Mr. Charles J. Darling, Q.C. (afterwards Mr. Justice Darling), was selected as the Conservative candidate to contest the seat which would become vacant after William Evelyn's retirement and Mr. Blunt was chosen as the Liberal candidate. William Evelyn strongly supported Mr. Blunt and hoped that there would be so much sympathy for him on account of his imprisonment that he would be returned to Parliament.

At a meeting of the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League the following letter was read from William Evelyn :—

“ WOTTON, DORKING, SURREY,
November 3, 1887.

“ DEAR SIR,—I write to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated the 1st instant, enclosing a copy of a resolution passed by the Executive Committee of the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League, expressive of regret that I should resign my seat from inability to support the present Irish policy of Her Majesty's Government. That regret is shared by myself, and I have to thank the Committee for the courteous terms in which the resolution is drawn up.

“ As the Deptford Conservatives are not unanimous on

the difficult question of the Irish policy, I would venture to suggest to the Habitation the advisability of not opposing the candidature of Mr. Wilfrid Blunt. If we postpone the entering on a contest till the next general election, we shall, I hope, by that time, be reunited and better prepared.

“ May I ask you to be so good as to submit this letter to the consideration of the Committee ?

“ Believe me, yours faithfully,
W. J. EVELYN.”

William Evelyn endeavoured to form a Home Rule Association in the Conservative ranks. The *Pall Mall Gazette* of November 4, 1887, alludes to it in these words :

“ It is a forlorn enterprise, but it bespeaks the man of faith and courage. We are glad to see that some of his Conservative supporters at Deptford have passed a resolution declaring that ‘ it is the duty of moderate Conservatives to combine and form a Metropolitan Conservative Association with the object of endeavouring to urge upon the Metropolitan Conservative M.P.’s to represent to the Government the injurious effect the fatal policy of coercion will have upon the party ’ ! No doubt it is their duty, but England expects that hardly a Conservative among them all will do his duty.”

On November 14 the Churchill Conservative Club held a meeting at which they passed a resolution calling upon William Evelyn to resign his position as president of the club.

The following speech was delivered at Sayes Court, Deptford, on November 3, at a meeting which was held in order to hear William Evelyn’s explanation of his views on the Irish question :—

“ Mr. Evelyn, who rose amid loud cheers, said—I can assure you, gentlemen, that I wish that this hall was only large enough to contain the whole of my constituency. (Interruption—A voice, ‘ Why were we debarred from entering at the gates without tickets ? ’) Continuing, the speaker said—It was my order that the gates should be thrown open, and that any electors who wished to attend this meeting should be allowed to come in. (Cheers.) So

much, then, for the statement that this meeting was not free to anyone who wished to attend. (A voice, 'I wish to ask a question.' Cries of 'Chair' and 'Sit down.') I claim, gentlemen, on this occasion, a fair hearing. (Cheers.) Mr. Darling had a ticket meeting last week, and he was perfectly justified in holding such a meeting. No imputation should rest on me for doing the same, and I claim fair play. (A voice, 'Why don't you open the doors?') Let them be opened. (This order was followed by great confusion.) There are two reasons that I think entitle me to your indulgence on this occasion. The first reason is one which may weigh, perhaps, even with those who blame me, and that is that this is one of the last occasions, perhaps, when I may address my constituents on political subjects. It is the custom when a member comes forward in the House of Commons for the first time, when he makes his maiden speech, to ask the indulgence of that assembly on the ground of his inexperience. I make the same request on the exactly opposite ground, that this is perhaps one of the last times that I may address you. My second reason for asking your indulgence is that I have been somewhat misrepresented in the public press, and therefore I have that claim which every man has who wishes to set himself right with his constituents and the public. It is astonishing to me to find how much the political position of Deptford has been discussed in the public press, and I stand before you with some remorse and embarrassment as the innocent cause of so much turmoil and trouble. Not only has the political position of Deptford been discussed in the press of Great Britain and Ireland, but also by the newspapers of Canada and the United States, and looking across the Channel we find it has got into the French and German papers also, whilst even our phlegmatic Dutch friend, when smoking his pipe at Amsterdam or Rotterdam, is projecting from his inner consciousness the representation of what he imagines Deptford to be. (Laughter.) It was intimated to me before I came here this evening that an attempt would be made to disturb this meeting. (A voice, 'Let them try it on,' and cheers.) One gentleman called at the Estate Office

this morning to ask for tickets. There were no more tickets to be given, and then he declared that we should be 'nobbled.' I say, gentlemen, that two can play at that game of nobbling, and I trust to the popular sympathy with the cause that I am advocating to put down any cowardly attempt of that kind. (Cheers.) I shall not occupy your time by attempting to advert to all the notices of Deptford that have appeared in the public press, but there is one of such a remarkable character that I will read it to you. It occurs in *Vanity Fair* of 12th November. You are aware, perhaps, that *Vanity Fair* is a weekly journal, very ably written, and the organ of what is called the Tory democracy. Here is what it says of Deptford: 'I should not be surprised if Sir William Harcourt may be credited with a share in the change of front of Mr. Evelyn, M.P. They are kinsmen. Sir William is godson to the heir of Wotton.' (Laughter.) Now I suppose my son is the heir of Wotton. There, over the fireplace, is his portrait as he was a year ago, when he was ten yearsold. He has now arrived at the mature age of eleven, and, should Providence spare his life, I can assure you, sir, and I can assure all my friends here present, that whatever responsibility may devolve upon him, he will not be answerable for having been godfather to Sir William Harcourt (Laughter), or in any way responsible for the religious opinions or instruction of that eminent Member of the House of Commons. (Laughter.) I hope that the Editor of *Vanity Fair* will ponder over this fact. (Laughter.) So much for the press.

"Now let me allude to the position taken up by the Conservative party in Deptford. I do not wish to say anything unkind towards those who have been my political friends and supporters. When I first came forward in 1885, when I was first elected, there was only one Conservative Association. There are now six Conservative associations or clubs, including the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League. Now, all these clubs and associations, I am aware, joined in a sort of chorus of disapprobation, but in that chorus I believe they were not unanimous. I believe that in every one of those clubs and associations there was a minority who approved of my conduct. (Hear, hear.) I am especially pained to think

of my friends of the Chichester Habitation having taken such a hostile course. On the 9th May, in this very room, Mrs. Evelyn presented them with a beautiful banner. We had a grand meeting, and outside this building there was an overflow meeting, which also seemed to take great interest in our proceedings (Laughter), and I am happy to think that some of my friends who were outside on that occasion are now within this room. (Cheers.) The least that the Chichester Habitation could have done would have been to send us that banner to decorate the room on this occasion. (Hear, hear.) What is it that these associations reproach me with? Their reproaches resolve themselves mainly into two counts of indictment. First of all, it is said I have published letters in the newspapers tending to injure the Conservative cause. Secondly, it is said that I have promised to be neutral in the forthcoming election. Now with regard to the publication of letters, what happened? When the Mitchelstown massacre occurred a Conservative friend of mine, Mr. Frayling, wrote horrified at the occurrence, and asked my views on the Irish question. I replied to him frankly and fully. Was I wrong in that? (No.) It is said that a diplomatist is bound to conceal his sentiments. Is that the duty of a Member of Parliament? I am sure you will feel that it is not. I wrote to Mr. Frayling, and approving of what I had written Mr. Frayling sent the letter to the public press, as he had a perfect right to do, because it was not a private letter. (Hear.) All that I can say is that the publication was not my doing. Afterwards I had various letters written to me, to which I responded, and I had invitations to attend public meetings, to which I also responded; but I never sent one of my letters to the public press, except one, which I will speak of presently; but some gentlemen who had received letters from me thought them worthy of insertion in the public press. This accusation, therefore, falls entirely to the ground. (Cheers.) Moreover, as to injuring the Conservative cause, is the Conservative cause, in the opinion of those who cavil at me, coincident with oppression and coercion? My letters were directed against tyranny (Loud cheers), against the inhuman treatment of prisoners; and I for one, as a Conservative, and those friends

on this platform who are also Conservatives, refuse to associate the Conservative cause with such abominations. (Cheers.) We leave it for other people to do that ; we leave it for the Chichester Habitation of the Primrose League to do that. (Applause.) My friends of the Executive of the Deptford Conservative Association requested me to meet them in order to explain my views on the Irish question. Recognising the fact that they were the central Conservative body of Deptford, I at once acceded to their wish. I attended on the 6th October at the Amersham Hall, and I gave them my views of the position of the Irish question. I beg leave to be excused from drawing aside the curtain that would reveal the picture of what passed on that occasion. Our meeting was a little confused occasionally. Notwithstanding the great ability of our chairman, I could not sometimes help missing the sage and experienced guidance of the gentleman who would have presided had he not been unfortunately kept away by illness. I will not give you the details of that meeting ; it is sufficient to tell you that perhaps from want of oratorical power I failed to convince my audience. Resolutions of various kinds were proposed, supported, and withdrawn. In the end two resolutions, I think, were passed, one requesting me to reconsider my views on the Irish question, and the other of confidence in the present Government. After the meeting was over these resolutions were sent by the Executive Committee to the press, not by me, and during the course of that meeting all that I said was that I still remained a Conservative. (Applause.) Mr. D'Ews, now on the platform, was then a member of the Executive Committee, and he will bear me out in what I say. (Hear, hear.) These resolutions having been published by the Association, I felt myself bound—in fact, my respect for the Association obliged me to write to them to say whether my views had really changed as they wished. Accordingly, on October 19, I addressed a letter to the vice-chairman, at which letter—I do not know why—the Association seems to feel aggrieved. It was a very simple, plain letter. I told them that my views had not changed, and that under these circumstances I should feel it my duty to tender the resignation of my seat. What right have they to reproach me ? I

acted in a spirit of perfect loyalty and even over-civility to the party. (Hear, hear.) I addressed my letter, intimating my intention to resign, to the Central Association of Deptford, and what is more, I stated that I would not seek re-election. And why? Because I felt that if I sought re-election I could only come in, owing to the hostile attitude of the Conservative associations of the town, by Liberal votes, over the heads of my former political friends. Therefore I say plainly, that these gentlemen, instead of indulging in reproaches against me, ought to recognise the perfect loyalty with which I have acted towards them. (Hear, hear.) This letter alone was sent by me to the local press of Deptford as the most convenient mode of letting my constituents know the important decision at which I had arrived. The reproaches aimed at me are the more unreasonable when it is plain and clear to every body of gentlemen that in the election of 1885 my supporters were perfectly aware that my strong feeling was against the principle of coercion or exclusiveness. (Applause and a voice, 'Were you a Home Ruler in 1885?') I am in favour of Home Rule now (Loud cheers), and I will tell you why I did not support Home Rule in 1885. We had then a united Parliament without coercion, and I should prefer such a Parliament if we could have it; but Lord Salisbury now says, 'You can only have a united Parliament with coercion.' Then I say I will not for anything be a party to a régime of most abominable and execrable tyranny. (Loud cheers.) Having answered that question, I hope satisfactorily, and explained why I prefer Home Rule to coercive tyranny, if I may use such an expression, I hope you will allow me for a moment, although I do not wish to give an account of my stewardship, to give you some portion of my career in Parliament, not that I boast of having achieved much, but I wish you to see that I have not been an altogether neglectful member. (Cheers.)

"Now, I beg you to observe that I always recognised the fact that I represent a working-man's constituency. If you look at my conduct in reference to such Bills as the Coal Mines Regulation Bill and the Truck Bill you will find that I voted in favour of the working man on the amendments to these Bills. I am also happy and proud to say

that I was not the only Conservative who did so, and who regretted that the Upper House mutilated these Bills and diminished their value as regards working men. (Hear.) Then, in regard to leasehold enfranchisement, Colonel Hughes, the Member for Woolwich (Hear, hear), brought in a Bill for that purpose. To please the gentleman who interrupts, I will add some adjectives—Colonel Hughes, the able and efficient Member for Woolwich, brought in a Bill for that purpose and asked me to put my name on the back. Highly approving of leasehold enfranchisement, I at once acceded. That the Bill did not pass was not the fault of Colonel Hughes, for the last Session was one in which the Government seized almost the whole of our time. Had that Bill come under discussion I should have supported it to the best of my ability. I also gave evidence on leasehold enfranchisement before the Town Holdings Committee. Then I have served on a public committee of Forestry, during last year and the present year, for the purpose of improving the woods and forests of this country and establishing a school of forestry. (Hear, hear.) I do not mention these things as great achievements, it would be absurd to do so, but I only wish you to know that I have not altogether neglected my duties in Parliament. (Cheers.) But, say my Conservative friends, you absented yourself from some very important divisions. I must admit this charge, and I must admit that a member is at a great disadvantage who absents himself from divisions, because we are sent to Parliament to record our vote in favour of or against certain principles and certain measures that are placed before us, and a constituency is right to complain if the name does not appear in the divisions, for it argues a want of political courage if a member fails to record his vote. Therefore, I do not defend myself. But let us consider what these divisions were. They were in connection with the Irish Crimes Bill, and my conduct arose out of the great difficulties I had with regard to that measure. (Hear, hear.) The fact is, I ought to have resigned my seat long ago; and if I did not resign my seat, I ought to have voted in those divisions against the Government. (Renewed cheers.) My extreme reluctance to do

any injury to the political party with which I was connected led me to take, what I must admit to be, a somewhat vacillating and uncertain course. I was reluctant to do anything to injure the present Government, and this is brought against me as a reproach by the Conservatives of this borough. I will mention some of those divisions from which I absented myself. When Mr. Smith proposed urgency in favour of the Crimes Bill, when he proposed to bring the Bill forward before he brought forward his remedial measures in regard to Ireland, I felt that was a great mistake on the part of the Government. (Cheers.) I absented myself from that division. I admit I ought to have voted against the Government, but I absented myself in common with some other Conservative members. Again, when the sixth clause of the Crimes Act was brought forward, which gives the Lord-Lieutenant power to declare any association that he pleases dangerous, I did not vote for that. I stayed away from that division. I admit again my fault. I ought to have voted against it. We had no more opportunity of voting at all on the remaining clauses of the Bill—there are twenty clauses—because directly the division was taken on the sixth clause, Mr. Smith, the Leader of the House, came down with the closure, and we rushed the remaining clauses, without any discussion, in a very few minutes, and without any divisions. Then again, when Mr. Morley, the Member for Newcastle, proposed that the Crimes Bill, instead of being permanent, should be limited in duration to three years, I and other Conservatives who highly approved of Mr. Morley's resolution, stayed away from the division rather than vote against the Government on a vital question. All my difficulties and perplexities arose, not from my changing my front, but from Lord Salisbury changing his front.

“In the month of January 1886 there was a sudden metamorphosis. It was found that it was a better card to go in for coercion than to adhere to the anti-coercion policy of 1885. So suddenly, in a moment, the party shifted round. I wrote to the head whip, Mr. Akers-Douglas, to express my regret that the Government should shift its

ground and the great difficulty I should feel if a Coercion Bill should be brought forward. Suddenly I was relieved from my difficulty. I should mention that the Conservative whips are most agreeable gentlemen to deal with. Nothing could be more pleasant than my social relations with the whole party. However, I was relieved from my great difficulty by the sudden appearance of the cow and three acres—not Mr. Akers-Douglas (Laughter), but a cow and three acres, and astride the cow was Mr. Jesse Collings. (Laughter.) He charged the Government with this cow, tossed to the winds the whole administration (Laughter), and away we went to the Opposition benches. You will remember that Mr. Gladstone came in. (Loud cheers.) He failed to carry Home Rule. Then came the appeal to the country, and the general election of 1886, and then the second administration of Lord Salisbury. So my difficulties continued till the Mitchelstown affair on the 9th September. When I read on the 10th September the account of that horrible event (Cheers), the bloody shooting of the people at Mitchelstown and the slaughter of three innocent men, I felt that that was the last straw, to use the proverb, that breaks the camel's back. (Cheers.) I could stand it no longer. On that very day, the 10th of September, I wrote a letter to Mr. Smith, the leader of the House of Commons, in which I strongly urged the Government to disavow the firing on the people at Mitchelstown. I added this sentence in my letter : 'Unless the Government take this course (that was to disavow the action of the police in firing on the people) I cannot support them in that which really can only be designated as a policy of slaughter.' (Loud cheers.) After I had written that letter Mr. Balfour rose in the House of Commons, defended the action of the police, and declared that the barrack windows had been smashed and the doors broken open. The evidence of the police themselves showed that statement of Mr. Balfour's to be utterly unfounded ; in fact, he stands convicted of having, on official information, made a distinctly false statement in the House of Commons. (Hear, hear.) On the 12th September, two days after, Sir W. Harcourt brought the matter before the House, when Mr.

Balfour again defended the action of the authorities at Mitchelstown, backed them up in everything they had done, and declared by way of concession and consolation that he would send down to conduct an inquiry into the affair, whom do you think? The notorious Captain Plunkett (Groans)—the author of the maxim, ‘Do not hesitate to shoot.’ (Renewed groans.) Mr. Balfour, in the House of Commons, said that he would send down this man, whose watchword is, ‘Do not hesitate to shoot,’ to examine the conduct of men who had acted upon that maxim by shooting. (A voice, ‘How about Whelehan?’) I am going to allude to the Whelehan affair presently, but before we go on to that—it would take too much time to touch upon all the arbitrary acts of the Government—I should wish you to observe, in regard to the Mitchelstown affair, that the Government did not act under any provision of the Crimes Act, but by the common law, as they call it, of England. That means, in other words, that their act had no warrant at all, because the common law is a vague term, and the fact is, that the Government’s action is, I believe, entirely and wholly illegal. (Loud cheers.) Of course my authority for such a statement goes for very little, but I have in my hand a pamphlet by Sir Horace Davy, Q.C., Solicitor-General of the Liberal administration of 1886. I forbear to quote, because it would take too much time, but he lays that down clearly and fully and also quotes in corroboration Professor Dicey in his work on the British Constitution. Professor Dicey is a very learned man, Professor of Law at Oxford. These and other high authorities tend to prove that the right of public meeting is a sacred and inalienable right of the British people, inalienable except by the people’s own consent. (Cheers.) If a statute is passed by Parliament limiting that right, then the Constitution holds that the people may, for convenience and order, choose to limit their own liberties, but by common law the Executive has no right to suppress a public meeting for the discussion of grievances; in fact, the right of public meeting is closely connected with the well-known right of petitioning Parliament. (Hear, hear.) The legitimate way to get up such a

petition is for people to meet together and to discuss their grievances before they present such a petition. The right of public meeting cannot be taken away except by statute. The Crimes Act only applies to meetings convened by dangerous associations. The Irish National League has been declared to be dangerous, but this meeting at Mitchelstown was not so, not held under the National League at all. Therefore the Government had nothing to go upon except what they called the common law, which really means that their action was entirely illegal. Now I come to the Whelehan business. Head Constable Whelehan, two days after the Mitchelstown affair, lost his life in a moonlight affray. We do not know exactly how he lost his life. He was in plain clothes, and there seems to have been a moonlight raid on a certain house. He was there and lost his life. All this has been the subject of inquiry before a coroner's jury; but, by the way, there was a coroner's jury in Mitchelstown, and a verdict of wilful murder was found against five men. It remains to be seen whether these five men will ever be tried at all. (Hear, hear.) But, in regard to the Whelehan business, I wish to advert to this to show how very wrong use was made of informers by the present Government. It was clear that this raid was concocted by a set of men. It took place in the County of Clare, but one man named Callinane was brought before the jury, and it is proved beyond doubt that this man had been in the pay of the police. Not long ago Lord Hartington referred to this Whelehan affair, and declared that the authorities were perfectly right in their employment of informers. Soon afterwards Sir William Harcourt laid down the true doctrine consistent with common sense, that informers should never be employed except as the last resource. It is possible rightly to employ them only after crime has been committed. When you cannot get any other evidence, then you may employ informers; but the authorities ought to be very reluctant in employing such scoundrels. (Cheers.) It can never be right, as in the case of Callinane, to keep a man in your pay who is engaged in concocting crime on the chance that he may betray his accomplices. By such an act the authorities

make themselves, to a certain extent, accomplices in crime. (Hear, hear.) I will here quote two very pregnant sentences of Edmund Burke, at Bristol, in 1780. He speaks in one passage of 'these pests of society—mercenary informers,' and in another passage he states, 'bad laws are the worst sort of tyranny.' (Cheers.) But although I think Lord Hartington decidedly wrong in his doctrine, yet it is only what might be expected from a man of his acute, but somewhat narrow, mind. I have no doubt that the doctrine laid down by Lord Hartington, or any other doctrine of the leader of the Whigs, would be heartily endorsed by Mr. Chamberlain of the many-coloured political coat, and by that broad-brimmed apostle of slaughter, John Bright. (Cheers.) But although it may be endorsed by them, it will not be endorsed by either Great Britain or Ireland. (Cheers.)

"Now I come to another instance of the illegal suppression of public meetings; I mean the meeting at Woodford, which was attended by Mr. Wilfrid Blunt. (Cheers.) It differed from the meeting at Mitchelstown in this respect, amongst others—the meeting at Mitchelstown was not proclaimed, and the meeting at Woodford was. But it is laid down by the authorities that I have already quoted, and generally admitted now, that a proclamation is really so much waste paper unless the statute law sanctions it. Suppose our meeting to-night were proclaimed, such a proclamation would have been a mere dead letter. The Government cannot suppress a meeting unless they are empowered by the law to do so. (Hear.) Had this meeting at Woodford been a National League meeting perhaps the Government would have some warrant in law. But it was not a National League meeting; it was a meeting of an English association, convened by Mr. Blunt, in order to show the sympathy of the English people for Ireland, and in order to protest against the cruel evictions that had already taken place on the estate of Lord Clanricarde. These evictions had taken place and ceased. There was no intention in regard to the future, on the part of Mr. Blunt, nor any intention to resist the police. He and his friends simply went to express the sympathy of the English people with those unfortunate

creatures in Ireland, and also to caution them and give them sound advice to abstain from being provoked to anything like outrages. (Hear.) Nothing could have been more legitimate or more worthy than the object of Mr. Blunt ; but he disregarded the proclamation because it was illegal. (Cheers.) It is rather a curious thing that this proclamation of Mr. Balfour came to Woodford with the statement that it had been made on sworn information ; yet it arrived with such rapidity that it was utterly impossible that that could have been true. What happened ? Mr. Blunt was jostled off the platform, flung violently to the ground after a desperate and gallant resistance, and Lady Anne Blunt, the granddaughter of Lord Byron, was struck in the breast by some cowardly brute, and afterwards when on the ground was throttled, and her life was almost in danger from the grip of the scoundrel, whoever he was, I won't name him, because I might be mistaken. Mr. Blunt was hurried off to gaol to Loughrea, locked up for the night, and next day he was brought back to Woodford and taken before the resident magistrates, who seemed rather puzzled as to the law of the case. But, being bewildered, they thought it was better to refuse the prisoner the benefit of the doubt, and sentenced him to two months' imprisonment. I believe they gave him that sentence in order to shift some of the responsibility of the case and give him the right of appeal at the Quarter Sessions at Portumna, where the case will be dealt with, I believe, in the beginning of January. The responsibility will be thrown on the authorities at these Quarter Sessions. Now I wish to touch on the case of Mr. O'Brien. (Cheers.) Mr. O'Brien has been arrested, flung into gaol, hurried from prison to prison ; he has been subjected to every indignity ; he has had his clothes stolen from him : I believe he has had his pencil-case stolen. (A laugh.) I have no doubt that these things are very amusing to the gentleman who gives a laugh of cheerful approbation, but these are outrages which will not be tolerated by the English people. (Loud cheers.) I am quite convinced that the heart of England will beat in harmony with the heart of Ireland in reference to this cowardly treatment of political prisoners—

a course of treatment, I believe, unknown in any other civilised country. (Cheers.) But then comes the question, What crime has Mr. O'Brien committed? Surely it must be a very heinous one—perhaps it was of sufficiently deep a dye to warrant all these indignities. I will tell you what it was. Mr. O'Brien went down to Mitchelstown in the month of August last, and he made speeches there on the 9th and 11th of August. At that time the Irish Land Bill of last session was passing through the House. I think it had passed the third reading in the House of Commons, and had gone up to the Lords, who were then considering amendments introduced to it in the Lower House. There was every prospect, and it was well known that in a fortnight or so it would become law; and in fact it received the Royal assent on the 25th of August. What was the position of affairs in Mitchelstown? The estates of the ancient family of the Earls of Kingston had become seriously encumbered, and were in the hands of a set of money-lenders and usurers, who, horrified at the idea of a Land Bill passing that would enable the tenants to go to the Land Court and obtain a reduction of exorbitant rents, and would protect them to some extent, though not to the extent it ought, from harsh evictions, determined to hurry on things and proceed with evictions in fraudulent anticipation of this Bill, in order to prevent the tenants having the benefit of this Act of Parliament which was about to be passed. But what did Mr. O'Brien do? I have looked carefully into these facts, and if I had found them other than I have found them to be, I would be frank with you, and if I had found that Mr. O'Brien was, in my opinion, in any degree in fault, I would plainly tell you so. Mr. O'Brien advised these unfortunate people not to submit to this fraud, which the usurers endeavoured to put upon them, but to hold on till the Land Act became law, when they would be able to go to the Land Court and obtain a reduction of rent, and security from harsh evictions. They took his advice. I do not say that in these speeches of Mr. O'Brien there was nothing that I disapproved of. There was some very strong language which in calm blood I should blame; but we must all make allowances for human nature. Mr. O'Brien

was carried away by feelings of human nature, but he was in the legitimate position which I am in at this moment, of addressing his own constituents and giving them the best advice that he could. (Cheers.) He advised them to hold on, and in the meantime to exercise great control over themselves, and abstain from any kind of outrage, which would only give advantage to their enemies. They followed his wise and excellent advice, and by this means seven hundred tenants were saved from ruin ; and if you allow an average of five persons to each family of these tenants, 3500 human beings were saved from being driven out destitute into the wilderness through the action of Mr. O'Brien. (Loud cheers.) This is the crime for which he is now in prison, and for which he and Mr. Mandeville are now suffering all those outrages which shame the British nation. (Cheers.)

“ I pass from Mr. O'Brien to the Prime Minister of England. What is Lord Salisbury about ? Lord Salisbury has been compared by an eminent Conservative—I will not give his name—to the Grand Llama of Thibet. Certainly, like that potentate, he lives in an airy region of his own, and is very little in touch with his party in the House of Commons. You could not have a better proof than his appointment of Colonel King-Harman as Irish Under-Secretary in the House of Commons. (Hear.) I can assure you, sir, that that appointment was scarcely more distasteful to the Irish members in the House than it was to many of us Conservatives sitting below the gangway on the Ministerial side. We thought it a bad appointment, and were very disgusted to see, night after night, that brawny bully answering the questions of the Irish members in the most insulting way, while Mr. Balfour was dodging behind the Speaker's chair ; answering on behalf of Mr. Balfour who is paid to answer such questions. That is an instance that Lord Salisbury is out of touch altogether with his party, but are there not warning signs on the wall which might even alarm the Premier ? What of his gaolers, will they be true to him ? Mr. O'Brien has received a suit of clothes. (Cheers.) I was delighted to hear that, and I hope that they will not be stolen by Mr. Balfour. Who gave him that suit of clothes ? There is an inquiry on that point, but

I cannot say. Again, can Lord Salisbury trust the police-constables of Ireland? Some of them have already thrown up the work. (Cheers.) I doubt whether there is not danger in that. I doubt whether Lord Salisbury will not find he is in some trouble in this respect if he persists in these terrible, these oppressive measures. But what of the soldiers? There are signs darkly ominous to the Prime Minister, but full of happy omen from our point of view. A regiment stationed at Tullamore paraded the streets cheering Mr. O'Brien, and when Mr. Henry Doughty was tried at Ennis for making a speech—for making a speech is a crime in Ireland—not at a meeting under the Crimes Act, but an ordinary meeting to express sympathy with Mr. Parnell and Mr. Gladstone. (A voice, 'Oh! oh!') They do not deserve sympathy in the opinion of some, but it was a legitimate object—for which he was tried and sentenced to one month's imprisonment. He was cheered by the soldiers of the Leinster Regiment. (A voice, 'That is denied.') At all events, it was so stated, but that seems to have been officially denied. It may, however, notwithstanding such official denial, be true. But then, supposing that Lord Salisbury can trust his gaolers, his Irish constabulary, and the soldiers quartered in Ireland, how about the English constituencies? Is there no warning voice from the elections—the bye-elections that have taken place? Has Lord Salisbury forgotten, or has he never heard of Burnley, Spalding, Coventry, and Northwich? It seems to me that these bye-elections prove clearly that there is a reaction in England, and that the conduct of the Government is not endorsed by the English nation. But if he can depend on the constituencies, can he depend on his own rank and file in Parliament? I am one instance to the contrary, and it is well that one voice, however feeble, should be raised from Conservative benches to protest against a policy so ruinous to the country and to the party to which we Conservatives belong. (Applause.) But you may say that you think that in this matter I am isolated as much as Mr. Pyne in Lisfinny Castle. (Laughter.) There may be some truth in that, and yet I assure you that among Conservatives whom I have met since I declared my sentiments about Mitchelstown I have found

some sympathy. They do not approve of my conduct, they think it was precipitate, but still from what they have said they have a not unfriendly feeling, and admit that the policy of Lord Salisbury has inflicted a great strain on their allegiance. I therefore think that trouble may await the Government, even from the Conservative benches, if they persist in this ruinous, this monstrous policy. (Cheers.)

"Now comes the last part, and I have detained you too long. (Go on.) What is Deptford going to do? Will you send a message of peace to Ireland, or will you not? Are you not convinced that the cause of Ireland is the cause of England, that tyranny once established there will come home to our own shores? (A voice, 'It has already.') Will Deptford assist in rolling back this tide of fanaticism that seems to overwhelm a great part of England? Will Deptford come forward and assist in telling Lord Salisbury, 'This sort of thing must be stopped; you must not steal prisoners' clothes, you must not repress public meetings, and you must not crush the liberty of the press in Ireland'? (Loud cheers.) It is clear to every one that the Crimes Act, which was said to be directed against crime, is now diverted to a political purpose, and therefore those who voted for it gave their votes under a fraudulent pretence. (Cheers.) But now, who is to be the candidate? (Cries of 'Blunt.') Whatever happens during the approaching contest, I trust I may consider myself a general friend of the electors of Deptford, and I would impress upon the electors, Liberal, Radical, and Conservative, the duty of allowing public meetings to pass uninterrupted, not to imitate the conduct of some of the champions of law and order, who attempted to interrupt our meeting to-night. Mr. Darling had addressed a meeting, and I wish to speak in terms of great respect of that gentleman. I have received a letter from him to-day very courteously worded, and he should receive from us all every courtesy that a gentleman of position and character deserves. (Hear, hear.) I have told him plainly in answer that I will never vote for a Conservative coercionist (Loud cheers), nor for a Liberal coercionist. I have determined that whatever party a coercionist may belong to, I would never vote for him, whether he calls himself a Conservative, a

Liberal, or a Radical. Therefore Mr. Darling knows perfectly well my sentiments on the coming election. But then whom will you have ? (Renewed cries of 'Blunt.')

Perhaps I ought not to have alluded to the subject at all, because Mr. Blunt is not the accepted candidate. Far be it from me, indeed I have no right, to intrude into the proceedings of the Liberal party. Only let me say this, that if you decide upon Mr. Blunt, I can assure you from my own knowledge of him that he is a gentleman who, independently of politics, would do honour to any constituency. (Loud cheers.) He is a man of great experience and great culture. He is an author as well as a politician. He was a tried and trusted friend of General Gordon, whose name is ever honoured in this country, and who, I may add, had a deep feeling of sympathy for Ireland. (Cheers.) But it is for the Liberal party to determine who will be their candidate. All I can say for myself, and I believe that I can say the same for my Conservative friends round me, is that we will never vote for a coercionist. If Mr. Blunt comes forward as the Liberal candidate and Mr. Darling carries the day, then it will be the triumph, not I think of Conservatism, but the ignoble triumph of oppression. (Hear, hear.) I will not join in that triumph. But if you choose Mr. Blunt you will choose a man whose sympathies have ever been exerted on behalf of the oppressed and down-trodden of every clime. (Cheers.) In his wife, Lady Anne Blunt, you have a granddaughter of Lord Byron, the great poet, whose name is almost as dear to Englishmen as the name of the immortal Shakespeare. If you choose Mr. Blunt (Applause), the chivalry of Deptford will have the opportunity of avenging the cowardly outrage inflicted upon Lord Byron's granddaughter at Woodford.

"One word more. I have spoken of Lord Salisbury and his great position. I have no doubt he is a man of great ambition, an ambition justified by his undoubted talents. I, too, have my ambition, and when I have stated it I think you will all agree that though I am ambitious, it is a genuine and right ambition. My ambition is to transmit to my son untainted and unimpaired and undisgraced the name I bear. (Loud cheers.) Never shall it be said of me that I went

back to Parliament to support a Government who not only were capable of such atrocities as the Mitchelstown massacre, and the other violent suppressions of public meetings, but who descended to the meanness of stealing the clothes of political prisoners. (Loud and prolonged cheers.)”

Mr. Blunt appealed against the decision of the magistrate condemning him to two months’ imprisonment, and his case came on at Portumna in January 1888. William Evelyn and his brother Edmund went over to Ireland in this month and accompanied Mr. Blunt in his journey from Dublin to Portumna. Lady Anne Blunt, Mr. Shaw Lefevre, and a few others were also in the party. Portumna was reached about four o’clock, and the party put up at Keary’s Hotel, where they were visited during the evening by several Roman Catholic priests and other sympathisers. Mr. Blunt’s appeal failed. William Evelyn and his brother stayed in Portumna till the end of the case, when they left for Galway, and from there back to England. William Evelyn had been unable to gain permission to visit Mr. Blunt in prison.

The following letter written by Edmund Evelyn appeared in the *Times* for January 11, 1888 :—

“To the EDITOR of the *Times*.

“SIR,—Having returned from Galway by last night’s mail, I should be obliged if you would allow me to record, while still fresh in my mind, the impressions I received during the trial of Mr. Blunt, and from an inspection of that portion of the Clanricarde estates which is the scene of recent and pending evictions.

“On January 1, I accompanied my brother, Mr. Evelyn, M.P. for Deptford, to Ireland, and we travelled from Dublin to Portumna in company with Mr. Wilfrid and Lady Anne Blunt. At Athenry Station Mr. Sheehy, M.P., in prison costume and strongly guarded by the police, joined the train. On arriving at Portumna, we found the small town in a high state of excitement, but there was no actual disturbance. When the Court opened on the following day there was a great rush of people to the Court House. This was necessarily checked by the police, but though batons were drawn,

I neither saw any blow struck nor heard of any injuries being sustained. I may say here generally that, having closely observed the action of the police at Portumna and Galway and elsewhere, I can honestly affirm that their conduct was marked by great forbearance in very difficult circumstances.

“ On Wednesday the 4th, I visited Woodford, now so unhappily notorious for the struggle between the landlord and his tenants. No sadder sight can be imagined than that hill-side, with its ruined houses. As for the land, it can only be partially described as of agricultural value, consisting, as it mainly does, of rough heather and bog land, recalling to memory our wilder Surrey commons. What remains of the farmhouses testifies to the excellence of their original condition; they were all constructed at the cost of the original occupiers. After the evictions some of these houses were razed to the ground, and in one case the window frames and all the woodwork had been burnt, as though out of sheer wanton cruelty.

“ I specify a few cases of hardship out of many that came to my knowledge. One tenant now sheltered in a League hut on the parish priest's ground owed one year's rent—£13, 10s., and £18 costs of law; he was evicted August 26, 1886. It may have been only a curious coincidence, but every neighbour that gave shelter to this homeless family found himself speedily evicted. This family, after their own eviction, four times shared in the eviction of their neighbours who had sheltered them. The farm had been in the occupation of this tenant for generations. Another tenant—an old man of seventy—was evicted at the same time. His farm consisted of reclaimed bog; his house had been built by his ancestors, it was in good order, and his farm showed signs of great industry. He was evicted for one year's rent (£12, 5s.) and £17 costs.

“ At the present time 160 evictions, as I am informed, are impending over the unhappy people on the Clanricarde estate. Are these wholesale evictions to be carried out? Is Lord Clanricarde to be allowed to make a desert from the Shannon to the sea? My object in writing

to you is to attempt to direct attention to this devastation.

“ I am, Sir, your obedient servant,
E. BOSCAWEN EVELYN.

“ YALDHAM, SEVENOAKS, KENT,
January 10.”

Towards the end of January a meeting was held in the New Cross Hall in support of the candidature of Mr. Blunt, and the following letter was read from William Evelyn :—

“ WOTTON, DORKING, SURREY,
January 19, 1888.

“ DEAR MR. WILLIS,—My object in writing is to assure you of my earnest wish, both on public and private grounds, for the return of Mr. Blunt as my successor in the Parliamentary representation of Deptford. I have publicly intimated that in my position as sitting member I regard it as more respectful to the constituency that I should not attend meetings of any candidate, otherwise I would certainly be with you at New Cross Hall to-morrow evening. The treatment of Mr. Blunt and other political prisoners is cruel and shameful. I believe the Governor of Galway Gaol, with whom I had an interview, to be an honourable and humane gentleman ; but the prison authorities must obey the orders of the Prison Board—that is, of Dublin Castle.

“ Yours very truly,
W. J. EVELYN.”

The letter was received with prolonged cheering.

In February a public meeting in support of the candidature of Mr. Blunt, and to protest against the cruel treatment of Irish political prisoners, was held at St. Joseph's Schools, Deptford, and the following letter was read from William Evelyn :—

“ DEAR CANON FANNAN,—I write to express a hope that the meeting to-morrow in St. Joseph's Schools may be well attended and unanimous. The present occasion is one which

should unite men of all parties. Mr. Blunt, in his Galway prison, represents the cause of humanity. May the Deptford electors by their verdict rebuke Lord Salisbury's Government for its hideous one-sided reign of terror set up in Ireland and menacing England in the name of law and order; for its deliberate and calculated cruelty to political prisoners; for its mock-trials under which not only men but girls of tender age and old women have been sent to gaol; and for its protection afforded persons accused of real crime, as in the case of the Mitchelstown massacre. These dreadful proceedings, if not disavowed by the country, will lower the national reputation, and if not abandoned will inevitably lead to national disaster, possibly to national ruin.

"Believe me, dear Canon Fannan,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN."

The following letter from Mr. Crook was received by William Evelyn :—

"3 CHEAP STREET, BATH, *February 2, 1888.*

"RESPECTED SIR,—Kindly excuse the liberty I have taken in writing to thank you for the kind and sympathetic feeling you have shown to the poor Irish tenantry throughout the whole discussion. A Radical myself, I most heartily wish that all members of the House of Commons would judge this question free of all party feeling and believe that the tenantry would honestly pay their rents if able.

"Many seem to forget that numbers of these small tenants came over to England and earned their rents during the hay and corn harvests when times were good, and as our agriculture declined so did the demand for their labour. From my small experience of the Irish I find them honest, industrious, and trustworthy. I am much disgusted at the remarks of the *Times* and the Tory candidate and his friends which they made concerning you, which I see noted in the *Star* newspaper.

"Apologising for writing this to you, but most sincerely hoping you may be spared for many long years to carry on

the noble work among the people which your kindness of heart leads you to, is the prayer of

“Yours most respectfully,
N. CROOK.”

William Evelyn issued the following address to the electors of Deptford :—

“HOUSE OF COMMONS, *February 13.*

“GENTLEMEN,—I write with regret to announce to you that on Monday the 20th inst. it is my intention to make the necessary application for resigning my seat in Parliament. The reasons that have induced me to retire, and not to seek re-election, are already well known to you. You will remember that in 1885 and 1886 you elected me as a Conservative opposed to harsh administration and exceptional legislation in Ireland. I adhere to those views, and it is no fault of mine that the Conservative leaders have changed their front. By electing Mr. Wilfrid Blunt, now suffering imprisonment under an unjust sentence, you will support my protest against the Government policy in Ireland. I therefore trust that the coming election for Deptford may result in the return of Mr. Blunt as my successor.

“Thanking you for the great consideration and kindness that I have generally received during the time that I have represented you,

“I have the honour to be, Gentlemen,
Your obedient servant,
W. J. EVELYN.”

On February 16, William Evelyn made the following speech in the House of Commons :—

“IN THE HOUSE OF COMMONS, FEBRUARY 16, 1888 ¹

“*Address in Answer to Her Majesty's gracious Speech*

“Mr. EVELYN (Deptford) said, that the right honourable Member for Mid-Leicestershire (Mr. De Lisle) in the speech he

¹ From Hansard's Parliamentary Debates.

had just made had presented a curious and an almost inexplicable phenomenon which had bewildered him more than any other object with which he was familiar. The honourable member was, or professed to be, a Catholic, and yet he indulged in insults against the Irish hierarchy and against those who held the creed which he professed to reverence. The honourable member in his long and discursive speech attempted to make out a claim on the Irish members by stating that he would advocate certain plans of Catholic education and other movements which would find favour with those honourable gentlemen; but in the meantime he was prepared to continue the great oppression of Ireland. The honourable member would not, by presenting these other subjects for their consideration, earn the gratitude of the Irish people. His observations had ranged from China to Peru; and though he (Mr. Evelyn) had expected that he would end by reading a number of letters from the *Times* he had not unnaturally concluded by giving them the whole book of the Prophet Jeremiah. But he (Mr. Evelyn) would pass from the honourable member to consider the amendment before the House. It might be discussed either as a party motion, the carrying of which would involve the defeat of the Government, or it might be discussed on its merits; and if it were, there was no reason why it should not be accepted by every member of the House. From both points of view he felt it to be his duty to vote for the amendment. He wished to get rid of this Coalition Government; he did not call it a Conservative Government, for in the course the Government had pursued they had been false to the best traditions of the Conservative party. The honourable member (Mr. De Lisle) had sounded the praises of the Union. They had heard the praises of the Unionists sounded by many gentlemen to-night—in fact, music of this kind was very common in the country. The Unionists were extolled with considerable oratory at Primrose League and other meetings; and the country had heard a vast deal more about this Paper Union than the union of hearts and sentiments. It could not be disputed that Lord Salisbury was prepared in 1885 to throw over the Paper Union altogether. The interview between Lord Carnarvon

and the honourable Member for Cork (Mr. Parnell) must have been well known to Lord Salisbury after it had occurred. It was true that in 1888 Lord Salisbury gave a denial ; but what was it ? They knew that Lord Salisbury was practically prepared to go in for Home Rule, and they knew what Lord Salisbury's denials were. He said that the assumption that every other member of the Cabinet besides Lord Carnarvon had expressed feelings in favour of Home Rule was an utter, complete, and absolute falsehood. This was pretty strong, and the noble Lord generally used strong language in denials ; but nobody ever said that every member of the Cabinet of 1885 besides Lord Carnarvon had expressed feelings in favour of Home Rule. What was very confidently believed was that several members of the Cabinet, including Lord Salisbury himself, were quite prepared to go in for Home Rule. They were all glad to find that the Land Act of last session had had an ameliorative effect on the condition of Ireland. But they could have wished that it had dealt with the question of arrears, and that it had not given undue facilities to evicting landlords like Lord Clanricarde. He hoped that the Act might soon be amended, and made more serviceable to the Irish people on these subjects. But he was thankful to know that, even as it was, it had tended to the diminution of crime. With regard to coercion, he could not but remember what he had witnessed in a late visit to Ireland. He had witnessed with his own eyes the misery of the people and the oppression under which they laboured, and he could not but feel that it was only too true that the Crimes Act, which they were told was to be directed against crime, had been really directed against political opponents. This had been clearly shown in the cruel administration by the Government of that tremendous weapon which the House put into the hands of the Government last session. He, for one, had to confess with regret that he had voted for coercion ; but he did so, as was well known, reluctantly, and because he understood that this terrific weapon was to be used for the repression of crime, and crime alone. He now found that that was altogether a fraudulent pretence on the part of the Government. He believed that Lord Salisbury all along had it in his

mind to exercise the power that he sought from Parliament in a cruel and abominable manner. On the 16th of May, 1886, Lord Salisbury made a foul and slanderous attack on the Irish people. Lord Salisbury declared that what was wanted for Ireland was twenty years of resolute government. He did not complain of that declaration; but Lord Salisbury went on to say that they wanted confidence in the Irish people, and that it depended upon the people they were to confide in; and he added, 'You would not confide free representation to the Hottentots.' At the time that speech was made he (Mr. Evelyn) happened to be contesting the Borough of Deptford against a most able and eloquent adversary, and had the humiliating task of trying to explain away those words of Lord Salisbury. Later events had shown that he was quite wrong, and that his opponent was right, and that all along the present Premier had in his view the establishment of a Hottentot Government in Ireland. In November last Lord Salisbury made a memorable speech at the Mansion House. He said then that any one of his colleagues was worth the whole 86 members from Ireland. (Hear, hear.) The expression of approval which came from his honourable friend sitting below (Mr. Johnstone) he did not wonder at; but he did wonder at such a vulgarism coming from the lips of the Prime Minister of England. *In vino veritas*. Taking these two speeches together—the Hottentot speech and the speech at the Mansion House—did they not show that Lord Salisbury had an utter contempt for the Irish nation; and had he not insulted the Irish? When he was contesting Deptford, and read the Hottentot speech, he had a personal reason for not quite approving of that speech, for he had the honour to have Irish blood in his veins. He knew that Lord Salisbury had denied likening the Irish to Hottentots; but let anyone read his words, and put their own construction on them. Now he came to the administration of the Crimes Act, and he was sorry that the right honourable gentleman the Chief Secretary for Ireland was not in his place, because he had something to say to him. As to the cruel administration of the Crimes Act, he wondered how the right honourable gentleman could smile and smile,

and still be a Chief Secretary. What would not do at all, and what would not be approved by the English people, was that he should treat political prisoners with cruelty, and he should steal their greatcoats, and that he should gloat in conversation over the weak hearts of his intended victims. The man who did this was a man about whom he would express no opinion, because if he did he should perhaps be transgressing the Orders of the House. But he would say that he considered the Government of Ireland by the Salisbury-Balfour clique, he would not say by the Ministry, but by the clique which controlled the Ministry, to be thoroughly infamous. His honourable friend on the Front Bench smiled; but let him answer the speech of the honourable Member for Cork, who had proved to the House that the Chief Secretary had thrown into prison old women, boys and girls, and had committed all that oppression which had still to be denied. Now he wished to say a word with reference to the treatment of Mr. Blunt. A question had been asked that evening as to why Mr. Blunt had not been given some food when he was dragged from his prison in Galway to the civil action now going on in Dublin. The answer was that Mr. Blunt had the ordinary food of prisoners; but what he contended was that Mr. Blunt was in an exceptional position, and that it was a cruel and shameful thing to give a man the ordinary food of prisoners in the twenty-four or thirty hours during which he was going to a Court of Justice, half fainting, to be severely cross-examined. Lord Salisbury and the right honourable gentleman the Chief Secretary would have to answer for all this, and for other abominable cruelties to the Irish nation. He agreed with the honourable gentleman the Member for North-East Cork (Mr. W. O'Brien) that one of the reasons of the diminution of crime in Ireland was the feeling entertained by the Irish people that there was some degree of sympathy entertained for them by the English people. Such a feeling would necessarily have a great effect upon a warm-hearted people like the Irish; and he trusted that Parliament would do everything it could to cultivate that feeling. He remembered the compliment paid by the right honourable gentleman the Chancellor of the

Exchequer to the Chief Secretary, by the despoiler of Egypt to the despot of Ireland. The Chancellor of the Exchequer spoke of the right honourable gentleman as 'brave Mr. Balfour.' Where was the bravery of the right honourable gentleman? The right honourable gentleman the Member for Central Bradford (Mr. Shaw-Lefevre) lately went to Loughrea, and did exactly what Mr. Wilfrid Blunt had done. Why was he not picking oakum like Mr. Blunt? He (Mr. Evelyn) would tell them. It was because the 'brave' Chief Secretary dared not tackle a Privy Councillor and an ex-Minister. The right honourable gentleman the Member for Central Bradford had done admirable service. He had made the Chief Secretary shrink, and he had brought the hermit of the Albany to something like reason. He would say no more, except to make one or two remarks personal to himself. He wished to say that a great many statements had been made about him which he would not notice at all. No one cared less for jeers and sneers than he did when he knew he was doing his duty. There was only one remark to which he would refer, and that was that he had written to Lord Salisbury. He had done nothing of the kind. He wrote a letter to the First Lord of the Treasury, who so ably led the Conservative party in that House, and from whom he had always received the greatest courtesy; but he did not write to Lord Salisbury. He felt great regret at parting from his honourable friends on that side of the House; but he would advise them—though he did not expect they would take his advice—to go over to the other side, and purify themselves from the disgrace which had been brought on the Conservative party by the policy of the Government in Ireland. After the discipline of Opposition they might come back to those benches and assert the true principles of Conservatism, which were enunciated in his early career by Mr. Disraeli, and which, he thought, would lead to a conciliatory policy towards Ireland. During his (Mr. Evelyn's) visit to Ireland he was sometimes cheered by the Irish people; but he felt ashamed of those cheers, having voted for coercion; and when the right honourable gentleman the Member for Central Bradford, on the day of Mr. Blunt's condemnation, was going to

Ballinasloe to address a public meeting there, he asked him (Mr. Evelyn) to accompany him, but he refused. He had said—‘ You can address the Irish ; but I have voted for coercion, and I feel I have no right to speak to them and get praises I do not deserve.’ He could assure honourable members opposite, however, that the votes he had given against Ireland had been given under false pretences ; but the vote he should now give would be given with all his heart and soul.”

In spite of all the efforts of William Evelyn and his friends the election resulted in a victory for Mr. Darling, who was returned by a majority of 275.

William Evelyn received the following letter from Lady Anne Blunt :—

“ 7 RUTLAND SQUARE, *March 4, 1888.*

“ DEAR MR. EVELYN,—I am afraid you will have felt the great disappointment we have all had, more than I do or than Wilfrid can feel it, for it is always worse for those who remain on or near the spot than for anyone who is called away to a distance or has some other immediate claim on thought and attention.

“ Indeed I am very sorry, and I do believe that but for some, more or less accidental, circumstances we could have pulled through. But I hope with it all that some good effects will remain as the result of the hard work you—and we all who have been exerting ourselves—have gone through. It is something that 4070 people voted for Home Rule. That could not have been a short time ago even. I am counting the hours, and they seem very long, till Wilfrid comes out, and the accounts I hear are that he has suffered a good deal from this last fortnight.

“ I cannot remember the number in Portland Place, so I direct to Evelyn Street and hope we shall see you as soon as we arrive.—Yours very sincerely,

ANNE BLUNT.

“ P.S.—I am convinced they will *not* open the gates till the moment, and if you wrote to Wilfrid *here* to-morrow he would most likely get the letter, and I know it would be such a pleasure to him.”

CHAPTER VII

CONCLUDING YEARS

WILLIAM EVELYN's political career was now over and he settled down to a life in the country. He was always very simple in his tastes, and he was now free to devote himself to the full in his favourite pursuits, such as gardening and natural history. He had a large space cleared in the woods, and there made a special garden of his own, where he often spent hours interesting himself in his flowers or immersed in his favourite volumes. There also he had miniature gardens made for his children, and he would often prepare delightful surprises for them in the shape of pomegranates or other foreign fruit hidden in the summer-houses for them to find. Another favourite occupation was to feed the numerous pets which he kept at different times. There were wild boars, Indian cattle, kangaroos, a zebra, a vulture, chameleons, a seagull, and various tortoises. The kangaroos were at one time let loose on to Leith Hill, where they flourished for years till gradually exterminated by ruthless individuals.

To a person of William Evelyn's dreamy and idealistic temperament poetry was naturally a great resource, and his marvellous memory enabled him to remember most of the poems he read by heart. He was particularly fond of the poetry of Lord Byron, in whose personality he was always interested, and whose misfortunes he pitied. He was also extremely clever at languages, and was particularly fond of reading French and German, particularly the plays of Molière, Racine, and Schiller. He was never tired of working out problems in chess, in which he was so proficient that he had sometimes beaten professionals. His intimate friend, Martin Tupper, in his *Autobiography*, says :



WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN (1822-1908)

“One of the best private chess-players I used often to encounter—but almost never to beat—is my old life-friend, Evelyn of Wotton, now the first M.P. for his own ancestral Deptford. It was to me a triumph only to puzzle his shrewdness, to make him think, as I used to say; and if ever, through his carelessness, I managed a stale, or a draw, very seldom a mate—that was glory indeed. If he sees this his memory will countersign it.”

He was by nature very abstemious, rarely touching wine, and practically never eating butcher's meat, for which he had an aversion. Perhaps this partly accounted for his splendid constitution. His great friend, Matthew Arnold, often stayed at Wotton, and was godfather to his youngest child, Henrietta.

One subject which interested him greatly was astronomy, and he would sometimes engage lecturers to lecture on it to the poor people at Wotton. On one occasion Sir Robert Ball came and gave a lecture on it.

In many ways he resembled his ancestor, John Evelyn, particularly in his literary tastes, and in his interest in trees and flowers.

The following letter of his on the proposed establishment of parish councils in rural districts appeared in *The Times* newspaper on April 4, 1893:—

“To the EDITOR of *The Times*.

“SIR,—Though this Bill is drafted in apparent ignorance or disregard of the wants and requirements of rural parishes, yet, being a Government measure and supported (as I feel it is) by the front Opposition bench, it will probably pass the House of Commons almost unchallenged.

“Under the Bill district councils will be elected to replace the present boards of guardians, while most of the powers of the parish vestries will be transferred to elected parish councils.

“Thus, in the rural parishes there will exist side by side two representative bodies—the vestry and the parish council. The churchwardens will continue to be appointed at vestry meetings. The incumbent of the parish will still be *ex*

officio chairman of the vestry, and will still be empowered to appoint one of the churchwardens, two clerical privileges which the late Mr. Toulmin Smith in his learned and exhaustive work on the parish clearly proved to be usurpations, deriving their sanction only from recent judicial decisions, overriding the old customary rights of the parishioners.

“The Bill is tainted with the vicious principle that the parish church belongs not to the parishioners but to the ecclesiastical authorities, while ‘ecclesiastical charities’ (so named in the Bill) are expressly exempted from the operation of this ill-considered measure. In Clauses 6 and 18, and throughout the whole Bill, the pretensions of the ecclesiastical authorities are carefully safeguarded, and the interest of the parishioners in their parish church as carefully disregarded.

“The parish meetings to be established under this Bill will, I fear, be attended not by agricultural labourers, but by speculative builders, small tradesmen, money-lenders, and adventurers of doubtful aims. Some of the provisions tend to encourage corruption and the exercise of vindictive spite, parish councils being empowered not only to borrow money on the security of the rates, but also, with the consent of the district council, to buy land compulsorily, to sell or exchange land so bought, to enclose parts of commons, to seize supplies of water, and by a provision in Clause 7 (if I understand it aright) to tax a part of a parish, exempting the rest. Among the objects for which rural parishes will be taxed and plunged into debt are recreation grounds, baths, and washhouses, public libraries and sewers! Alms-houses and village hospitals, which would be really useful in rural districts, are not mentioned in the Bill.

“Thus, heavy expenses will be imposed on the land at a time of serious depression, when true statesmanship would seek to relieve the agricultural classes from some of their heavy burdens.

“Corruption seems to be sanctioned in Clause 33 by the first proviso attached to the clause. Future litigation seems favoured by the use of vague phrases, such as ‘any public or reputed public footpath.’ ‘Public footpath’ would at

least be intelligible, but the insertion of the two words 'or reputed' involves the subject in a legal mist.

"By a provision of Clause 33 the agricultural labourer is disqualified from being elected a parish councillor if within 12 months before his election he has 'received union or parochial relief or other alms.' Observe the delightful vagueness of the expression 'other alms.'

"This Bill will surely not in any way benefit the rural labourer. What would really benefit him would be to give him some security in his present country home and garden by extending to him legally the double boon of fair rent and fixity of tenure. As long as he is liable to capricious eviction little can be done for him, his position being one of dependency, more especially if his landlord be also his employer. On the other hand, if you make him a freeholder he is not really free, but in debt, either to the official or to the private money-lender.

"Instead of entering on this new-fangled legislation, it would surely have been better to proceed on the old lines by reforming and unfettering the rural vestries, now paralysed in their functions by Acts of Parliament, judicial decisions, and clerical usurpations. To set up, as is proposed, a brand-new talking and taxing machine in every rural parish will not tend to the advantage of proprietors, tenant farmers, or labourers.

"The great importance of the subject will, I hope, in some degree excuse my presumption in troubling you with this letter.

"I am, Sir, your obedient servant,

W. J. EVELYN.

"WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
April 3."

William Evelyn wrote the following letter on November 10, 1893, to John Torrance, Esq., President of the Deptford Branch of the Irish National League :—

"MY DEAR SIR,—My support of the Liberal candidate for Deptford, at the general election of 1892, was prompted by a hope that the return of Lord Edmond Fitzmaurice

might assist in effecting a satisfactory settlement of the Irish question by a sound and complete measure of Home Rule.

"With the Newcastle programme, as a whole, I have, and had, no sympathy. But regarding the Irish question as of paramount importance, I determined to waive all other considerations, and to do what I could to secure the return of the able and distinguished candidate brought forward by the Deptford Liberal party.

"I have now the painful duty of announcing, through you, to my friends the members of the Deptford Branch of the Irish National League, that in the event of another contest in Deptford, it will be impossible for me to support a Gladstonian candidate, strongly disapproving as I do of the policy of the present Government in sanctioning and co-operating in the present sanguinary war in South Africa, carried on for the benefit, as it seems to me, of unscrupulous adventurers, to the great detriment of this country's reputation for 'justice, humanity, and mercy.'

"On this question I agree with Mr. Henry Labouchere and Mr. Wilfrid Blunt.

"So thinking, I cannot with any self-respect place myself in the position of appearing to sanction that which I recoil from as simply detestable.

"Therefore, as both ministers and ex-ministers seem pledged to a South African policy of which I strongly disapprove, I shall not vote for either party. But my relations with the Irish party at Deptford have been so cordial, that I cannot conclude without assuring you of my continued sympathy for Ireland. Moreover, I quite appreciate the peculiar position of the Irish party at the present moment, and Sayes Court Hall will, in the case of another election, be placed again at the disposal of your Branch, should you desire to hold a public meeting there.

"Requesting you to lay this letter before your Committee,

"I remain,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.

"WOTTON HOUSE, DORKING, SURREY,
November 10, 1893."

The reply was as follows :—

“DEAR SIR,—I beg to acknowledge receipt of your letter of 10th inst., which I read to my Committee at their last meeting. I need hardly say how sorry they are that circumstances have happened which compel you to withdraw your support from the Liberals of this borough. At the same time they fully appreciate your motives, and are quite unanimous in agreeing with you that the present conflict being carried on in South Africa is a disgrace to this country and to the present Government.

“They are pleased, however, to find that whilst disapproving of the Government policy on this and other points, you are still in sympathy with the Irish people in their demand for a satisfactory measure of Home Rule. We sincerely hope you will have the pleasure of seeing such a measure passed, and of seeing Ireland as happy, contented, and prosperous as the rest of the Empire.

“We thank you from our hearts for your continued sympathy and kindness towards us.

“I beg also to thank you on behalf of my Committee for the framed photograph of Sayes Court Hall, on the occasion of the meeting on October 4. It has come out splendidly, and forms a very beautiful picture.

“With best wishes for your continued good health,

“I beg to remain,

Your obedient servant,

JOHN TORRANCE.

“18 MORNINGTON ROAD, DEPTFORD, S.E.,

November 17, 1893.”

The following letter was written on June 14, 1894 :—

“DEAREST NELLY,—After I had written to Etta this morning I received your letter. You must have been most interested in seeing the lighthouse with its revolving light.

“The cliffs at Beachy Head are very curious. Here the range of chalk downs ends. The chalk downs circle round from Beachy Head all the way to Dover, enclosing a great tract of country in the counties of Surrey, Sussex, and Kent.

These chalk downs are continued on the opposite coast of France. This proves that France and England were once joined together, until at some remote period the sea broke through and parted them, making Great Britain an island and no longer a peninsula. Now, as you know, the straits of Dover, about 24 miles broad, separates England from France.

"I am very glad to learn from you and Etta that you find Eastbourne pleasant. I think that there must be sea-urchins, if only the fishermen would take the trouble to look for them.

"Since I wrote to Etta Mr. Hastings called here. He said that Johnny is now (11.10 a.m.) in the schools undergoing the examination in arithmetic. The examinations will come to an end on Saturday, but probably the result will not be known till Wednesday next, the 20th instant, when a telegram will be sent to Wotton if Johnny, as I hope, succeeds in passing the examination.

"With the best love of myself and your Uncle Edmund for you and your sisters,

"I remain, dearest Nelly,

Ever your affectionate father,

W. J. EVELYN."

The following letter was written on October 11, 1895:—

"October 11, 1895.

"DEAREST NELLY,—I was pleased to receive your letter on coming to Wotton from Northwood yesterday, and I hope that you are all three beginning to like school better than at first. Johnny, on Monday last, the 8th instant, happily succeeded in passing his divinity examination at Oxford, and on Tuesday evening he came to Wotton from Oxford, and to-day (Friday) he left again for Oxford. I am going to Oxford to-morrow in order to secure a good tutor for Johnny.

"With love to Flo and Etta,

"I remain,

Ever your affectionate father,

W. J. EVELYN."

A very pleasing trait in William Evelyn's character was the great love and consideration which he always showed to his mother, who lived at Campfield House, three miles from Wotton. She was a wonderful old lady for her age, and took a great interest in her garden, which was a very beautiful one, and was planned in an old-fashioned style, with yew hedges, elaborately shaped flower-beds, and conical-shaped cypress trees. She had practically never had a day's illness in her life. On one occasion a relative was staying with her who complained of a headache, upon which Mrs. Evelyn said to her, "My dear, I feel very sorry for you, but you know I have never had a headache in my life." The garden at Campfield was a great source of interest both to her and her son, who would drive up from Wotton to see her very often two or three times a week. Her death, after an attack of influenza, on January 11, 1896, when she was nearly ninety-five years of age, was a great loss to her son. She was buried in the Evelyn family vault in Wotton Church on Thursday, January 16, 1896.

In February, William Evelyn decided to go to Italy for a time, and before going he issued the following letter to his tenants :—

"To the Farm and Cottage Tenants on my Wotton and Northwood Estates"

"DEAR FRIENDS AND NEIGHBOURS,—On the eve of quitting England for a while, I desire to address to you a few farewell words on private and public matters.

"In regard to private matters, let me tender you my heartfelt thanks for the sympathy that you have shown to me and mine on the occasion of the recent loss of my dear and honoured mother, who passed away from this world peacefully and painlessly on January 11

"The lamented death, on January 28, of Mr. Mark King, formerly tenant of Paddington Farm, has deprived us of one who was deeply respected, and whose family was long and honourably connected with the parish of Abinger.

"Passing from these private events which have saddened

the commencement of the present year, I now pass on to advert briefly to some public matters. In the Queen's Speech, delivered at the opening of Parliament on Tuesday, the 11th instant, the disastrous condition of agriculture is alluded to, and measures of relief are promised. It is, however, but too evident that in the House of Commons the interest of agriculture is less powerfully supported than the interest of railways, capitalists, brewers, manufacturers, and other great interests, including the interest of the Church, that is, of the clergy.

"Both front benches are apparently indifferent to the interest of the classes connected with agriculture. For instance, the Liberals have increased the abominable beer tax, a tax on the poor man's drink, a tax which ought to be abolished altogether and for ever, while the Conservatives have deliberately, in the interest of the clergy, increased the heavy burden on the land of the tithe-rent charge.

"In any measure brought forward ostensibly for the relief of agriculture, two points should be considered ; firstly, whether the measure imposes fresh burdens on the local rates ; secondly, whether it increases the number or the powers of the tax-devouring class of permanent officials. Most parliamentary measures in these days, besides being too complicated, are deeply imbued with the evil taint of centralisation, the inevitable result being inefficiency and corruption.

"There is a clamour for increase of armaments and consequent expenditure, with the view of maintaining and aggrandising what is called 'the Empire.' Where is all this to end ? Why should the half-ruined landowner and the struggling tenant-farmer attend public meetings to shout for 'the Empire,' for the augmentation of the Navy, to forward schemes and enterprises tending not to the benefit of agriculture, but to the benefit of capitalists, usurers, filibusters, bondholders, company promoters, and other adventurers ? Not long ago Mr. Frederic Harrison said that he was content with the England of Shakespeare and Milton. Entirely agreeing with this sentiment, I am against what Lord Beaconsfield once described as 'bloated armaments,' and to the oppression of the weaker races of mankind for the purpose of extending 'the Empire.'

“ Think what a mess our great statesmen have made in the Turco-Armenian Question. We began by menaces launched against the Sultan of Turkey. Then the London press was inspired to preach a crusade against the Sultan’s Government. Next, after encouraging the revolt against the Sultan’s authority, finding that nobody would follow in our wake, we withdrew our fleet and our menaces. From that moment the situation in the Turkish provinces improved. The Armenian revolutionary committees in London and elsewhere were baffled by our retirement, and the Sultan, who is really an able, enlightened, and humane sovereign, is now engaged in restoring tranquillity and in effecting reforms in his dominions. That during the insurrectionary movement deplorable deeds have been committed on both sides is true ; but the troubles were commenced by Armenian revolutionists to the detriment of the peaceful and law-abiding portion of the Armenian population. Surely, then, instead of holding meetings in England to express sympathy with Armenian revolutionists, it would be more proper to hold meetings to condemn Mr. Gladstone and Lord Rosebery for their monstrous and mischievous personal attacks on the Sultan of Turkey. It is natural that the Turkish nation should mistake such utterances echoed by most of the London press for the voice of the English nation. It is natural too, that the sovereign thus libelled and insulted should seek other alliances, distrusting the friendship of Great Britain.

“ Thus our unskilful diplomacy, and the unguarded language of leading politicians, and of a press inspired by them, tend to alienate those who might be England’s friends, and to augment the number and inveteracy of her foes.

“ Meanwhile, amid this clatter and clamour of Jingoism, the rates and taxes increase ‘ by leaps and bounds.’

“ Farewell for the present. I am to leave England to-morrow.

“ Believe me to be

Your sincere friend,

W. J. EVELYN.

“ LONDON,

February 14, 1896.”

While in Rome William Evelyn stayed at the Hôtel de Russie, where he was later on joined by his son. The hotel had the advantage of a nice garden attached to it and also of being within five minutes' walk of his cousins, the Pantaleones. It was during this stay that he became very ill, and the illness resulted in an immediate operation becoming necessary. Fortunately his first cousin, Signora Pantaleone, procured one of the very best Italian surgeons, who performed the operation, which was permanently successful. The Pantaleones were his very great friends, and when in Rome he always saw a great deal of them. Signora Pantaleone had been a Miss Massy-Dawson, the daughter of his mother's brother Francis.

Not many months after his return from Italy he experienced another great family bereavement in the death of his wife, who had been seriously ill for some time, and who died July 25, 1897, at her sister Mrs. Braithwaite's house, No. 13 Gloucester Place, Portman Square.

In the autumn of the same year he went abroad with his son and daughters, their governess, and his first cousin, Mrs. Cox. The winter was spent at Florence, where a house, Villa Pucci, Via Bolognese, was taken. A short visit was paid to Rome, and the family arrived back in England on February 10, 1898.

William Evelyn thoroughly disapproved of the Boer War, which broke out at the end of the next year, 1899. He considered that there was no adequate reason for it, that it had been made in the interest of capitalists, that it could benefit no one, and, finally, that it was unjust and cruel. It required some courage to openly hold such views at this time, owing to the narrow-minded attitude of the Jingoës who professed to think such views unpatriotic.

All through his life he had a hatred of violence and felt a great indignation of any tyranny of the strong towards the weak.

The following letter was written to the secretary of the "Stop the War" Committee:—

"January 16, 1900.

"SIR,—You may put down my name as one of those who desire to stop the present war carried on by the Salis-

bury Government against the two South African Republics, a war which from the first was regarded by me as unjust and unnecessary, and which saddens the evening of our good and gracious Queen's reign.

"Though the official oligarchy, Liberal and Conservative, are generally in favour of prosecuting this war, it is possible that the mass of the people may ere long discover how grossly they have been deceived.

"The present war fever, so far as my observation goes, is far less strong in the rural districts. If your Committee would like to hold a meeting at Wotton, I could place at your disposal for that purpose the Wotton Institute Room.

"Meanwhile, I remain,

Yours faithfully,

W. J. E."

At the end of January 1900, William Evelyn again went abroad, this time with only two of his daughters, Helen and Henrietta. They went first to Rome and then on to Naples, where they took a boat to Alexandria. The boat arrived on February 11, the voyage having taken four days. After a few days spent at Alexandria they went on to Cairo, where they stayed at the Ghesireh Palace Hotel, and where William Evelyn had the pleasure of meeting his dear friend Mr. Wilfrid Blunt, and of visiting him and Lady Anne Blunt in their house near Cairo. From Cairo they went on by train to Assouan, where they stayed a few days, arriving back at Cairo on March 1. On the afternoon of that day they had tea on the terrace of Shepherd's Hotel, after watching the militia from it replacing the Cameron Highlanders. On arrival back at the Ghesireh Palace Hotel, William Evelyn found a telegram from his son announcing that he had joined the Imperial Yeomanry and was starting immediately for the Cape. This was, of course, a surprise to him, all the more so, perhaps, because it was so unexpected. Joined to his anxiety on his son's behalf was his regret that he should not have been able to say good-bye to him. He sent a farewell message by telegram, although he feared it would be too late. A few days after this there was an earthquake

at Cairo. William Evelyn and his daughters were sitting at dinner when they suddenly noticed the floor swaying up and down, and an enormous chandelier in the middle of the room began swinging violently. After a few seconds everyone rose and walked quickly and quietly out of the room and into the garden. There was no panic, and by this time the shock was over and everyone returned and went on with their dinner. There were no more shocks after this, but at one of the other hotels a chandelier had actually come down owing to the shock. The party started to return to Italy on March 10 and arrived at Brindisi on March 18. After a train journey of eleven hours they arrived at Naples, where they stayed till the 16th, when they returned again to the Hôtel de Russie, Rome. Here the time was mostly spent in sight-seeing and in visits to the Pantaleones, who were, of course, much interested in the news that John, whom they were very fond of, had volunteered for the front. They returned to England at the end of March, and shortly after their return news came that the Imperial Yeomanry had been taken prisoner on May 31, at Lindley, after holding out for several days, and had been taken to a place called Nooitgedacht, where they had to stay for many months. This was a great relief to William Evelyn, as he knew now that his son was safe. About this time he wrote a letter to the *Morning Leader*, in which he said that he had seen a mention in that paper of his son having gone to the war, but he hoped that on that account no one would think that he approved of the war, and explained that his opinion on it remained exactly the same as before.

Three months later, September 3, a telegram arrived from the office of the Yeomanry in Duke Street, which said, "Evelyn taken prisoner to Barberton." The next news came in October to the effect that he had been released and was at Cape Town, and on February 16, 1901, John arrived back at Wotton, after breaking his journey by some weeks at Rome. He received a hearty reception from the tenantry; when the carriage reached the lodge it was met by a crowd of cottagers who walked behind it as it proceeded at a foot's pace to the house, the men of the Wotton

fire brigade dressed in their uniforms walking on either side. A large triumphal arch had been erected at the end of the avenue, and as the carriage reached the porch the school children who were assembled there sang "Home, sweet Home." In the porch the tenants presented John with an illuminated address, which he thanked them for in a few appropriate words. William Evelyn also made a speech in which his voice betrayed the agitation which he was feeling in having his son once more safe and sound under his roof. He had suffered so much from anxiety and worry that it had somewhat affected his health, and he was looking very ill. The doctor said that his heart was very weak, and that he ought never to winter in England, as he felt the cold so much. This was all the more necessary because he would never put on anything extra when going out of doors, and would often drive in an open carriage without any greatcoat, even in the most bitterly cold weather.

In the beginning of 1903 he relinquished Wotton House to his son, who had married in January 1902 Miss Frances Edith Ives, daughter of General Cecil Ives of Moyns Park, Halstead, Essex. He and his daughters took up their residence at Northwood House,¹ near East Grinstead, in Sussex. He was also a good deal at Campfield House, near Wotton, or staying in the Wotton Home Farm, where he had rooms. The following letter of his was written to Miss Mayo (the daughter of his old schoolmaster at Cheam), who lived close to Dorking, three miles from Wotton.

¹ Northwood, which is situated on a hill commanding a beautiful view, five miles from East Grinstead, was originally a farmhouse, the old part of which had belonged to the Evelyn Family since the year 1684, at which time it was purchased by George Evelyn of Nutfield (who died 1699) from John Wood, yeoman, according to a deed signed by his son, Richard Evelyn, and his wife, bearing the date November 15, 1733, and endorsed, "Deed to declare the uses of a Fine and Recovery." From George Evelyn of Nutfield it passed to his widow, Frances, who died in 1730, then to Richard Evelyn of Dublin (died 1751), his fourth son, then to Elizabeth (died 1780), widow of Richard, then to Richard's grandson, John Evelyn (died 1827), then to the latter's widow, Anne Evelyn, who by will dated May 1, 1829, devised it to her grandson, the Rev. Frederick Evelyn, from whom it was purchased April 2, 1875, by William Evelyn, who added considerably to the house, which was quite a small farmhouse when he bought it. In October 1880 he bought Kixes Farm from William Rolfe.

“Easter Monday, 1903.

“DEAR MISS MAYO,—I am soon going to Italy to bring back my two eldest daughters from Rome, where they are now staying.

“You are perhaps aware that my son and his wife will henceforth reside at Wotton House. My headquarters when in Surrey will be Campfield House.

“We have just started a quarterly magazine for Wotton Parish.

“You would much oblige me if you would write to the Editor, Mr. J. V. Moore, Wotton Public Elementary School, Dorking, Surrey, to let him know the date of the arrival of the cuckoo and of the turtledove, etc., in the neighbourhood of Dorking. The little magazine will aim at taking great notice of facts connected with natural history, migration of birds, etc. Mr. Moore is schoolmaster of W.P.E. School, and will be the Editor of the magazine. I would not ask you to write to him but that I am likely to be absent from England.

“Hoping that on my return home (if Providence allow me to return) I may have the pleasure of seeing you,

“I remain,

Yours very truly,

W. J. EVELYN.”

During this trip William Evelyn stayed with his daughters in Rome, Naples, Palermo, and Tunis, and returned to England in the best of health.

It was in August 1904 that William Evelyn's first grandchild was born, a boy, who was christened Cecil John Alvin. This was a great joy to him, and he became much attached to the child.

The following account of a visit of the Deptford Irish to Campfield on July 27, 1907, is taken from the *Dorking Advertiser* for August 10, 1907:—

“On Saturday, July 27, Mr. W. J. Evelyn, J.P., D.L., was eighty-five years of age, and he celebrated the occasion by inviting the Deptford Branch of the Irish United League to Campfield House, Wotton. This invitation has been given annually, and this year it was accepted by nearly

one hundred members. Mr. Evelyn had sent brakes to meet the party at Dorking Station, and they had a lovely drive of six or seven miles by Wotton Farm to Leith Hill, where light refreshments were served, and each was given a copy of an illustrated booklet containing a short history of Leith Hill Tower, which Mr. Evelyn had had printed specially for their information. The visitors were handed a preliminary letter of welcome from Mr. Evelyn, which was read to the branch by the President, Mr. Brogan. Mr. Evelyn therein expressed a hope that the weather would be propitious, and continued :

“ ‘ I look forward to seeing my guests at Campfield House after their visit to Leith Hill Tower. To-day I am eighty-five years old, having been born at 28 Gloucester Place, Portman Square, parish of Marylebone, London, July 27, 1822. My father, George Evelyn, was born at Galway, September 16, 1791. With good wishes for you and all my guests, I remain, yours truly,

‘ W. J. EVELYN.’

“ Dinner was served in a large marquee surmounted by several flags, the largest and most prominent being inscribed, ‘ God save the King.’ There were also the flag of Ireland, the Union Jack, and the arms of Mr. Evelyn. Mr. Evelyn came in just before the closing grace and took the chair. Having expressed the very great pleasure which he experienced in receiving his Irish friends from Deptford, he gave the toasts of ‘ The Pope ’ and ‘ The King.’

“ Mr. Brogan said ‘ he should be glad to have the opportunity of proposing the health of their honoured and beloved host. They could not fail to remark the particular and graceful compliment which was conveyed in the fact that Mr. Evelyn had invited them to Campfield on his birthday (Cheers), and they appreciated, too, his thoughtful kindness in having specially printed the beautiful booklet containing a history of Leith Hill, which was inscribed with the statement that it was printed on the occasion of the visit of the branch. (Hear, hear.) Last year they were invited on the birthday of Mr. Evelyn’s son, Mr. John H. Chichester Evelyn. The fact that Mr. W. J. Evelyn’s father was born in

Galway combined with his innate sense of justice to command his sympathy for the welfare of Ireland. For that cause he had made enormous sacrifices, and in that respect had set an example even to Irishmen. (Cheers.) The way in which he had followed the course which his conscience recommended to him regardless of what the results to himself might be, evoked the respect and admiration of all Irishmen. (Cheers.) Since Mr. Evelyn received them last year the cause of Ireland had made some progress. The election at Jarrow, where their candidate polled more than 2000, showed that the Irish vote in that constituency was not a factor which could be ignored. It was estimated by those who were competent to judge that there were about 120 constituencies in Great Britain where the Irish vote was the determining factor, and if the Irish voters in the other 119 acted with the same loyalty and singleness of purpose as their fellow-countrymen in Jarrow, then some consideration would have to be given to the claims of Ireland. (Cheers.) Speaking of Mr. Birrell's Devolution Bill, he said he believed the King was anxious to see some settlement of this Irish question, and he and others were not without hope that they would see, in the time of King Edward VII, a Bill passed which might not meet the extreme wishes of the Irish people, but would, at any rate, be in accord with the natural wishes of those among them who wished to live in harmony with their neighbours on the other side of the water. (Applause.) Many of them had thought that it would have been well to try Mr. Birrell's Bill, but they accepted the judgment of their trusted leader, Mr. John Redmond. Reverting, however, to the subject which was at that moment in their thoughts, he was sure he expressed the feelings of all the Irishmen of Deptford when he said they hoped that Mr. Evelyn might be spared some years yet, and that all the blessings of Providence might be his. (Cheers.)

"The toast was received with great enthusiasm. Mr. Evelyn, acknowledging, said 'he could assure his guests that, although he had not been able to do much for the Irish cause, yet his heart was as true to that cause as ever it was. (Cheers.) In the course of his long life he had experienced

more public notoriety than perhaps he merited. (Laughter.) He could assure those present that he was not of a turbulent or adventurous disposition, and that his natural propensity was to lead a quiet, unobtrusive life. It so happened that he had been in some stormy scenes, and when Lord Salisbury came forward with a Bill for Irish coercion, in pursuance of a course which many of his supporters were pledged not to support, he, for one, could not stand it, and refused to vote as he was ordered to vote. (Cheers.) The thought of standing again against his own former friends was repugnant to him, and he invited Mr. Blunt to contest the borough. Mr. Blunt was at that time in prison in consequence of the monstrous decision of a judge. He (Mr. Evelyn) anticipated that there would be so much sympathy with Mr. Blunt that he would carry the election during his imprisonment, but in spite of all they could do, there was—to his great regret—a small majority against them. So long as he lived the Irish people might always count upon his sympathy and the interest he should continue to take in the welfare of that country, with which he was connected by blood. (Cheers.) He thought Irishmen had an admirable leader in Mr. J. Redmond, and that everything bade fair for the Irish cause. (Applause.) He was very glad that the clerk of the weather had been propitious, and he trusted that his friends from Deptford would have a very pleasant day. He was very sorry that his son had been unable to be with them, for he should have liked both him and his (the speaker's) little grandson to be present. (Hear, hear.) At his time of life he could not speak with confidence of the future, but if it should please Providence to spare him, he should hope to have the opportunity of welcoming his friends from Deptford again. (Cheers.)

“After dinner there were traps in readiness for those who might like to drive out, but the majority of the guests preferred to inspect the house and grounds, with the beautiful trees, the fine growth of roses, the Indian cattle, and South African sheep. The Wotton brass band played a selection of music in the grounds, and the St. Joseph's Deptford drum and fife band played at intervals throughout the day. Mr. Evelyn joined his visitors at tea. Mr. Brogan expressed the

thanks of the branch to their host for his splendid hospitality, and Mr. Evelyn, in reply, said it had been to him the greatest possible pleasure to receive his Deptford guests. Mr. Brogan also conveyed the thanks of the party to Mrs. Day and her efficient helpers for the excellence of the arrangements, which Mr. Evelyn had committed to Mrs. Day's care.

"About 6.30 the members of the branch left Campfield House in brakes for Dorking Station, cheers being given for the host, and the Wotton band playing 'Auld Lang Syne.' Each man carried a handsome gift from Mr. Evelyn, who had reversed the usual order of birthday presents.

"After another pleasant drive *via* Coldharbour, the party left Dorking at 8.23."

This was the last time that the Deptford Irish were destined to be entertained at Campfield by the friend whom they loved so well and who had proved such a sincere friend to them and the Irish cause, for he died not quite a year later. During the ensuing winter he began to suffer from his heart, which gradually became weaker and weaker, and he died of heart failure on Friday, June 26, 1908, at Campfield House, at the age of eighty-five. During April, May, and June his health had seemed to slightly improve, and he was able to spend many hours in the beautiful garden at Campfield in which he took such interest. In accordance with his wish he was buried in the churchyard of Oakwood in Surrey.

He was a Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, Deputy-Lieutenant of Surrey, and had been at one time a Captain in the Surrey Rifles, which he founded as a club before the foundation of volunteer regiments. His clubs were the Carlton, Athenæum, Oxford and Cambridge, and Constitutional. In many ways his character was far more Irish than English, and he had in a very marked degree the dreamy, poetical imagination of the Celt, joined to a warm-hearted and emotional impulsiveness, partially veiled, however, by a certain shy reserve perhaps due to his restrained boyhood or other causes. The most salient points in his character were his kind-heartedness, his unbounded generosity, his intense affection for his children, his hatred of any injustice and eagerness to put it right, which often made him enemies, his

sincerity and nobility of character, and his utter freedom from meanness of thought or action. In appearance he was not tall and rather broad, and he had singularly refined and beautiful features, his nose aquiline and his eyes of the colour of forget-me-nots.

The following account is taken from the *West Kent Argus* of July 14, 1908 :—

“ A memorial service for the late Mr. W. J. Evelyn was held at St. Nicholas, Deptford, on Sunday evening, July 5th, the congregation including some thirty workmen employed on the deceased gentleman's Deptford estate, and a number of the tenantry. Preaching from Psalm xxxvi. 23, ‘ The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord ; and he delighteth in his way,’ the Vicar (The Rev. Arthur Hart) said they were gathered together to mourn one whose character stood out as unique in Deptford. Mr. Evelyn could only be a great man because of the traits in his character which blended in so beautiful a form. Now that the chapter was closed they saw him not as partisans, not as neighbours, but they saw the character relieved of everything that would mislead, and they realised his worth. After referring to Mr. Evelyn's great will power, which was controlled by the force of his goodness, the preacher said that the deceased gentleman's life was transparently clear. Those who came in touch with him knew that they were dealing with a sincere heart, and came away the better for having been brought in contact with him. Combined with this there was a beautiful unselfishness, and his heart was full of benevolence. His sympathy led him to enquire constantly what were the conditions of life of the people of Deptford, and to seek to make them more happy. Then, how simple he was : a true old English gentleman. They admired, too, his splendid unsectarianism. If he was called upon for anything he asked, ‘ Is it for the general good ? ’ He lived in an atmosphere of goodness. He was a good man as a landlord, seeking to make the lives of his tenants bright, cheerful, and happy. Rents on his estate were low, and when any of his tenants were in special need he would assist, as many of them could testify. It was the landlord of that class who killed all the democratic Socialism.

“As a benefactor, none would ever know what he gave away. He maintained the soup kitchen for many years, and as soon as cold weather came, his one question was: ‘Is it not time to open the soup kitchen?’ When there was need of a park in Deptford he made it easy for the authority to acquire land, and then gave his thousands for the purpose of acquiring land for the people of Deptford. As an employer, too, he was a good man. When a man was too old for work he was not cast off, or left to the parish: Mr. Evelyn himself looked after him. If there were more such employers there would not be so much discontent, or so much of the revolutionary spirit showing itself. In that old parish church, where his ancestors had worshipped for generation after generation, where the founder of his family was buried, they, his employees and his tenantry, were met to mourn his loss, and they laid a tribute of real affection and real appreciation of the great and good man whom God had taken from them. They prayed the good work might be continued, that all the brightness and harmony that existed between the tenantry and the house of Evelyn might be continued, and that the great mission of a great house might be pursued with all the ardour and the great will-power which he possessed. They thanked God for his life; they appreciated his character, and they blessed God that he had now entered upon his rest in the land of light and song.”

The following notice from the same newspaper was written by Owen Brogan, President of the Deptford Branch of the United Irish League:—

“The general sadness that pervaded the breasts of the Irish people of Deptford on learning of the death of Mr. W. J. Evelyn, was both touching and impressive. His sympathies towards Ireland and her people were very strong, a thing at which no one can wonder when Mr. Evelyn’s family ties with Ireland come to be considered. His father was born at Galway, of an Irish mother, in 1791; and his paternal grandfather at Arklow in County Wicklow. The latter married Miss Anne Shee, daughter of Mr. Anthony Shee, of Castlebar, County Mayo. Curiously enough, Mr. Evelyn’s first nurse, Mrs. O’Connor, was Irish, and was the wife of a

private soldier in Mr. Evelyn's father's regiment, the second battalion of the 3rd Regiment of Foot Guards.

"The friendship of Mr. Evelyn for the Irish people of Deptford began with the good Canon Fannan. That attachment developed into an intimate acquaintance which was only severed by the death of the beloved Canon, which was an occasion of inexpressible grief to the revered Mr. Evelyn.

"Mr. Evelyn entered Parliament as a Conservative, but the repressive legislation of the Government of that time in regard to Ireland caused him to become one of the most fearless and consistent champions of the rights of Ireland. Since then he had annually entertained the members of the Deptford branch of the United Irish League at one of his country seats, where all experienced his friendship, confidence, and princely hospitality. Indeed, it was remarkable to observe the delight which the honoured host took in cultivating the friendship of his guests.

"Any Irish meeting at Sayes Court was always a matter of special consideration to Mr. Evelyn. At the time of the Boer War, when public feeling was in a high state of tension, I well remember a meeting that took place in Sayes Court Hall, under the auspices of the Deptford branch of the United Irish League, to protest against the War. The danger of an open meeting like that was obvious to any intelligent man, but Mr. Evelyn had no hesitation in granting the use of the hall and grounds, believing, as he did, in the justice of the object of the meeting.

"Mr. Evelyn was not only an indomitable politician, but also a most generous supporter of any cause which tended to uplift the lives of the people. The late Canon Fannan's greatest ideal was to complete the work of his predecessor, Canon Glennie. The schools were heavily in debt, and had it not been for Canon Fannan's untiring energy and that of many of his devoted parishioners, combined with the annual grant made by Mr. Evelyn, his life, indeed, would have been a burden. Knowing the precarious position, through no fault of their own, of many of the Irish people of Deptford, the worthy squire was ever mindful of their wants through

the medium of the late Canon. As time progressed, so did Mr. Evelyn's concern for the people become more acute, and his friendship and generosity for the poor endured with him. The rebuilding of St. Joseph's Schools cast a grievous weight on the present Rector of the Church of the Assumption, the Rev. Father Segesser. I vividly recollect, on the initiation of the work, Mr. Evelyn's anxiety as to how the expenditure would be met; but, needless to state, he, by example, led the way. His interest in the schools prompted him to give the temporary use of Sayes Court, which generous action meant the equivalent of some two thousand pounds.

"The annual fête in Sayes Court Gardens in aid of the rebuilding fund will also be remembered. To his great grief, on account of others applying for the use of the grounds, Mr. Evelyn brought the festivities to an end, but not without further assistance.

"Can anyone in his senses doubt that if worldly honours had been the object of our beloved friend departed, he could have failed of obtaining them? No. He delighted in fighting the battles of the poor and the laborious. He did not wait upon Fortune by espousing the cause of the successful. When he conceived anyone was acting ill, he charged him with the wrong. His like will not be seen again. 'I could make in a day,' said Francis I to some arrogant lords, speaking of the death of De Vinci,—'I could make in a day many such nobles as you, but God only can make such a one as him I deplore.'

"So, fare you well. Farewell, kind friend and true.

Remember us as we remember you.

OWEN BROGAN."

The following act of kindness on the part of William Evelyn was related by Miss Mayo, and is here given in her own words: "In 1870 Mr. Joyce, the Vicar of Dorking, had to undergo a very critical operation. Mr. Evelyn placed the house in Gloucester Place at his disposal, and not only that, but he and Mrs. Joyce were his guests. I told this to a great friend of mine, who afterwards became Dean Butler of Lincoln. His remark was, 'A man who could do that must have mounted many steps of the ladder to Heaven.'"

CHAPTER VIII

POEMS WRITTEN BY WILLIAM JOHN EVELYN

THE following Harvest Song was written by William John Evelyn in 1860, and sung on the occasion of a Harvest Home of his Wotton tenantry. It should be borne in mind that 1860 was a very bad year for agriculturists.

HARVEST SONG

WOTTON, 1860

SPRING like second winter seemed ;
Summer suns but faintly beamed ;
Autumn winds and drenching rain
Spoiled the slowly ripening grain.

On the weed-encumbered soil
Weary was the reaper's toil ;
And the husbandman dismayed
Saw his crops in ruin laid.

Yet, though scant the harvest-yield
Gathered from the wasted field,
Let not erring man repine
Chastened by a power divine.

He who smote will surely save
He, the Lord of Harvest, gave
With our load of earthly care
Hands to work and hearts to bear.

So away with doubt and gloom,
Harvest trophies deck the room,
Now we may enjoy a rest,
Earned by toil and therefore blessed.

THE EVELYN FAMILY

Harps should sometimes be unstrung,
 Bows unbent and hearts unwrung ;
 He who works should sometimes play—
 Labour claims its holiday.

Let us then like brethren meet,
 Master, man, each other greet ;
 Severed by the world's decree
 Linked in Christian sympathy.

Should a storm-cloud burst above
 Roofs that shield what most we love,
 'Tis not for ourselves we fear,
 But for those we hold most dear.

One soft touch, one house-hold smile
 Can a thousand pangs beguile ;
 Truest happiness but lies
 In a virtuous home's sweet ties.

May the next returning spring
 Promise fair of plenty bring ;
 May the Power that we adore
 Guard our hearts and bless our store.

THE LESSON OF THE PAST

LINES addressed to Mr. THOMAS HUGHES, author of *Tom Brown's Schooldays*, in 1870, on an occasion when Mr. Hughes put forward some optimistic social theories which William Evelyn thought destined to disappointment.

THOU dreamer wake ! the prospect scan !
 And seek not, hope not to reverse
 The doom that broods o'er fallen man,
 The stern mysterious primal curse.

Resign high thoughts that lead astray !
 Review the past—then gaze around ;
 And mark where under Mammon's sway,
 Reluctant millions still are bound.

Though girt by light and music, they
 To each fine sense must needs be dead ;
 And reason's heaven-descended ray
 Cheers not, on jaded spirits shed,

Their very love is sad ; they grieve
For the little forms that round them grow ;
Their keenest pang that they must leave
To these a legacy of woe.

Nay, hark ! a voice rings o'er the land ;
Mild are its tones, yet firm and free :—
“ Justice and plenty are at hand ;
Come, gentle friends, and follow me ! ”

Aroused, they break the galling yoke ;
The honied words their souls drink in.
Forward they press, for he who spoke
Had power the hearts of men to win.

They praised him that, though nobly born,
Leaving the order of his birth,
Them and their cause he did not scorn,
But stooped to help the wronged of earth.

Their minds in turn he charmed and awed ;
His brow was grave ; his words were fire.
Each dear abuse, each hallowed fraud
Quailed 'neath the arrows of his ire.

Faction breeds war ! oh, glorious day,
Dearly, but not too dearly bought !
In dust the proud oppressors lay
Now is the great deliverance wrought !

And where is he, their chief adored,
Friend of the people and their cause ?
He stands confest with crimsoned sword,
A Tyrant, trampling on the laws.

And now, too late, they count the cost,
Sore-laden with a heavier chain ;
And so the hard-won day is lost,
And they have striven, have bled in vain.

So runs the tale from age to age
Of man's revolt against his doom.
Alas ! in life's dim pilgrimage,
No guiding star beams through the gloom.

Then, since no human power can free
Earth from the curse that must endure,
Seek not to change the dark decree,
But soften what thou canst not cure.

APHORISMS

TRUE charity will gently sin reprove.
Its form is courtesy, its essence love.

False charity crawls, chatters, chides, confounds ;
Visits, but pries ; gives, but in giving, wounds.

Two things I hate, as jarring with Heaven's plan :
A manly woman—an unmanly man.

Forget the past, nor let thy soul despair.
Look onward, upward ; man is born to bear.

The weapons dark and foul which slanderers wield
Fall blunted from Disdain's opposing shield.

ZETA.

September 1889.

THE MISER AND THE MOUSE

(FROM THE GREEK)

ONCE upon a time a Miser
Thus addressed a little Mouse :
"Friend, what seek you here ? be wiser
Venture not within my house."

Answered Mousey, sweetly smiling,
"Fear not for your golden hoard.
Let me stay, the hours beguiling.
Lodge me. I'll not ask for board."

ZETA.

December 1889.

DECEMBER

TREES are leafless, rent, snowladen :
All too soon the sunbeams fade :
Now no longer youth and maiden
Seek the forest's green arcade :
Yet, this stern midwinter, dearer
Than gay summer's sultry heat,
Makes the ties of blood seem nearer,
And the thought of home more sweet.

Though man's fallen race inherits
 Much of suffering, sin, and gloom,
 Rest assured that guardian spirits
 Watch in pity o'er each home.
 Oh ! may Faith, our lives impressing,
 Cot and mansion guide and cheer,
 Shed on Christmas hearths a blessing,
 Brighten all the coming year.

ZETA.

December 1889.

FROM THE GREEK OF THEOGNIS

(ABOUT B.C. 520)

If the madding crowd surround me,
 With the gay I can be gay :
 When the good and grave have found me,
 I am grave and good as they.

ZETA.

October 1890.

The following poem is in allusion to a Liberal Unionist meeting held at Abinger Hammer Schoolroom on October 23, 1890, a building belonging to Sir Thomas Farrer—Lord Arthur Russell presiding. The news of the Home Rule victory at Eccles arrived on the morning of the day of the meeting.

A WARNING

VAIN Unionists, who met in Farrer's hall,
 Could you not read the writing on the wall ?
 Spell-bound too long the nation's conscience slumbered ;
 But with the awakening your days are numbered.

That very morning brought a message true
 Of peace to Erin and of doom to you.
 Know that in Eccles England has outspoken.
 Your game is up ! Your battering-ram is broken.

ZETA.

November 1890.

TRANSLATION OF THE SECOND CHORUS OF THE
"ANTIGONE" OF SOPHOCLES

I

How wondrous are man's innate powers !
The perils of the deep he braves ;
Undaunted, though a dark sky lowers,
And Notos drives the roaring waves.
Unwearied, deathless, undecayed,
Earth yields to man and man alone.
Her yearly tribute must be paid
In homage to a mortal throne.
Behold the plough her bosom rending,
And steeds beneath the yoke low-bending.

II

The forms uncouth that haunt the wild,
The birds that wing their airy way,
And ocean's tribes by craft beguiled,
Attest their human conqueror's sway
On sea or plain or mountain side.
No more the courser, free as wind,
With arching neck and crest of pride,
Exults : that neck the yoke-straps bind.
The mountain-bull, untamed before,
Must learn obedience, free no more.

III

To man, to man alone by Heaven
The boon of language has been given,
And reason, teaching him to scan
Creation's mixed but ordered plan,
With lore polite his mind to mould,
To shield his frame from wet and cold,
To nurse high thoughts, to weigh the past,
With care the future to forecast.
And yet not all his skill and might
Avail to pierce the gloom around.
Resistless else, the grave's dark night
That might can quell, that skill confound.
All the physician's art, though great,
Can but delay, not change, his fate.

IV

Thus, high upheld by reason's power,
 Above all else men seems to tower,
 Whether by virtue's touch refined,
 Or erring passion-tossed, and blind.
 Honoured is he among his peers,
 Who justice and the gods reveres.
 But the wrongdoer, with a name
 Deeply disgraced, who feels no shame,
 He who can thus unblushing stand
 And bear his load of guilt unmoved,
 An outcast from his native land,
 May he be torn from all he loved !
 And never be it mine to blend
 My lot with his or call him friend !

ZETA.

May 1891.

TRANSLATION OF AN EPIGRAM OF MARTIAL, WHO
 FLOURISHED ABOUT A.D. 90MARTIAL'S *Epigrams*, II. 90

My wants are these ; a grassy nook,
 A modest home beside a brook,
 A chimney that disdains to smoke.

Servants who love an easy life,
 A gentle, not too learned, wife,
 And tranquil nights, and no day-strife.

ZETA.

July 1891.

THE BLIND

'Tis said that Nature for the blind in vain
 Unfolds her loveliest treasures far and wide.
 They hear the river flow when o'er the plain
 Rings the soft cadence of the murmuring tide,
 But cannot see the crystal water guide
 Through meadows fair its wandering course and bright.
 They feel the breeze of morning past them glide,
 But cannot watch where beams of orient light
 Stream forth, and westward drive the sullen waning night.

And yet methinks just Heaven, in chastening kind,
 Even for the blind has recompense in store.
 If loving hearts beat near them, if the mind
 True to itself assert its loftier power,
 If innocent musings, weaning each lone hour
 From brooding melancholy or dismay,
 A soothing balm o'er the worn spirit pour,
 The encircling darkness then is changed to day,
 And sad or sinful thoughts like phantoms melt away.

The Chian bard who sang with deathless verse
 Of Troy and Ithaca, in weakness strong,
 Could bear the doom of blindness ; for the curse
 Was blended with the sacred gift of song.
 King-like he moved amid the admiring throng
 Of worshippers and heard their loud acclaim.
 Bays that can never fade to him belong.
 Age upon age has honoured Homer's name.
 Who would repine at loss linked to such glorious fame ?

So our own Milton, old, unblessed by love
 Of those from whom such love was due of right,
 Though sorely tried had comfort from above ;
 And, though the day to him was but as night,
 Bright gleams from Eden cheered his mental sight.
 His strain heaven-guided was of things concealed
 From all save him : yet in imperfect light
 His day-dreams he embodied ; half was sealed
 From his still mortal ken and half to him revealed.

Ingratitude, neglect subdued him not.
 Great were his sorrows, greater his reward,
 And, if at times he mourned his lonely lot,
 'Twas but a passing pang : to peace restored
 The passion-free the heavenly lay he poured.
 Patient in suffering, dreading not to die,
 Beyond earth's troubled scene his spirit soared,
 Secure that death to his unclouded eye
 Now dimly shadowed forth would shew eternity.

ZETA.

October 1891.

THE NORWEGIAN FATHER

(FROM THE NORWEGIAN)

FROM a rocky seat by the rushing tide,
 A Norseman spoke thus to a youth at his side.

"Now hearken ! thou art not an infant, my boy :
So the nets thou hast mended henceforward employ.

"I will take thee a-fishing with me : thou shalt set
In the deep-rolling current thy father's own net.

"Thou shalt see then how merrily we, when afloat,
Shall enmesh bright-scaled herrings entrapped from our boat.

"If our boat ship a sea, thou wilt quake not nor quail.
In toil, cold, and hunger thy heart shall not fail.

"Well thou knowest the pride of the Norseman of old
Was to see in his offspring a mariner bold.

"Well thou knowest the old histories I read from that book
Which through long winter nights cheered our loved inglenook.

"Surely we, like our sires of the olden time,
May win honour and treasure in every clime.

"My sons they are many : my farm it is small :
If you all stayed at home you would eat up my all.

"On our ancient homestead my eldest shall stay,
The others must make or must break their way.

"To each I have taught something useful for life :
To cleave with the axe or to carve with the knife :

"Or on skates to pursue, with the speed of a bird,
O'er the mountain's snow-desert the wild reindeer herd.

"But *thy* thoughts, oh, my youngest, still turned to the sea :
Then fulfil thy heart's wish a brave seaman to be."

The lad looked up smiling. May fortune be kind,
And breathe on his sail with a favouring wind !

ZETA.

February 1892.

IN MEMORY OF JOHN BOX

WHO DIED AT DORKING, FEBRUARY 4, 1892, AGED 60 YEARS

THY lyre is mute as thou, its lord,
Who from our midst hast quickly fled
At the death-angel's summons dread,
But not unhonoured, undeplored.

THE EVELYN FAMILY

The power, the music of thy lays
 Impressed the heart and charmed the ear.
 And so thy memory claims a tear,
 A passing sigh for vanished days.

Yet hope's soft voice may soothe our pain ;
 For, if Heaven's promised rest be thine,
 Why at Heaven's will should we repine ?
 The loss is ours, but thine the gain.

ZETA.

February 8, 1892.

TO MY SON

(WRITTEN DURING ILLNESS)

FOR thee, dear boy, I kneel in prayer ;
 And may the hope my prayer inspire
 That Heaven may guide thee, soothe each care,
 And make thee happier than thy sire.

And, if thy sire have suffered wrong,
 Seek not that wrong to render back :
 But only, in a good cause strong,
 Guard thou his memory from attack.

Methinks, when soon my dust is laid
 Within its chamber dark and low,
 That thou at least wilt not upbraid
 Him who in life had loved thee so.

ZETA.

July 27, 1892.

FAREWELL

'Tis long since sweet spring flowers their fragrance shed,
 And now the happy summer days are fled.
 No more the forest's overarching screen
 Gleams, a light canopy of vivid green ;
 But songless woods with foliage sun-imbrowned
 Oppress the spirit as we gaze around.
 And oft a mystic calm pervades the air
 As if the wild winds cowering shunned the glare.
 O'er landscapes rich in autumn's grand array
 There breeds a boding presage of decay.
 Bright is the harvest-moon, and Nature's voice
 Bids man forget his sorrows and rejoice,

Yet the thought wakes amid the harvest-cheer
That days are shortened and dark winter near.

ZETA.

Harvest-tide, 1892.

STOP THE WAR!

WHAT means the din that stuns the deafened ear
With multitudinous uproar far and near,
Marring sweet sounds of spring with discords drear?
What means the din?

'Tis the loud war-shout, angry, pitiless,
Of those who would all rule of right transgress,
Impelled by passion and a venal press
To shame and sin.

"Down with the Boer! No mercy! No delay!"
"On to Pretoria! March, despoil and slay!"
"Let bayonets and bullets clear the way!"
Such is the cry.

Official oligarchs with statecraft cold
Have Britain's weal and Britain's honour sold;
For lust of Empire and for greed of Gold
They plot and lie.

And capitalists a sordid banner wave,
With simulated patriotism rave,
Gloat o'er their dupes, and, still insatiate, crave
Through war, more gain.

Arrayed with these in strange but close accord,
Bishops and ministers deny their Lord,
Breathing revenge, appealing to the sword
In speech profane.

Britons reflect! let wrath to ruth give place!
With Erin linked, redeem your land's disgrace!
To crush by force a freeborn peasant race
Forbear, forbear!

And may our gracious Queen benignly deign
To accept a homage which we do not feign:
And peaceful be the evening of her reign!
Oh, stop the War!

Easterday, 1900.

ZETA.

THE EVELYN FAMILY

A WELCOME TO CECIL JOHN ALVIN EVELYN
ON HIS HOMECOMING

(BORN AUGUST 25, 1904)

FEAR not, baby, though we want thee
 In an old ancestral home ;
 Come with smiles, let nothing daunt thee !
 Come and charm away the gloom !
 Kind hearts greet thee, dearest boy,
 Wotton's hope, thy parents' joy !

Welcome. Oh ! may Heaven protect thee
 Through life's dim and chequered way !
 May an inward voice direct thee
 Never from the right to stray !
 So may Peace and Health be thine,
 Blessings from a Power divine !

W.

TO CECIL JOHN ALVIN EVELYN

DEAREST Cecil, may good angels guard thee,
 Hovering near thee in their watchful love.
 Smile whilst thou mayest ! and may Heaven award thee
 All the choicest blessings from above !

Sleep on and smile ! too soon must thou awaken
 To the wild tumult of a world of strife,
 But rest thee, rest thee now, unscared, unshaken,
 Unconscious of the pangs, the toils of life.

Honours and wealth, a name renowned in story,
 Are phantom-lights, that glittering pass away.
 Learn thou that genuine happiness, true glory,
 Is never from the path of right to stray.

Be thine the will like a brave knight to bear thee,
 To help the weak, the vicious to repel,
 Still to take heed lest passion sway or snare thee,
 So wilt thou not have lived in vain. Farewell !

ZETA.

March 1905.

CHAPTER IX

JOHN HARCOURT CHICHESTER EVELYN

JOHN HARCOURT CHICHESTER EVELYN, only son of William John Evelyn, was born at Wotton, August 11, 1876. The christening took place on September 14, in Wotton Church. His godparents were Viscount Falmouth, Sir William Harcourt, and his mother's first cousin, the Hon. Anne O'Neill.

The following lines were composed by Martin Tupper for the occasion :—

Blessings on thee, little one—
Wotton's heir and Evelyn's son—
Gladdening all thy lifelong way
Dated from this happy day.

Blessing more than so be given ;
Child of God and heir of Heaven—
Precious babe of many a prayer,
Doubly thus a son and heir.

His first school was at Castlemount, Dover, kept by Doctor Chignell. From there he went to Eton, where he was in Miss Evans' house, and from Eton he went to Christ Church, Oxford, where he finished his education.

In 1897 his mother died, and he soon afterwards left Oxford for good and returned to Wotton.

Towards the latter part of 1899 the Boer War broke out, and in the following year, at the age of twenty-three, John volunteered, and joined the Imperial Yeomanry as a trooper in the "Duke of Cambridge's Own," which was a company composed of the sons of gentlemen. He left England on March 3, 1900.

The Imperial Yeomanry were defeated at Lindley, where, under Colonel Spragge, the little force of about five hundred—for the most part volunteers—were compelled to surrender to superior numbers after a defence which lasted nearly three days. It subsequently transpired that the force had been led into a trap by the enemy, who, having got possession of the telegraph, sent to Colonel Spragge, advising him to bring his men to Lindley. It purported to come from General Colville, and the Colonel acted on it, only to find, after entering

Lindley, that the place was practically in the hands of the enemy. For three days the little force made a stand, though the enemy were all round the town, and the firing was continuous. Eventually the Boers brought a big gun to their assistance, and it was this that practically clinched the matter. There seemed to be no prospect of assistance, so the white flag was hoisted. The Boers then closed in and took the force prisoners. The men were deprived of their horses, rifles, and ammunition, but on the whole they were well treated. This was on May 31. The surrendered force was taken to Nooitgedacht, a trying march of nearly a month's duration. On the day after leaving Lindley, the guns of Lord Methuen's relieving force could be distinctly heard.

The dreary months of imprisonment at length came to an end on September 13, after lasting four months all but a fortnight. John obtained his liberty owing to the arrival of Lord Roberts' force. The majority of John's comrades were released at Nooitgedacht, but he himself, with the rest of the "Duke of Cambridge's Own," was removed to Barberton, the Boers looking upon each of them as holding an equal position to an officer. It was at Barberton where he eventually received his release. The following is an extract from a letter which he wrote on November 7, from Cape Town :—

"I will now give you a short account of the fighting at Lindley, but I am sorry you did not get the letter I wrote a short time afterwards, as of course I put down details. We rode from Bloemfontein to Kronstadt, and thence to Lindley, where we arrived about two o'clock one day. We expected to find Colville there, but it turned out to be unoccupied, and we were waiting about the place, the Colonel interviewing the Landrost, etc., when we heard firing over hill. It was our pickets being attacked. Some men were then posted behind a wall, and when the Boers began firing upon us, they returned the fire. I was a spectator at this time and not under fire. After a while we retired from the town, about one man being wounded. As we retired, we were under fire all the time. After some hours' time the Boers stopped and let us alone. That night we went up a hill outside the town and occupied it, taking the guns up to the top. Next day we

were under fire all day. I have got our losses written down somewhere, so won't put them here. The Colt gun was sent out some distance to keep some Boers back. I went out with it. We had rather a hot time. So things went on, and we expected to be relieved. On Thursday the Boers brought up big guns, and their numbers had much increased. We had a hot time of it. In the afternoon they captured two kopjes which commanded our main position, and on which we had a few men. Then it was all up, as they fired down upon us a tremendous fire, and we were ordered to lie down behind the wall (we were in an enclosure with a stone wall round it). After a bit the white flag went up and we surrendered."

John broke his journey home by a stay of some weeks at Rome, during the last fortnight of which he was joined by his two eldest sisters. In a letter which he wrote from Rome he says:

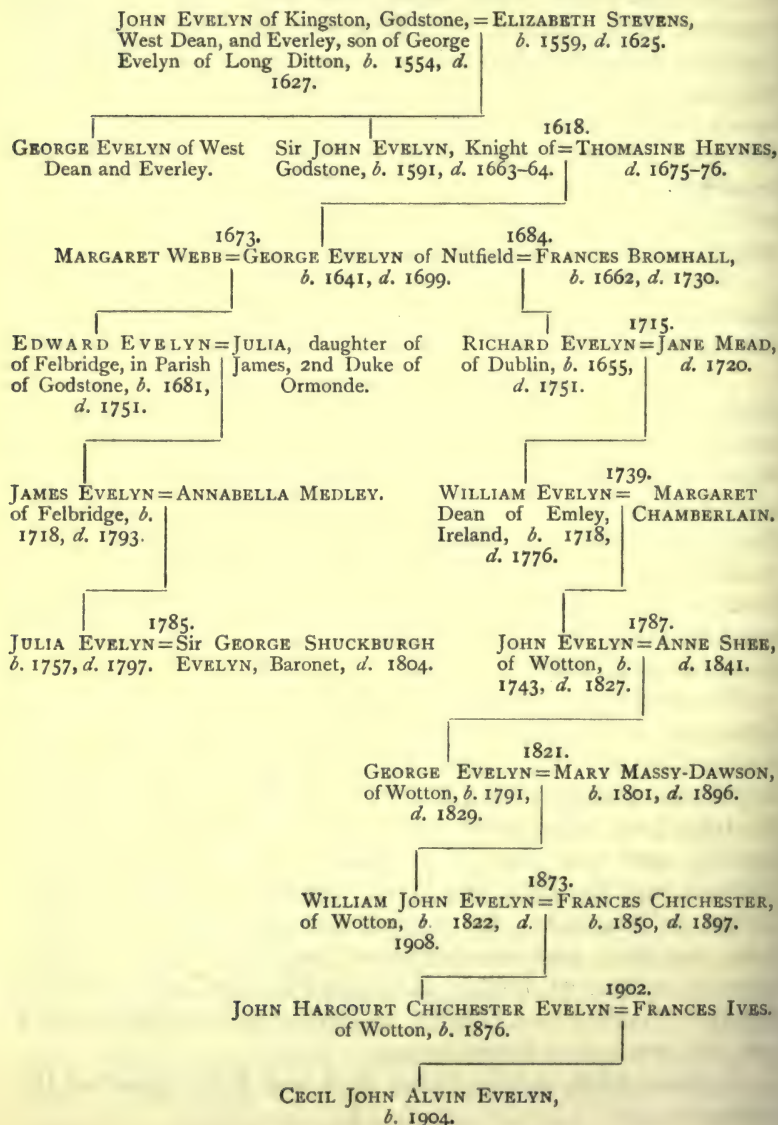
"I read Colville's defence, and it seemed to me rather a good one. He seems only now to have heard of the telegram which Spragge received at Kronstadt, purporting to come from him. We knew about that at the time, and shortly after our capture, I remember hearing that it was probably really a Boer one, so it's funny this only coming out now."

He arrived back in England on February 16, 1901, after nearly a year's absence. On his arrival at Wotton he received a hearty reception from the tenants, who presented him with an illuminated address.

The next important event in his life was his marriage, which took place on January 27, 1902, at St. Mark's Church, North Audley Street. The bride was Miss Frances Edith Ives, fourth and youngest daughter of Major-General Cecil Robert St. John Ives, who at one time commanded the Royal Horse Guards, and was also Silver Stick in Waiting to Queen Victoria, and the Hon. Mrs. Ives, daughter of the 4th Baron Talbot de Malahide. On August 25, 1904, their first child, a son, was born, and was christened Cecil John Alvin. Subsequently, on May 30, 1907, a daughter was born and christened Susanna Frances, and thirdly, on December 28, 1909, another son, who was called Peter George.

In June 1908, John's father died and John inherited the property.

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYNS OF GODSTONE AND LATER OF WOTTON



PART V

THE EVELYNS OF WEST DEAN AND EVERLEY IN WILTSHIRE

THE manor and advowson of West Dean was purchased by John Evelyn of Kingston early in the seventeenth century, and the manor of Everley from Sir Ralph Sadler. John Evelyn, who was the ancestor of the present Evelyns of Wotton, and who has been described in another part of this book, died at West Dean, April 17, 1627, aged seventy-three, and was buried there May 21, 1627, in the chancel of the parish church, where there is a fine monument to his memory.

GEORGE EVELYN OF EVERLEY AND WEST DEAN

George Evelyn of Everley and West Dean, the eldest son of John Evelyn, was baptized at Kingston, August 20, 1581. He was one of the six Clerks in Chancery, and a Justice of the Peace in Wiltshire. He died January 19, 1636, at Everley. His body was conveyed from there to his house in West Dean, and buried in the chancel of West Dean Church. The funeral sermon was preached at West Dean by Doctor Matthew Nicholas, the incumbent of Winterbourne. Doctor Nicholas was the son of John Nicholas of Wilts, and brother to Edward Nicholas, the secretary of Charles I. He wrote ¹ to his brother Edward, March 10, 1621, to tell him that he had been inducted in the living at Winterbourne. "On Friday last I was inducted by Mr. Sprat; Mr. Evelyn and that whole house seemed to be very glad of the change, to whome I am and shall ever acknowledge my selfe much bounde for their love; to-morrow I am to returne thither againe to reade the Articles of the Church." From St.

¹ Dom. S. P., James I, vol. 120, No. 12.

Edmund's Hall, Oxford, he wrote ¹ May 14, 1621, "that he hopes Mr. Evelyn will allow him his diet for teaching his younger son (Arthur). He has taken lodgings at Dean for £4 a year, which is too much for them." Later on, July 17, he says that "he is sorry old Evelyn hastens to Dean, as he is not ready to entertain him. He cannot study thereso well as at Oxford, and has only sermons that will last four or six weeks."

THE PETITION OF GEORGE EVELYN ²

JAN. 15, 1634

"TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LORDS OF HIS MA^{TIES}
PRIVY COUNCELL

*"The humble peticon of George Evelyn, one of the Clarkes of
his Ma^{ties} Court of Chancery*

"Most humbly sheweth,—That your suppliant on Saterday last 10 jan. neere 40 myles from London, was served with proces to heare judgment on Monday next 19 Jan. in his Ma^{ties} high Court of Starre chamber in a cause there prosecuted against him by his Ma^{ties} Attorney generall for supposed exaccons in his Office, albeit your said suppliant (as he humbly conceaveth never receaved or tooke any greater fee for any busines whatsoever then hath been constantly taken and receaved in his office by his predecessors tyme out of mynd.

"That hee now findes that Mr. Herbert the Quernes Ma^{ties} Attorney who was formerly of his Councill, and best instructed in his cause, in regard of some late relacon to his Ma^{ties} service, can noe longer contynue to bee of Councill against his Majesty.

"And Mr. Recorder, one other of his chiefest counsell, being to attend the Sessions for London on friday and Saterdag, cannott possibly bee instructed soe fully as the cause requireth.

"Nowe forasmuch as your humble suppliant may suffer much both in his fortunes and reputacon by the shortnes of tyme and the accidents aforesaid, unles hee bee releaved herein by your Lordshipps accustomed goodnes,

¹ *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

² Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 282, p. 53.

"Hee therefore most humbly beseecheth your good Lordshipps to bee pleased to put off the cause from hearing on Monday next, that your said suppliant may have such further tyme to prepare and instruct his Councell, as to your honorable Lordshipps shall seeme reasonable.

"And your humble suppliant (as by duty hee is bound) shall daylie pray for your good Lordshipps health and happiness."

(Unsigned)

In a letter ¹ written to Secretary Coke, January 25, 1636, Dr. Nicholas writes :

"Mr. Geo. Evelin, one of the six Clerks dyed on Tuesday last and Mr. Cusar is sworn in his place according to the last grant made by His Ma^{tie} to the 6 clerks." On February 7 he writes in a letter ² to his brother : "The funerall for my patron is set on to-morrow fortnight. I must straine to doe him the best honour I can and I thanke God I have memorable thinges to speake of his liberality to the church and poore ; God only is the judge of inwarde intentions to whome I shall leave the censure of his sincerity."

LETTER FROM DR. M. NICHOLAS TO HIS BROTHER EDWARD
RESPECTING THE DEATHBED OF GEORGE EVELYN ³

"Jan. 25, 1635-6.

"GOOD BROTHER,—I had written unto you the last weeke but that I was surprized by a messenger from Everly to goe visit Mr. Evelyn with all haste in his extremity w^{ch} made me choose to intermit my respect unto you rather than loose the opportunity of doinge my last office unto him from whome I had received the foundation of that small fortune wherewth God had blessed me ; but notwithstanding the best speede I could make I came short to administer such comfort as I intended unto his partinge soul, for his memory fayled him before I could be wth him and soe did his speech for any matter

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I., vol. 61, pp. 147, 291.

² *Ibid.*, Charles I., vol. 418, pp. 215, 313.

³ *Ibid.*, Charles I.

of pfect understandinge. He only called upon his sonne John and held his eare to his mouth as if he had somewhat to say but could not bringe forth any worde to be understoode. I could only pray for him and when I had soe done beinge asked whether he heard me he answered that he did and thanked me for my paines ; this was more than he had spoken that morninge beinge Monday and all that he was heard to mutter afterwards was no more than sometimes to call on his sonne John. Yet it was Tuesday night before he died his disease w^{ch} was a Lethargy held him from Thursday nigh untill that time wth a little intermission on Friday, but we could not discerne his paines to be violent, he went away as in a sleepe w^{thout} struglinge at all. There is no will of his to be founde ; some reasons are given of that neglect from the condition of his estates w^{ch} he intended to have settled this next terme if God had given him life, and then to have disposed of it accordinge to his owne will, w^{ch} yet he did soe well express unto his Sonne and wife in his lifetime as there is not likely to growe any difference in his family for that want. His debts I heare are high at the least £7000 w^{ch} Sir John Evelyn hath undertaken to pay being allowed by his mother to sue such letters of administration. He will dy seased of about twenty hundred pounds per ann. in land and lease whereof Mrs. Evelyn will have in joynture £400 and Mr. Arthur £300 lands settled uppon him as soone as he shall marry besides the reversion of his office. The rest comes to Sir John Evelyn with all his stock and goods but burthened wth his debts. The body is allready layd in earth privately but the solemnity of his funerall is deferred untill towards the ende of the terme that his kindred and frendes may have the opportunity to be present at it. My cousen Betty was doubtfull that Mrs. Evelyn intending to have a private wedding would have eased herself of the charge of her, but I doe not discerne any such intention . . . nor can I see how she can be w^{thout} her or one of her condicon. I have advised her to . . . by . . . fayre way to continue wth her because her business will now be lese and her hopes of reward . . . and if she finde Mrs. Evelyn inclined to put her off I have promised her my assistance in a way w^{ch} I presume will be

effectual for her stay. She hath gotten good grounde in Mrs. Evelyn's opinion of late and if she continue in her service untill her death w^{ch} every man thought would have ben before Mr. Evelyn's it is likely she will leave her some good remembrance.

“ The peice of lande and copices of w^{ch} my father wrote lately to you are the same (it seems by ye description) w^{ch} I gave you notice of before, but they are not yet at sale. If I be well dealt wth all I had a promise by Robert Web (from him that is Mr. Hurst's agent and shall sell it if it be sold) that I should have the first notice of his M^{rs}. intant and the first perticular that should be given to any, and if my father come by any I presume it is by the same hands. The younge man that possesseth the estate is noe goode husbände and therefore men thinke he will sell but as longe as he can supply his expenses by cuttinge of wood and felling of copices (w^{ch} he may doe for a yeare or two more) give eare unto a notion of sellinge but I will be further inquisitive uppon this intimation w^{ch} I have by you. I wish the purchase may answere the report my father hath made unto me but I assure you I concerne not soe well of it by the relation I had from Robert Web and I wish I should have a particular before you buy, w^{ch} when you name, I shall be able to pcure an estimate of the rates for such as are acquainted wth the grounde and I will do you the best and fayfullest service I can in both. I am sorry you are so soon bereaved of your associate but God be prayesd your ability is such you shall want only the comfort of his company not his assistance in y^r employment. I wish my Lord Cottington all honour and contentment wth his greate office but envy not his greatness. If there were not a reward in Heaven for fidelity in the discharge of these greate employments I should thinke all that men gaine in them on earth to be no meane a recompence of their trouble. I am sorry to heare of the continuance . . . my cosen Huntons weakness and would gladly . . . then pray for her comfort if I knewe the . . . heard any change of my cosens hard fare at schoole either from them or any other, nor had I cause to suspect it for I never sawe children (looke [erased]) of a cleerer complexion then they were when I saw them and

that colour usually shows health w^{ch} if it be an effect of their fare I could not wish it amended, my wife is my witnes that I observed and told her how lively they looked especially my cosen Ned whose complexion was never perfectly restored to him in my eie since his ague in Chamell Roe untill now. My cosens are returned to schoole too soone for me to deliver your tokens unto them for their encouragement w^{ch} I would gladly have done because I beleave they deserve them but you shall save nothings by your untimely sendinge me this commission they shall have them wth the best addition I can make by my counsayl. Your god sonne is growne learned beyonde his mothers ability to teach him. He can now tell you how many parts of speech there are and I thanke God I finde ability enough in him to be a scholler if he sets his minde to it but I take the paines wth him myselfe because I am willinge to save that charge, but if I knewe where to dispose of him unto the like care I would willingly bear the cost to save my trouble howsoever his mother thinks him of too infirme constitution to be long out of her eie: George can get noe ground of your god sonne though he have the advantage of age and when Ned sets himselfe to his business he can leave his brother behinde but a more cowardly and lazy wit did I never meete wth that could doe so much when it list. It is time for me to thinke you have somethinge else to doe then reade my letters. My wife sayes I have written enough for us both but gives me commission to present her best love and respect with my owne and I entreate you to accept of both unto my sister and y^rselfe and assurance that I am

“ Y^r faythfully lovinge brother,

MAT. NICHOLAS.

“ WEST DEANE,
Jan. 25, 1635.

“ I shall not write by the carrier because of this better opportunity to sende to you.”

(*Endorsed.*)

To the right worth his worthy brother Edwarde Nicholas Esq. at his house in King streete neere the Axyarde in Westminster.

Give these.

LETTER FROM DR. M. NICHOLAS TO HIS BROTHER¹*"February 15, 1635-6.*

"GOOD BROTHER,—This comes to you by an handle w^{ch} I could not let goe empty of some testimony of my respect for you, or else I should not have troubled at a time when I have not myselfe much liberty. I thought that the company w^{ch} goe from Winterbourne would have bin with you 'ere this, but my intelligence fayled me. I have not bin at Winterbourne since Christmas, but they are (God be prayesd) all well and merry. It seemes all thinges goe well wth them or else they have put off the care of all unto some other harts, for they can spend whole nights at daunce (as this bearer can tell you) and nowe there is a joviall meetinge intended by the way as well for such as accompany the travaylers, as such as come from London to make up the melody. I hope our Job is at prayers whilst his daughters keepe their revels, for such mirth is seldome wthout some madnes, and we have at hand such an instance of God's dashings of excessive pleasure with extreme sadnes, in the death of Mr. Evelyn at Everly, as I am in feare of the like judgment wheresoever I see the like occasion. On Munday next is the day of solemnizinge Mr. Evelyn's funerall, for whose mourninge my father hath blacks this day sent him. If when that is passed you have any direction for me, either in the purchase of that bargaine of Parly or any other busines wherein I may shewe my respect to you, thinke of me as you will untill you have made tryall how really I am

"Y^r faythfully lovinge brother,

MAT. NICHOLAS.

"WEST DEANE, *February 15, 1635.*

"I pray present my best love and respect unto my kinde sister as my wife doth to you both in hast."

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN

George Evelyn had four children, three sons and a daughter, viz. Sir John Evelyn of Everley and West Dean, of whom presently.

¹ Dom. S. P.

GEORGE EVELYN, second son, died young. Buried at West Dean, January 21, 1635.

ARTHUR EVELYN,¹ third son, was born in 1613. He was educated at St. Edmund's College, Oxford ; he was a member of Hampden's Committee appointed by Parliament, June 15, 1644, for levying upon Papists, etc. ; he was an officer in Cromwell's army ; he was appointed Governor of Wallingford Castle in 1650. The castle was ordered to be demolished in 1652 under the supervision of Major Arthur Evelyn. Major Evelyn married, at St. Bride's, London, May 17, 1638, Ann Harrington, sister to Lady Acton (or Ashton) and James Harrington. The two sisters sent in a petition, February 14, 1662, stating that their brother James "has been eleven weeks prisoner in the Tower," and they ask "for permission to themselves and his tenants to have access to him, as the tenants refuse to pay his rent unless they see him sign acquittances. The fortunes of the petitioners since the death of their mother, Lady Harrington, depending chiefly on him, they are in danger of ruin. A licence was given to Mrs. Evelyn, Lady Acton (or Ashton) and a physician to see Mr. Harrington in the Tower, and for the tenants to see him sign acquittances."

In 1636 a petition² was presented of "Arthur Evelyn, son of George Evelyn, dec^d, late one of the six clerks in Chancery to the King. Petitioner's father, for £2500 paid to His Majesty, obtained a grant of the reversion of the said office to petitioner after the death of his father and Mr. Cæsar. Petitioner's father being confident that petitioner would enjoy the said office, charged him with the payment of £2000 towards discharging his debts, for which sum petitioner has entered into a bond to his oldest brother, administrator to his father. The contract growing a more advantageous bargain to petitioner than he expected by reason of the sudden death of Mr. Cæsar, he has tendered to His Majesty, by Sir Dudley Diggs, Master of the Rolls, £3000, which he desired the King to accept and prays him to declare his assent (as he lately did in Mr. Burgh's case)

¹ Chan. Pro. before 1714, Reynardson, 21/39.

² See *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

to the Lord Keeper and the Master of the Rolls, for petitioner's admission to the said office."

Major Evelyn died before 1674. His wife was living in February 1662.

"To

MAJOR EVELIN, Gov of Wallingford Castle.¹

"SIR,—There are several Brasse Ordnance wthin the Guarrison of Wallingford w^{ch} may be spared for supplying of the Navy Wee therefore desire you to deliver unto Comisary John Phipps or to whom he shall appoint to receive them all the brasse Guns w^h their Equipage moulded upon the lyne or w^{thin} the Guarrison to bee by him brought up to the Tower of London for the abovesaid service.

"WHITEHALL, 16th March 1651."

PRESIDENT WHITELOCK TO MAJOR EVELYN ²

"To MAIOR ARTHUR EVELYN.

"S^r,—The Councill being informed of the intention of the Enemyes of this Comonwealth to endeavo^r the disturbance of the peace thereof, and of their preparation in order thereunto, have by the last post sent their Letter directed unto you to call that Troop together in the most convenient place in the County of Berks for the preservation of the publique peace that was formerly comaunded by Captaine Thornehill. And that for the present in this tyme of eminent danger and untill the Councells further order the Councill doe hereby appoint you to take charge and command of that Troop. And endeavour to modell the same in such manner that both Officers and Souldiers may be qualified according to the qualifications declared by the Parlam^t for persons to be employed in publique service. And if any of the Officers of the said Troop be not soe qualified you are desired to remove them from their Comands and to nominate such other to the Councill for the haveing of Comissions from them, as doe agree wth the said qualifications. The Counsell doe also

¹ Dom. S. P., Interregnum, vol. i. 97, p. 215.

² *Ibid.* vol. i. 98, p. 29.

hereby authorize you to lead, conduct and comand the said Troop as there shall be occasion, for the preservation of the publique peace, and doe require all other the Officers and Souldiers of the said Troop to obey you as their Captayne, and yourselfe to observe such directions as are already, or herewth shall be hereafter given by the Parliam^t or the Councell of State. And to obey the Superior Officers of the Army according to the discipline of warr in pursuance of the trust reposed in you and of your duty to the Parlam^t and Comonwealth.

“ Signed etc.,

B. WHITELOCK, *prest.*

“ WHITEHALL, 13 July 1659.”

PRESIDENT JOHNSON TO MAJOR EVELYN ¹

“ For MAJOR ARTHUR EVELYN, Captain of the Militia Troop in the County of Berks.

“ S^r,—The Councell being informed by yours to them of the 22nd instant of the condition of the Militia Troop for which they gave you a Comission to Comand in the County of Berks, they have determind to keep up that Troup for the space of fourteene dayes and noe longer, unlesse you finde extraordinary Cause for soe doeing, and for that tyme to make an allowance to pay to the Officers and Souldiers therein. You are therefore desired to muster and send up a list of such Officers and Souldiers as have appeared, and been in actuall service, and thereupon a warrant will be given for their paym^t accordingly.

“ Signed etc.,

H. JOHNSON.

“ WHITEHALL, July 23, 1659.”

PRESIDENT WHITELOCK TO MAJOR EVELYN ²

“ For MAJOR EVELYN att Reading.

“ SIR,—Your letter wherein the examination of John Keats was inclosed hath been read to the Councell and they

¹ Dom. S. P., Interregnum, vol. i. 98, p. 32.

² *Ibid.*, vol. i. 98, p. 78.

doe very well approve of what you have done as to the said Keats and doe give you liberty to discharge him from his imprisonment if you think fitt. There is one mistake in his relation ; Coll. Willm Legg there said to be with other genll. is in the Tower. Letters are received from severall parts givinge the Councell notice of the Enemyes appearing but not abiding anywhere save in Cheshire and Lancashire, severall of them are taken in many places. There have been noe letters out of Cheshire by this post but three messingers from those parts yesterday and this day that give an account of the Enemyes being neere Chester, when they came away supposed to be about ffive hundred that about three hundred horse of volunteeres in Leicestershire are already watching resist them, and soe severall Troopes of the Army have like orders sent to them. The Councill have ordered a warrant to be sent to your Troope for £200 and assigned upon the Receiver Genll. of Berks from whome you may borrow soe much money if there bee necessity for it before your warrant comes to your hands.

“ Signed etc.,

B. WHITELOCK, *President.*

“ WHITEHALL, *August 5th, 1659.*”

ELIZABETH EVELYN, only daughter of George Evelyn. Married at West Dean, December 14, 1624, John Tyrell of Springfield, in Essex, afterwards Sir John Tyrell ; he was son of Sir John Tyrell, and was knighted in the life of his father. She was buried at West Dean, February 8, 1629–30, having had an only daughter, Elizabeth Tyrell, who was baptized at West Dean, November 2, 1629.

SIR JOHN EVELYN OF WEST DEAN AND EVERLEY, KNT.¹

SIR JOHN EVELYN, Knight, eldest son of George Evelyn, was baptized at Kingston, August 20, 1601 ; he was M.P. for

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 48, p. 16 ; Chan. Pro. before 1714, Brydges, 399/103 ; *ibid.* before 1714, Brydges, 399/102 ; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 76/12 ; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 27/58 ; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 24/64 ; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 17/46 ; *ibid.*, Reynardson, 28/69 ; *The Evelyn Family*, by C. G. S. Foljambe.

Wilton 1625–26, Ludgershall 1640–42, and for Totnes in 1655; he was Governor of Wallingford in 1646. He was a distinguished Parliamentary leader, and was proclaimed a traitor by Charles I and pardoned by Charles II. He was presented to West Dean Rectory in 1661, 1672, 1682; he died June 26, 1685, aged eighty-four. He was buried in the South Chancel of West Dean Church, June 26, 1685. He left all he possessed to his daughter, Mrs. Pierrepont, and disinherited his other surviving daughter, Viscountess Castleton. He married Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Robert Cokes of London, Esq., at St. Bride's Church, London, April 2, 1622. She was buried at St. Mary Woolchurch-Haw, May 10, 1658.

The following quotations are from Evelyn's *Diary*, July 2, 1649:—

“I went from Wotton to Godstone (the residence of Sir John Evelyn), where was also Sir John Evelyn of Wilts, when I took leave of both Sir Johns and their ladys. Mem. the prodigious memory of Sir John of Wilts' daughter since married to Mr. W. Pierrepont, and mother of the present Earle of Kingston. I returned to Says Court this night.

“*June 6, 1687.*—I visited my Lady Pierpoint, daughter to Sir John Evelyn, of Deane, now widow of Mr. Pierpoint, and mother of the Earl of Kingston. She was now engag'd in the marriage of my cousin Evelyn Pierpoint, her second son.”

Doctor Nicholas writes in a letter¹ to his brother dated February 20, 1636–37: “My mother is heere at this time beinge sent for by the Lady Evelyn who havinge miscarried of a child about three weeks since, hath continued weake ever since and is as at present in sume daunger of her life.”

Farther on in the same letter he writes:

“My wife growes very heavy and beinge this day tyred with entertainement at home and visitation of the Lady Evelyn abroad, entreates my sister to accept of her best thanks in answer of her letter and acknowledgment of her kinde love in the medecins she hath sent.”

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 65, pp. 445, 347.

LETTER FROM DOCTOR NICHOLAS TO HIS BROTHER, WRITTEN
APRIL 4, 1637¹

“GOOD BROTHER,—I receaved no letter from you this weeke but were I secured of your health and mysisters I should more contentedly leave any other cause, and were it the tediousnes of my letter that oppressed you with a suddaine answere I should account the case you gave your selfe a courtesie unto me, I have spoken with Mrs. Evelyn since I last wrote unto you, and enquired of her the cause which moved her to displace my cosen Hunton. She told me much according to what she had sayd unto my cosin Hunton with the addition that she had respect in it as well unto her good as to her owne convenience, for havinge nowe noe employment for her but her needle she founde that sittinge still at her worke made her sickly and therefore thought she might doe better in another service where she might have the orderinge of an huswifely charge, for which (she told me) she had made her very able. I expressed myselfe tender of the disgrace which would ly uppon my cosin in being displaced in such a manner by warninge given, whereof whatsoever were the cause it would be imagined by all that knowe it not, to be in her ill carriage, and wished she had done me that favour as to have acquainted me with her intents in such time as I might have taken some excuse to have disposed of her before it had bin knowne that she was to leave her ; she stuttered it over with a slight excuse that she had acquainted my wife, which was not done, but the day before my wife fell in travayl, and the warninge was given my cosin Hunton within a fortnight after, but for my satisfaction she told me that she would be as mindfull of her when God should call her as if she were with her, and in testimony of her good likinge of her service she would allow her forty shillinges yearly towards her maintenance as long as her selfe should live. I am soe well acquainted with what she hath as yet disposed to her by will, and soe little value forty shillings to my cosin Huntons credit, as I gave her noe thanks. Mr. Downes I heare is sent for home by his father with an intent to keepe him with him,

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 29, pp. 555, 352.

but I doe imagine that when my cosin Hunton shall be other where disposed of he shall returne, for my conceit is strange that the feare of his beinge matched to his disadvantage, who was placed with Mr. Evelyn in youth to be bred for his preferment, hath caused this alteration, howsoever there be noe worde made of it. I confess that when I have bin told of the good will that was observed betweene my cosin Hunton and Mr. Downes, I did put it by with my cosin Huntons protestation to the contrary, and was willinge by that neglect to have suffered it to have come to pass (if it might have bin) because I thought it would have bin to her advantage, but now that the busines is come to this issue (as whatsoever is pretended I am confident this is the cause of my cosens partinge) I begin to question my discretion and to doubt that I may be misinterpreted for a neglect of her good in that course which I tooke to effect it. Good brother let me have your advice what to doe in this busines, whether to entreate Mrs. Evelyn for her farther stay or to search the report of Mr. Downes his affection, or what to doe which may be for her supposed advantage, for I will refuse nothinge that is in my power that I shall knowe to be for her good. I came yesterday from your true frende and my noble patron Mr. Ashbyrnham by whose free favour I am sensible howe much you owne me. I performed the divine service of the Sunday at Wherwell in my hood and surplice which were taken among certaine refractory men for the markes of the beast, and my callinge upon the comunicants to come up in to the chancell to receave, drave many out of the church. I did not thinke there had bin a congregation in Hamshire soe refractory to good order but the fault is in the Vicar, who doth not only himselfe connive at their unconformity, but is himselfe so inclined, howsoever he make a shewe to the contrary. My Mother God be prayed goes abroade again, and my sister Kate is with me. My wife presents her best love and respect with mine unto my sister and your selfe, and I desire that I may have ever the credit to be esteemed as I have the thankfull hart to be

“ Your truly lovinge brother,

MAT. NICHOLAS.

“WEST DEANE, *April 4, 1637.*”

LETTER FROM DR. M. NICHOLAS TO HIS BROTHER¹

"Sept 15, 1639.

"GOOD BROTHER,—I received yours of the 13th of this instant moneth, and (accordinge as I was directed) have endeavoured to procure leave to put off my parsonage of West Deane to one of the Prebendarys of Bristol, but have received a flat denyall, whether it be that Sir John Evelyn thinkes that I am in necessity voydinge it or that he hath made a promise to a kinds-man of his name (as I rather imagine) to succede me I cannot tell, but his answere is only that the contentment of his livinge . . . will depende much on the society of the parson and therefore he is unwillinge to make a change but of his owne choyse. This adds unto the unhappines for Barkly in the exchange whereof I have tendered to diverse the loss of forty yea fifty pounds yearly and cannot be accepted. I thinke that I may phayle for Wherwell at the last but the Vicar himselve valued that at £80 by the yeare and I knowe there are three cures to it w^{ch} when they are served and payed the remainder will be very small. The thing I would gladly move for is that I might have Oldston which is lately fallen into o^r gift, that will afford me six moneths more liberty and if I cannot prevaile for an exchange in that time it is seven miles nearer to my parsonage of Deane than Barkly and of better accomodacon to my Deanery, which may be some more reasonable motive to clame a dispensasion at least for a fewe yeares, in case I cannot effect in six moneths a convenient change. If this might be effected I would contentedly confer Barkly as the chapter shall thinke fit, and I have in this enclosed made a sute unto his Grace to that effect, but I am doubtful whether it may not give offence and therefore have adventured to ye hand desiringe yr favour to dispose of it as you conceave it to make best for the advantage of

"Yr truly lovinge brother,

MAT. NICHOLAS.

"THE CLOSE OF SALISBURY,
September 15, 1639."

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 428, p. 91.

SERGEANT BROWNE TO SIR JOHN EVELYN ¹

"Dec. 4, 1661.

"HONERD SIR,—Mr. Christopher hath beene wth me this morneing and doth extremely disclaime against you for takeing uppon you to dispose of his estate w^{ch} as he saith was made over to you but in trust. He doth very earnestly desire me not to take any leese of you for it will make a breach betweene him and I shall never (enjoy the stable) it being made over before it was made to you. He tells me that you are twenty thousand pounds in debt and that he is born with you for £3000 of it as I take it. But which is worst of all, in September last at Sir John Wrayes house in Lincolnes Inne feilds you spake very dangerous words w^{ch} he saith he hath complained of and that you will be charged wth a Constable and doubtles not but you will be comitted to the Tower, and that it will be your undoeing. I gott him to give me a copy of the words and they are as followeth viz. that the old king was an arrant jugler and loved dissembleing as his life and that he was altogether false in his dealings and that the Parliaments warre against the King was just by the law of God and man. And that if occasion offered you would sett in Councell and doe as you then did. And that this King was an idle ignorant man mindinge his pleasure more than his business at the Councell and that you had as lieve kisse a sowes . . . as goe to Whitehall to kisse the Kinges hand. Sir I thought it fitt to acquaint you with these passages and leave them to your consideration, but if the words be true you shall excuse me for not subscribing myself your humble servant

"THO. BROWNE."

"TO THE KINGS MOST EXCELLENT MA^{TIE}," ²*The humble peticon of S^r John Evelyn Knight*

Sheweth,—That it appeareing by Inquisicōn duely taken and returned into your Ma^{ties} high Court of Chancery (A copy whereof is hereunto annexed) That it will not bee to

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles II, vol. 45.² *Ibid.* vol. 124, p. 150.

ye dammage of your Ma^{tie}, or any of your Subiects if your Mat^y shall grant that your pet^r may enclose, the Comon high way leading from west Tudderley in ye County of Southton to West deane in ye County of Wiltes, and to hold ye same inclosed to him and his heyres, as therein is menco^ñed soe as hee make another way there, in his owne lands as convenient to Passengers.

And ye alteration of ye same way, being much for pet^{rs} Commodity and convenience without preiudice to others

Humbly Prayes

That your Ma^{tie} would be graciously pleased to grant your Pet^r liberty to enclose ye sayd way (leaveing out a new one) in manner as is above-menco^ñed

“And your petr shall ever pray, &c.

(Unsigned).

GRANT TO SIR JOHN EVELYN ¹

JUNE 30, 1665

A graunt unto Sir John Evelyn Knt. of free libtie to enclose and hold enclosed to him and his heires a comon high way in West Deane in ye County of Wilts leading from West Tudderly in ye County of Southton to Whiteparish in ye County of Wilts near a house heretofore called Parsons House and by a lane and pond called Drewspond over a hill to West Deane aforesaid. So as he make another way in his owne land there as convenient to passengers. According to an Inquisition in that behalf late taken and of record in ye Court of Chancery.

P. NICHOLAS.

CHILDREN OF SIR JOHN EVELYN

Sir John Evelyn of West Dean and Everley had one son and four daughters, viz. :

GEORGE EVELYN, only son, born 1636, was baptized at Everley, May 19, 1636. He died in his sixth year, September 6,

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles 1, vol. 97, p. 455.

1641, and was buried in West Dean Church, where there is a brass to his memory.

MARIE EVELYN, eldest daughter, was born in 1638, and baptized at Everley, July 19, 1638. She died an infant.

ELIZABETH EVELYN, second daughter, of whom presently.

ANNE EVELYN, third daughter, was born 1641, and baptized at Everley, December 9, 1641. She died an infant.

SARAH EVELYN, fourth daughter, was married three times. She married firstly Sir John Wray, of Glentworth, 3rd Bart., as his second wife, at West Dean, August 25, 1661, and had one daughter. She married secondly Thomas, 2nd Viscount Fanshawe, of Dromore, K.B., M.P. for Hertford, as his second wife, 1666-67, and had one son and three daughters. She married thirdly George, 5th Viscount Castleton, as his second wife, at Temple Church, February 17, 1675, and had two sons who died in infancy. Her husband's son by his first wife married her daughter, Elizabeth Wray.

Sarah died in 1717.

ELIZABETH EVELYN

Elizabeth Evelyn, second daughter and eventually heiress, born in 1639, was baptized at Everley, November 20, 1639. She married, December 1658, Robert Pierrepont, eldest son of the Hon. William Pierrepont of Thoresby, second son of Robert, 1st Earl of Kingston, by Gertrude, daughter and co-heir of Henry Talbot, third son of George, 6th Earl of Shrewsbury. Elizabeth was executrix of her father's will, November 24, 1685. She died 1698-99. Robert Pierrepont died April 26, 1669, in his thirty-fifth year, and was buried at West Dean.

CHILDREN OF ROBERT AND ELIZABETH PIERREPONT

ROBERT PIERREPONT, 3rd Earl of Kingston, succeeded 1680; he died unmarried in 1682. He succeeded his great-uncle Henry, 2nd Earl of Kingston, Marquis of Dorchester, who died *s.p.*

WILLIAM, 4th Earl of Kingston, died *s.p.* 1690. Married Anne, daughter of Robert, Lord Broke.

EVELYN, 5th Earl of Kingston, was created Duke of Kingston in 1715. He married Lady Mary Fielding, daughter of William, Earl of Denbigh, first wife. He died in 1726. He had one son, William, Earl of Kingston, who died *v.p.* 1713. He married Rachel, daughter of Thomas Baynton, Esq. She died in 1722. He had two children, Evelyn, 2nd Duke of Kingston, who married but died *s.p.* 1773, and Lady Frances Pierrepont, heiress, who married, in 1734, Philip Meadows, Esq., third son of Sir Philip Meadows. She had a son, Charles Meadows, born 1737, who took the name of Pierrepont in 1788 and was created Baron Pierrepont, Viscount Newark in 1796, and Earl Manvers in 1806. He died 1816. He married, in 1774, Anne Orton, daughter of John Mills, Esq., of Richmond, who died 1832.

The following is an extract from Lord Liverpool's book on the Evelyn Family relating to West Dean :—

“The parish of West Dean is partly in Hampshire and partly in Wiltshire. A new parish church was built in 1866 ; but not far away to the north of it, still stands a chantry or aisle of the old church, which has been retained as a mortuary chapel. Both buildings are in Wiltshire, although but a few hundred feet from the country boundary. The mansion house of the Evelyns and Pierreponts, which stood close to the old church, has entirely disappeared. Traces, however, remain of the gardens and ornamental grounds, notably a series of terraces and canals (now dry) in the adjoining meadow. The buildings also in close proximity, at the Church Farm, are the original offices and homestead, and the quaintly buttressed brick barn, some 160 feet long, is certainly suggestive of better days.

“The old churchyard possesses great beauty, being well kept and surrounded by a plantation of beech and other trees of large growth. To the north-east of the yard is a very perfect example of a small circular British camp.

“The old mansion of Everley which was purchased about 1634–35 from the Sadleirs has been burnt down and rebuilt. Nothing remains of the old church which was taken down in 1813.”

In the October number of the *Gentleman's Magazine* for 1826 there is a picture of West Dean House which had recently been taken down, and a short account of it. Evelyn, 1st Duke of Kingston, occasionally resided there, and the house is mentioned (with descriptions of the occupations of the family there) by his celebrated daughter, Lady Mary Wortley Montagu, in her Letters before her marriage. It is supposed, too, that it was from West Dean that she eloped with Mr. Montagu. In the early part of the eighteenth century it was inhabited by Lord Ranelagh, and afterwards by the family of Elwyn, Baronets. Its last tenants were a society of nuns who had fled from Flanders during the Revolution, but they were compelled to remove from the place owing to the rudeness and annoyance of the workmen employed on the intended canal from Salisbury to Southampton. The house and land descended to several individuals of the family of Moore, and after this period it was for many years uninhabited and fell into decay. About 1823 the estate was purchased by Mr. Baring Wall, who immediately dismantled it and sold the materials.

The following is quoted from the *Gentleman's Magazine* :—

“ West Dean House was, according to the fashion of the times, situated very near the parish church (a small unornamented edifice, containing several monuments of the Evelyn family), in a grove of magnificent elms. The eastern front retained its original appearance, but the opposite side had been modernized, and was further adorned with a handsome terrace faced with pillars, and terminated at each extremity with orangeries of elegant proportions and costly decorations. Immediately beyond were the pleasure-grounds of considerable extent, where vestiges of the successive tastes of the different proprietors were till very lately easily discovered.”

THE EVELYNS OF WEST DEAN AND EVERLEY

JOHN EVELYN
of Godstone, Kingston,
West Dean, and Ever-
ley, *d.* 1627.

= ELIZABETH STEVENS.

GEORGE EVELYN
of Everley and West
Dean, *b.* 1581, *d.*
1636-37.

= ELIZABETH RIVERS.

Sir JOHN EVELYN
of Everley and West
Dean, *b.* 1601, *d.* 1685.

= ELIZABETH COCKES.

ELIZABETH EVELYN,
b. 1639, *d.* 1699.

= ROBERT PIERREPONT.

EVELYN, 5th Earl of
Kingston.

= LADY MARY FIELDING.

PART VI

THE EVELYNS OF FELBRIDGE, IN SURREY

EDWARD EVELYN OF FELBRIDGE

EDWARD EVELYN of Heath Hatch and Felbridge, in the parish of Godstone, in Surrey, was the third son of George Evelyn of Nutfield and his second wife, Margaret Webb. He was born in 1681, and baptized at Nutfield, August 18, 1681. He was christened at Godstone, August 26, 1681. He married, in 1713, Julia, daughter of James, 2nd Duke of Ormond. Edward Evelyn died November 20, 1751, and was buried at Godstone, November 28, 1751. His wife died February 19, 1771, and was buried at Godstone. Both their portraits are at Wotton.

CHILDREN OF EDWARD EVELYN

Edward Evelyn had four children, viz. :

A SON, buried at St. Margaret's, Westminster, September 27, 1710.

JAMES EVELYN, of whom presently.

JOHN EVELYN, born May 9, 1725, baptized at St. Margaret's, Westminster, May 14, 1725.

JULIA MARGARET EVELYN, born August 31, 1715, baptized at St. Margaret's, Westminster, September 15, 1715. Married at Chelsea, July 17, 1755, James Sayer, Esq., of Richmond, in Surrey, son of Robert Sayer, Esq., of London. She died November 11, 1777, aged sixty-two, and was buried at Godstone, November 19, 1777. She had two children, Edward Sayer, living 1767, and Frances Julia Sayer, born 1757, living 1767, who married M. de Pougens, and died his widow

near Vauxburn (? Vauxbain), near Soissons, December 31, 1850, aged ninety-three, and was buried at Godstone, January 17, 1851.

JAMES EVELYN OF FELBRIDGE

James Evelyn of Felbridge,¹ LL.D., was born July 17, 1718, and baptized at St. Margaret's, Westminster, August 11, 1718. He married firstly, in 1755, Annabella, daughter of Thomas Medley, Esquire, of Buxted, Friston, and Coneyburrows, all in Sussex (by Annabella, daughter and co-heir of Sir Samuel Dashwood), and sister and in her issue sole heir of George Medley of Buxted, Friston, and Coneyburrows, Esq. As she was born in 1719 she must have been thirty-six when she married. She died three years after the marriage, December 23, 1758, aged forty. She was buried at Godstone, December 31, 1858.

James Evelyn married secondly Jane, daughter of Sir Richard Cust of Belton, in Lincolnshire, and widow of Francis Fane of Fulbeck, in Lincolnshire. The wedding took place May 8, 1761 (? June 8, 1761). She died without surviving issue November 17, 1791.

James Evelyn built the schools and chapel at Felbridge, as well as leaving property for their support. This fund is invested and provides for the maintenance of a weekly "dole" of meat to twelve poor persons resident in the district. It was formerly distributed, in the shape of a dinner, on Sundays to the same number, the meal being provided in the schoolroom. This practice did not work satisfactorily and was discontinued, meat being given instead. James Evelyn died at Felbridge, July 11, 1793, aged seventy-five, and was buried at Godstone, July 18, 1793.

CHILDREN OF JAMES EVELYN

JAMES EVELYN had one daughter by his first wife, viz. :

JULIA ANNABELLA, of whom presently, and one daughter by his second wife, viz. :

ANNE EVELYN, born December 18, 1767, baptized at

¹ Chan. Pro., 1714-1758, Evelyn v. Scawen, 1646; *ibid.*, 1714-1758, Evelyn v. Banks, 1643.

St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, January 23, 1768. She died unmarried in 1790, aged twenty-two, and was buried at Godstone, April 21, 1790.

JULIA ANNABELLA EVELYN

Julia Annabella Evelyn, the only surviving daughter and sole heiress of her father, James Evelyn of Felbridge, and also sole heiress of her uncle, George Medley, Esq., M.P.; of Buxted, Friston, and Coneyburrows, in Sussex, was born January 7, 1757. She married, at St. Margaret's, Westminster, October 6, 1785, Sir George Augustus William Shuckburgh, Bart., of Shuckburgh, in Warwickshire. He succeeded his uncle, Sir Charles Shuckburgh, as 6th Bart., August 10, 1773. He took the additional name and arms of Evelyn in 1794 by Act of Parliament, in accordance with his father-in-law's will; he was M.P. for Warwickshire in four Parliaments, 1780-1804.

Julia died September 14, 1797, aged forty, and was buried at Shuckburgh. Her husband died August 11, 1804, aged fifty-three, and was buried at Shuckburgh. There was only one child of this marriage, a daughter, who was also called Julia, and who was born October 5, 1790. She was sole heiress, and inherited Felbridge, Buxted, Friston, and Coneyburrows. She married the Hon. Charles Cecil Cope Jenkinson of Pitchford Hall, Salop, second son of Charles, 1st Earl of Liverpool. He was M.P. for East Grinstead 1818-28. He became the third Lord Liverpool in 1828, on the death of his brother. He died at Buxted, October 3, 1851, and was buried at Buxted. His wife died at 10 (now 13) Portman Square, London, April 8, 1814, aged twenty-four, and was buried in the family vault at Pitchford, Salop. They left three daughters and co-heiresses, amongst whom the properties were divided. Felbridge fell to the share of the second daughter, Lady Selina, who sold it to G. Gatty in 1855. Lady Selina married twice. She married firstly William Charles, Viscount Milton, eldest son and heir of Charles William, 5th Earl FitzWilliam. She married secondly George Savile Foljambe, Esq., of Osberton, Northamptonshire, and of Aldwark in Yorkshire.

The following description of Felbridge is copied from a book called *East Grinstead and its Environs*, by W. R. Pepper:—

“The house is a fair-sized mansion, built of light-coloured and ornamental bricks, and is of the composite order of architecture. It has a fine terrace, from which a capital view of the country can be obtained. Its grounds contain a number of ornamental trees, several being very fine specimens, notably a *Wellingtonia gigantea*, of about twenty years' growth, and which is some sixty feet in height. There is also a splendid evergreen oak, covering a very large space of ground, also some good specimens of the *Pinus Insignis*, *Picea nobilis glauca*, *Picea nordmanniana*, *Araucaria*, *Cryptomeria japonica*, etc. The Park, as we have stated, is a large one and well-timbered. It contains a monument of stone in the form of a column which is fifty-six feet in height. At the base of the circular column is the representation of a serpent biting its own tail. There was formerly a prevalent idea among the natives that this column was erected to commemorate the slaying of a serpent of monstrous size in the neighbourhood. The Dragon of St. George, or the Sea Serpent of the Marines, were never more strongly believed in than this wonderful reptile, whose image was supposed to be represented at the foot of the monument. But, alas, for human credulity, a gentleman visiting the neighbourhood spoiled the interest in the monument by informing them that the carved stone serpent, with its tail in its mouth, represented Eternity, and set their minds at rest further by translating the Latin inscription on it, which states that it was erected in the year 1786 by James Evelyn, in memory of his father, Edward Evelyn, and that one John Soane was the architect. On the top of the monument is a square block with cap and base, on which is inscribed in large letters, ‘Soli Deo Gloria,’ the whole being surmounted with a sort of Roman altar, with flame. Round the lower part of the column is engraved the whole of Addison's well-known hymn, beginning—

‘When all Thy mercies, O my God,
My rising soul surveys.’

This monument narrowly escaped destruction some time back, it having been struck and somewhat shattered by lightning.”

PART VII

THE EVELYNS OF LONG DITTON

THOMAS EVELYN, of Long Ditton, the eldest son of George Evelyn and Rose Williams, was born in 1551. He possessed lands in Long Ditton, Thames Ditton, Kingston-on-Thames, Tadworth and Maldon,¹ all in Surrey. Like his brothers he was engaged in the manufacture of gunpowder. He married, firstly, Frances, daughter of Sir — Moore, Knight, December 1, 1577. She died ten years later and was buried at Long Ditton, March 14, 1588. Thomas Evelyn married, secondly, Frances, daughter of Henry Harvey of Chessington, Surrey, sister to William Lord Harvey² of Kidbrook. She died in 1649, and was buried at Kingston, September 14, 1649.

CHILDREN OF THOMAS EVELYN

The children of the first wife were :

SIR THOMAS EVELYN of Long Ditton, Surrey, Knight, the eldest son, of whom presently.

JANE EVELYN, the eldest daughter, was born 1583–84, and baptized at Long Ditton, January 2, 1583–84; she married at Long Ditton, February 11, 1604–05, Sir John Bodley of Streatham, Surrey, who was knighted at Coventry, September 4, 1617, and had a daughter who married — Parkes.³

MARY EVELYN, the second daughter, married Otwell Worsley, Esq.

The children of the second wife were :

GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE, Bucks, the second

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles 1, E. 21/15, and Chan. Pro., Charles 1, E. 5/51.

² *Ibid.*, Charles 1, E. 5/51.

³ *Ibid.*, Charles 1, E. 2/31; and Chan. Pro., Charles 1, E. 16/67.

son, was baptized at Long Ditton, September 6, 1593, and married Dudley, daughter of William Bayles.

JOHN EVELYN, the third son, was baptized at Long Ditton, December 14, 1597. He died young.

WILLIAM EVELYN, the fourth son, was baptized at Long Ditton, August 31, 1604. He became a Clerk in Holy Orders. He was buried in the Belfry, near the Round Walk, on the Middle Temple side in the Temple church, June 30, 1652.

ELIZABETH EVELYN, the third daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, March 2, 1589-90. She was married at Long Ditton, February 11, 1604-05, to Henry Constantine of Merly, Dorsetshire, Esq.

DOROTHY EVELYN, the fourth daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, July 19, 1591. She was married at Long Ditton, July 20, 1615, to James Dockwray, Esq., of Co. Cambridge.

FRANCES EVELYN, the fifth daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, March 19, 1594-95. She was married at Long Ditton, February 11, 1615-16 to Edward Ventris of Cambridge.

ROSE EVELYN, the sixth daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, September 12, 1596. She was married at Long Ditton, March 4, 1615-16 to Thomas Keightley of Staffordshire and London. She was living at Kingston in 1648.

KATHERINE EVELYN, the seventh daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, July 5, 1599. She died young, and was buried at Long Ditton, January 21, 1599-1600.

SUSANNAH EVELYN, the ninth daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, December 20, 1601. She married William Christmas of London.

SARAH EVELYN, the tenth daughter, died young, and was buried at Long Ditton, August 12, 1603.

SIR THOMAS EVELYN OF LONG DITTON

SIR THOMAS EVELYN ¹ of Long Ditton, Knight, the eldest son of Thomas Evelyn, was born August 12, 1587, and baptized at Long Ditton, August 20, 1587. He was knighted in Scotland, July 17, 1617. He married Anne, daughter and

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles I, E. 21/15.

heiress of Hugh Gold of London, merchant, by Anne,¹ daughter and heiress of Thomas Nott, Esq. She died, June 25, 1669, and was buried at Long Ditton, July 2, 1669. Sir Thomas Evelyn died at Long Ditton, October 4, 1659, aged seventy-two, and was buried there October 13, 1659. His will was dated October 3, 1659.

THE PETITION OF RICHARD HINDE, MINISTER OF
LONG DITTON²

“TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MOST REVERENT FATHER
IN GOD WILLIAM LO. ARCH. BISHOPP OF CANTERBURY,
HIS GRACE PRIMATE AND METROPOLITAN OF ALL
ENGLAND.

“The humble petition of Richard Hinde, Bachelor in divinity and Minister of the parish Church of Longe Ditton in the County of Surrey.

“In most humble wise shewinge,—That about two yeares and nyne moneths sithence the petitioner was placed by the Lo. Bishopp of the Diones and his Chancelor to officiate there duringe the suspension of Richard Byfield, Clerk, the incumbent, and that your petitioner from tyme to tyme hath received many indignities and much contempt and scorne from Sir Thomas Evelin, Knight, (patron of the said Church) and his Lady and Family; which the petitioner passed over with silence and patience, untill that on Frydaie the 7th of this present July 1637, Your Graces petitioner haveinge reade morninge praier in ye said Church according to the Cannon in yt case provided, that Dame Ann Evelin, wife to the said Sir Th. Evelyn immediately after divine service ended, came out of her seate and usinge some Wordes with an angry Countenance to the parish Clark she turned to ye seate or place of officiating, where ye petitioner still remained and there with a loud voice and disdainfull gesture in ye presence of ye Congregation, did utter and give to ye petitioner these Wordes followinge, You are a base man and a base and unworthy Priest. You have abused mee

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles I, E. 21 / 15.

² Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 101, pp. 342, 364.

basely and your base carriage and usage of mee shall not any longer be endured.

“Whereupon ye petitioner mildly admonished ye said Lady to remember the place where shee was, Yet nevertheless the said Lady contynued in reproachinge your petitioner and others also there present in ye same words, and many other vilifyinge speeches both in ye Church and likewise in the Church yeard, with words soe spoken without any cause or offence then or at any tyme given by ye petitioner and uttered in yt publique manner and sacred place; the petitioner (under your graces correction) taketh to be a greate reproach to his Ministeriall office, a contempt to ye priesthood, and an insufferable indignitie to ye house of God and place of holy Worshipp; and your petitioner deeminge it unfitt to bee silent any longer and not able to prosecute suite for redress therein, Most humbly presents the cause to your Graces protection and most lowly leaves it to your Wisdome and pious Consideration to doe and order a prosecution as in your Graces Judgment shalbe thought fitt.

“And according to his bounden duty the Petitioner shall ever pray for your Grace. I desire Sir John Lamb to peruse this Peticon and take order yt L^{rs} missive be awarded for ye Lady within menconed to answeere this her carryage in ye Church in the H. Comission Court, or put ye petitioner upon any other way that he shall thinke most fitting for his just redress.

“W. CANT.”

THE PETITION OF SIR THOMAS EVELYN OF LONG DITTON¹

“TO THE MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD WILLIAM LORD
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY HIS GRACE PRIMATE OF
ALL ENGLAND AND METROPOLITANE.

*“The humble petition of Sir Thomas Evelyn of Long Ditton
in the County of Surrey, Knight.*

“Humbly sheweth,—That whereas there was lately a
petition preferred to your grace by Mr. Richard Hinde

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 23, pp. 354, 365.

Bachelor in Divinity, wherein he hath suggested that your Petitioner hath offered him many indignities, and that your Petitioner's wife, in the church and churchyard uttered unworthy speeches against him, and thereupon your Grace hath referred the consideration of his petition to the right worshipfull Sir John Lambe, who is either to send out letters missive, or to put the said Mr. Hinde upon some other way that hee shall thinke fittinge for his releife. Soe it is that your Graces now Petitioner hath (by all the meanes he could) endeavoured to grace and encourage the said Mr. Hinde and his Ministry at Ditton aforesaid, not only your Graces Petitioner himselfe, his wife and family being constant hearers of him both at morning and evening prayers, but all soe hath used his authority to others, to incite them to the like duty, and whensoever he had occasion to make use of your Graces Petitioner hee was allwaies ready to supply his wants, till his money cam in. And notwithstanding all w^{ch} (by meanes of some that are not well affected to your Petitioner) hee hath of late gone aboute to disgrace your Petitioner and his wife amonge their neighbours, and gave her ill language in the Church of Ditton, and hath neglected his Duty in the execution of his Ministry there, and otherwise for all of which your Graces now Petitioner is loath to convent him by any suite in Law; in respect that hee is the Curate of his said parish, and may be much impoverished thereby.

“But humbly beseecheth your Grace that without any great expence in Law, Sir John Lambe may heare and determine all busines betweene them, and if your Petitioners wife bee found to have donne him wronge shee shall make satisfaction, and if on the other side Mr. Hinde hath misbehaved himselfe, your Petitioner doubteth not but upon the admonition of Sir John Lambe hee wilbe reformed and your Petitioner will ever pray for your Grace his health and hapines.”

“I thinke ye Prayer of this Peticon modest and reasonable, and therefore I desire Sir John Lambe to take it into consideration together with Mr. Hindes Peticon, and sometime in Michaelmas terme to appoint a tyme to heare all differences privately and make a peaceable end if he can, or give me an

account what he findes, yt some further course may be taken according to justice.

“ W. CANT.”

August 5th, 1637.

(Endorsed.)

Sir John Evelins petition to Archbishop of Canterbury.

PETITION OF RICHARD BYFIELD, MINISTER OF LONG
DITTON, RECEIVED APRIL 14, 1657¹

“ TO THE MOST ILLUSTRIOUS HIS HIGHNES, THE LD PROTECTOR
OF THE COMMONWEALTH OF ENGLAND ETC. AND TO HIS
MOST HONORABLE COUNCILL.

*“ The humble petition of Richard Byfield minister of Long
Ditton in ye county of Surrey and of other godly inhabitants
there.*

“ Humbly sheweth—That there was a Briefe granted, laied
and collected in ye citty of London and in sixe Counties in the
yeres 1641 and 1642 for the building of the parish church of
Long Ditton in the County of Surrey ; and certaine of the
moneyes are remaining in the hands of Sir Thomas Evelyn for
this 12 yeres past, or thereabout, and no account was ever
given of such collections and summes of moneys to the parish.
And since that tyme (no care being taken for the upholding of
the said edifice) it fell downe in ye begining of July last full
seven yeres agoe ; and so continueth to the further great
spoyling of the materialls and to ye ruine of the chancel by
wind and weather so long lying open and exposed. During
which space of tyme the said Richard Byfield hath greatly
suffered in the worke of his ministry towards the flocke com-
mitted to him ; the particulers whereof are somewhat ex-
pressed in a petition lately presented to his Highnes. And
now, although through his Highnes Grace and favor he hath
the publique meeting place of Thames Ditton, untill that of
Long Ditton be reedified, yet he greatly suffereth in his
ministerial work by the siding with a prelatie minister en-
tertained as household chaplaine by Sir Thomas Evelyn, and
by ye concourse of all of both parishes who are potent and

¹ Dom. S. P., Interregnum, vol. 155, p. 44.

against the power of godlines, and of many such from Kingston; which concourse continueth ever since his Highnes graciously gave his holy and meltinge advice; and now we represent it because we are tender of ye good of ye Civill State, not knowinge of what ill consequence such meeting may be, considering ye present tymes and juncture of things, and that ye prelatieall party is ye most numerous, dissatisfied, closely working, though complying.

“Wherefore your petitioners pray your Highnes and your honorable Council, yt expresse order be given for ye present speedy building of ye Church of Long Ditton, and for ye giving an account of all things pertaining to ye brief moneyes and to ye materials of ye Church carried away, and for ye laying of a Land rate for such moneyes as are further necessary thereunto. And for ye better effecting hereof your Highnes with your honorable Council would be pleased to empower Mr. Shadrack Brice, Justice of Peace, and Mr. Obadiah Weekes, both inhabitants in Kingston, or any other who are not of either ye parishes of Long Ditton, or Thames Ditton, nor disaffected to ye present Government, To require ye account of ye breif moneyes and of ye materials of ye church soe yt ye Land rates be equally layd, and that there be no delay in ye convenient dispatch of ye Worke. And whereas ye Church is to be rebuilt, yt may not be built in ye old superstitious forme of Chancel, Church and Church Porch, but in one entire roome as more convenient for dispensing of ye ordinances of God’s publike Worship to ye greater edification of all. And that ye aforesayd concourse may in ye meane while untill ye publike meeting place be built, by some effectuall way, bee suppressed, Leaving the whole to ye mature wisdom of your Highnes and your Councill, whom ye Lord make as Angels of God in this and all other affaires to discern betweene good and evill.

“Your petitioners do ever pray, etc.

RICHARD BYFIELD, Minister, etc. etc.”

(*Endorsed.*)

Mr. Byfield, minister of Longditton in the County of Surrey R.
14 Aprill 1657—ref. 26 May 1637. Ord. 27, 1657.

REPORT CONCERNING THE PETITION OF RICHARD
BYFIELD, MINISTER OF LONG DITTON ¹

“ Upon reading a Report from a Committee of the Councell to whom the humble peticon of Richard Byfield, Minister of Long Ditton in the county of Surrey, and of other inhabitants there was referred, setting forth that diverse somes of the moneys collected in the yeares 1641 and 1642 by vertue of a briefe then graunted for building the parish church of Long Ditton aforesayd, hath been for about twelve yeares remayning in ye hands of Sir Thomas Evelyn, and noe account given for the same, and that the said church is since fallen downe, ordered by his Highnes the Lord Protector and ye Councell that it be referred to Francis Drake, Thadruk Bruce, Esq., Major Dawbyn and Mr. Obadiah Weekes, to take an accompt w^t p^t of the moneys soe collected doth remayne in the hands of the said Sir Thomas Evelyn or any other pson, and also to examine into whose hands the ruined materialls of the said church or any of them have come, and how the same have been disposed of, and to send for such witnesses as they shall judge necessary for cleareing the truth, and to examine them or such others as shalbe produced, and so certify to ye Councell the truth of the whole business that effectuall course may be taken for reedifying ye said church. And where it is by the said peticon complayned of that there is great interrupcon given to ye said Mr. Byfield Ministry by the said Sir Thomas Evelyn’s entertaynment of one Leonard Hudson for his household chaplaine, who being prelatieall begetts great concourse of people of that principle to him, being represented to be a person much disaffected to Reformacon, intermedling in matters of buryall and other administracons to some of the inhabitants of Long Ditton and Thames Ditton, being Mr. Byfield’s parishioners, using the words of the comon prayer booke ordered by his Highness and the Councell resentm^t hereof, and admonishing him to remove the said Leonard Hudson from being his chaplaine.”

¹ Dom. S. P., Interregnum, vol. 178, p. 243.

LETTER FROM PRESIDENT LAWRENCE TO SIR THOMAS EVELYN¹

“S^r,—His Highnesse and the Councell have received Information that Mr. Richard Byfield of Long Ditton who is well knowne unto them to be both a godly and learned preacher, hath and doth daily receive great interruption and discouragement in his ministry by one Leonard Hudson whom you have entertained to be your household chaplaine who being prelatie doth gather to himselve great concourse of people of that principle, makeing use of the words of the comon praier to be used either in publique or private, and also invadeing the rights of the said Mr. Byfield by burialls and otherwise in Long Ditton and Thames Ditton, the people whereof are his parishioners, and that the said Hudson doth take encouragement herein by your countenancing of him, which doth not only tend to the hindrance of that worke of Reformacon which hath endeavoured many yeares, but seemes to be donne in flatt opposition thereunto. His Highness and the Councell have thought fitt hereby to signifie their resentment of the miscarriages of the said Leonard Hudson and of your giving countenance unto him in such practises, and withall to signifie unto you that they expect you should forthwith remove the said Leonard Hudson from being your household Chaplaine, and so remove the Scandall that lyes upon you in entertaining such a one, and take away the offence that is thereby given unto others, which they doubt not but you will doe accordingly.

“Signed in ye name & by order
of his Highness and the Councell
H. LAWRENCE Presid^t.

“WHITEHALL, 10 November 1657.
To SIR THOMAS EVELYN.”

The following extract is from Coxe's *History of Surrey*, published 1758 :—

“Mr. Richard Byfield, who was Minister of this parish in the time of Oliver's Protectorship, having a Controversy with his Patron Sir Thomas Evelyn about the Repairs of the

¹ Dom. S. P., Charles I, vol. 178, p. 838.

Church, went to the Protector to complain of his Patron. Oliver brought them both together to hear their several Pleas. Sir Thomas charg'd Mr. Byfield with reflecting upon him in his Sermons; which Mr. Byfield taking God to witness that he never design'd any such Thing: The Protector said to Sir Thomas, 'I am afraid there is something amiss, which the Word of God finds out in you, search your Ways.' But to end the Controversy, he ask'd, How much the Repairs would cost? Sir Thomas said, £200. Whereupon Oliver order'd Sir Thomas £100 out of his Cash, and told Sir Thomas, he hoped he'd bear the other £100 which Sir Thomas consenting to, he and his Parson went home perfect Friends."

CHILDREN OF SIR THOMAS EVELYN, KNIGHT

ARTHUR EVELYN, buried at Long Ditton, October 30, 1708.

ANNE EVELYN, the eldest daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, November 16, 1617, and buried at Long Ditton, July 2, 1638.

MARY EVELYN, the second daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, August 29, 1620. She was married at Long Ditton, May 25, 1643, to Edmund Ironside.

SUSAN EVELYN, the third daughter, was born January 5, 1621-22 and was baptized at Long Ditton, January 17, 1621-22.

JANE EVELYN, the fourth daughter, was born August 10, 1623, and was baptized at Long Ditton, August 21, 1623. She married Charles Evelyn, who was buried at Long Ditton on January 28, 1658-59.

ELIZABETH EVELYN, the fifth daughter, was born December 28, 1630, and baptized at Long Ditton, December 30, 1630. She was buried at Long Ditton, July 28, 1638.

THOMAS EVELYN, died an infant, and was buried at Long Ditton, May 23, 1615.

THOMAS EVELYN was born August 8, 1618, and baptized at Long Ditton, August 20, 1618. He died January 18, 1618, and was buried at Long Ditton, January 19, 1649-50.

CHARLES EVELYN was born 1624, and baptized at Long

Ditton, December 23, 1624. He died . . . and was buried at Long Ditton, April 8, 1642.

SIR EDWARD EVELYN of Long Ditton, of whom presently.

FRANCIS EVELYN, born December 4, 1629, and baptized at Long Ditton, December 22, 1629.

VINCENT EVELYN, baptized at Long Ditton, October 3, 1633.

SIR EDWARD EVELYN OF LONG DITTON

SIR EDWARD EVELYN ¹ of Long Ditton, Knight, was born January 25, 1625–26, and was baptized at Long Ditton, January 31, 1625–26. He was created a baronet, February 17, 1682–83. He was M.P. for Surrey 1685 to 1687. In 1685, on the accession of King James, Sir Edward joined with Sir Adam Browne in successfully opposing the return to Parliament of his cousin George Evelyn of Wotton and Arthur Onslow, Esq., as Members for the County of Surrey. This election was held at Leatherhead.

John Evelyn writes in his *Diary* on April 8 :

“ This day my brother of Wotton and Mr. Onslow were candidates for Surrey against Sir Adam Browne and my cousin Sir Edward Evelyn, and were circumvented in their election by a trick of the Sheriff’s taking advantage of my brother’s party going out of the small village of Leatherhead to seek shelter and lodging, the afternoone being tempestuous, proceeding to the Election when they were gon ; they expecting the next morning ; whereas before and then they exceeded the other party by many hundreds, as I am assur’d. The Duke of Norfolk led Sir Edw. Evelyn’s and Sir Adam Brown’s party. For this Parliament, very meane and slight persons (some of them gentlemen’s servants, clearkes, and persons neither of reputation nor interest) were set up, but the country would choose my brother whether he would or no, and he miss’d it by the trick above mention’d. Sir Adam Browne was so deafe that he could not heare one word. Sir Edw. Evelyn was an honest gentleman much in favour with his Majesty.”

¹ Chan. Pro., before 1714, Hamilton, 112 / 139 ; *ibid.*, before 1714, Hamilton, 585 / 60.

Sir Edward Evelyn married Mary, daughter of Anthony Balam. They were married at St. Dionis Backchurch, London, September 15, 1659. She was described as of Sawston, Cambridgeshire.

Sir Edward died May 8, 1692, aged sixty-six, and he was buried at Long Ditton in the chancel, May 12, 1692. His wife died four years later and was buried in the chancel, Long Ditton, July 10, 1696. Sir Edward settled his estate at Long Ditton on his daughter Penelope who married Sir Joseph Alstone, Bart.

John Evelyn writes in his *Diary*, May 8 :

“My kinsman Sir Edward Evelyn of Long Ditton died suddenly.”

CHILDREN OF SIR EDWARD EVELYN OF LONG DITTON

GEORGE EVELYN, baptized at Long Ditton, November 1, 1663. Died, September 13, 1685, aged twenty-two. Buried at Long Ditton, September 22, 1685.

EDWARD EVELYN was born June 12, 1667, and baptized at Long Ditton, June 14, 1667. He was buried at Long Ditton, August 5, 1669.

CHARLES EVELYN was born August 25, 1670. He was buried at Long Ditton, October 26, 1670.

ANN EVELYN, eldest daughter and co-heir, was born March 26, 1661. She was married at Long Ditton, June 22, 1682, to William Hill of Teddington, Middlesex, Esq.

MARY EVELYN, the second daughter and co-heir, was born July 14, 1662. She married at St. Giles'-in-the-Fields, July 5, 1688, William Glynn, Esq.

JANE EVELYN, the third daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton, January 10, 1664-65, and was buried at Long Ditton on the 20th of the same month.

ELIZABETH EVELYN, the fourth daughter, was baptized at Long Ditton between November 1668 and February 1668-69. She was buried at Long Ditton, September 8, 1669.

PENELOPE EVELYN, the fifth daughter and co-heir, was born October 3, 1672. She married at Long Ditton, January

23, 1690, Sir Joseph Alstone, 3rd Bart. She was buried at Long Ditton, June 28, 1714. He was buried at Long Ditton, January 29, 1715-16. Their son, Sir Evelyn Alstone, 5th Bart., sold Long Ditton in 1721 to Sir Peter King, afterwards Lord King.

SOPHIA EVELYN, the sixth daughter and co-heir, was born March 1, 1675-76. She married Sir Stephen Glynne, 3rd Bart. She was buried at Long Ditton, January 8, 1738-39. He died in April 1729.

THE EVELYNS OF HUNTERCOMBE IN BUCKINGHAMSHIRE

GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE

GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE,¹ the second son (but eldest by second wife) of Thomas Evelyn of Long Ditton, was baptized at Long Ditton, September 6, 1593. He married Dudley, daughter of William Bayles of Catlidge, in Suffolk, Esq. He bought Burnham, *alias* Huntercombe, July 2, 1656, just a year before his death, which took place August 7, 1657, when he was aged sixty-four. There is a monument to him in Burnham Church, which has the effigies of George and his wife and of two sons, one in military and the other in lawyer's dress. His wife died, September 3, 1661, aged sixty-one, and was buried at Burnham, September 6, 1661.

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE

GEORGE EVELYN of Huntercombe, eldest son, of whom presently.

THOMAS EVELYN, baptized at St. Margaret's, Westminster, December 6, 1632. Buried at Burnham, October 8, 1673.

WILLIAM EVELYN, baptized at St. Andrew's, Holborn, April 28, 1634, out of Dr. Gibb's house in Fullwood Lane.

FRANCES EVELYN, died *v.p.*

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles I, E. 21/15; and Chan. Pro., before 1714, Collins, 56/11.

GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE.

GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE,¹ the eldest son of George and Dudley Evelyn, was born in 1630. He was executor of his mother's will, November 5, 1661. He married,² in 1664, Elizabeth, widow of . . . Walsham. She died November 7, 1686. Her daughter by her first husband, Elizabeth Walsham, married at Burnham, January 29, 1680, Henry Somner of Denton, Bucks, Esq. Henry Somner of St. Andrew's, Holborn, London, was buried at Burnham, August 1, 1736. Mrs. Elizabeth Somner, widow, of St. Andrew's, Holborn, London, was buried at Burnham, May 16, 1738.

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE

WILLIAM EVELYN, of whom presently.

GEORGE EVELYN was born at Huntercombe, December 30, 1670, and baptized at Burnham, February 20, 1670-71.

DUDLEY EVELYN was born at Huntercombe, January 3, 1668-69. Baptized at Burnham, February 2, 1668-69. Buried April 13, 1669.

WILLIAM EVELYN OF HUNTERCOMBE.

WILLIAM EVELYN, eldest son of George Evelyn and Elizabeth Walsham, was born at Huntercombe, October 3, and baptized at Burnham, October 4, 1667. He matriculated at Christ Church, Oxford, 1684, aged sixteen. He sold Huntercombe, and settled at Martyr Worthy in Hants. He built the old mansion (now superseded) in Worthy Park. He died, December 20, 1723, aged fifty-seven, and unmarried. He was buried under a slab in the centre of the nave of Martyr Worthy Church, which has Evelyn arms and crest without difference.

¹ Chan. Pro., before 1714, Collins, 56/11; *ibid.*, before 1714, Whittington, Evelyn *v.* Walsham, 116; and *ibid.*, before 1714, Whittington, 169.

² Faculty Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury, Marriage Licenses. "George Evelyn, etc. etc., and Elizabeth Walsham of Yately in the county of Southampton, widow, aged 26. To be married at St. Paul's Church, Covent Garden, St. Giles-in-the-Fields, or St. Clement Danes in the county of Middx."

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYNS OF LONG DITTON

THOMAS EVELYN = FRANCES MOORE,
of Long Ditton, son of first wife.
George Evelyn of Long
Ditton, *b.* 1551, *d.* 1617.

Sir THOMAS EVELYN, = ANNE GOLD.
Knight of Long Ditton,
b. 1587, *d.* 1659.

Sir EDWARD EVELYN, = MARY BALAM.
Baronet of Long Ditton,
b. 1625-26, *d.* 1692.
Created Baronet 1682-
1683.

PENELOPE EVELYN,
fifth daughter, *m.* Sir
Joseph Alstone. Had thir-
teen children, but none left
issue.

SOPHIA EVELYN, 6th daughter,
m. Sir Stephen Glynne, 3rd
Baronet, *b.* 1675, *d.* 1739.

Sir JOHN GLYNNE, 6th Baronet,
d. 1777.

Sir STEPHEN GLYNNE, 7th
Baronet, *d.* 1780.

Sir STEPHEN GLYNNE, 8th
Baronet, *d.* 1815.

Sir STEPHEN GLYNNE,
9th and last Baronet, *d.*
unmarried.

Rev. HENRY GLYNNE,
Rector of Hawarden.

CATHERINE,
m. W. E. Gladstone
of Hawarden Castle.

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYNS OF HUNTERCOMBE

GEORGE EVELYN,
son of Thomas Evelyn
of Long Ditton, by
second wife, *b.* 1593,
d. 1657.

= DUDLEY BAYLES.

GEORGE EVELYN
of Huntercombe, *b.*
1630, *d.* 1699.

= ELIZABETH WALSHAM.

WILLIAM EVELYN
of Huntercombe. Sold
Huntercombe; *b.* 1667,
d. unmarried 1723.

=

PART VIII

THE EVELYNS IN AMERICA

ROBERT EVELYN

ROBERT EVELYN, the third son of George Evelyn of Long Ditton, was born about 1556. Godstone was left to him, and he was engaged, as well as his brothers, in the manufacture of gunpowder. In this, however, he was not successful, so he sold Godstone to his brother John, and about 1609 emigrated to Virginia. On October 19, 1590, he had married at St. Peter's, Cornhill, London, Susannah, daughter of Gregory and Susannah Young, by whom he had a large family of children.

On March 25, 1595,¹ Robert's father-in-law Gregory Yonge, citizen and grocer of London, with his wife Susan Yonge, settled to leave a messuage or tenement in the parish of High Ongar in Essex, called Hardings, with land containing sixteen acres, and also land called Brooks Roden in the parish of High Ongar, containing thirteen acres, and land in the same parish called Swaininges containing fourteen acres, to his various children. The land was to belong to the parents during their lifetime, and to whichever of them outlived the other; it was then to go to Thomas Yonge and his heirs, and failing heirs to John Yonge and his heirs, failing which it was to go to Susan, wife of Robert Evelyn, and Katherine Morrys, another daughter.

Robert was fifty-three when he embarked about the year 1609 for Virginia, and he eventually became the founder of a family in America.

The following is the fragment of a letter preserved at

¹ See Close Roll, 37 Eliz., part 17.

Wotton, written by Robert on the eve of his departure for Virginia to his stepmother, who was then a widow, her husband having died in 1603. In it he alludes to his wife, whom he was obliged to leave behind with the children.

“MOTHER EVELYN,—I commend me most particularly unto you and to my brother Richard, hoping in God long to continue to His will and pleasure with much comfort and happiness. I am very sorry that I am mortgaged so much, that I am driven to tell you to pay the hundred marks to Mr. Stoughton for me, which you at my request did stand bound so kindly for me to him. I am much grieved at my heart for it that my estate is so mean, that at this time I am not able to repay it ; but if it be God’s pleasure to restore me, I will repay it again to your good liking. I am going to the sea, a long and dangerous vo(yage with) other men, to make me to be (able) to pay my debts, and to restore my decayed estate again ; which I beseech God of his mercy to grant it may be (made) prosperous unto me to His Honour, and my comfort in this world and in the world to come ; and I beseech you, if I do die, that you would be good unto my poor wife and children, which, God knows, I shall leave very poor and very meane if my friends be not good unto them, for my sins have deserved these punishments and far greater at God’s hands, which I humbly beseech God of His mercy to (pardon). I would have gladly seen you and my brother at this time, but that the captain of the ship made such haste away so suddenly. I am very sorry for the debts of my sister and brother Stoughton, but we must all be contented with the pleasure of Almighty God. (Whenever) it is His pleasure to dispose of us, no doubt they are most happy and blessed and at rest with God and out of this troublesome world. My wife commends her unto you, and we do (heartily and) most humbly thank you for all your love and care of her ; and I pray God give her years to shew herself dutiful unto you for it, and thankful, and to her unkles. My mother Yunge, and my brother Morris¹ and his wife, commend them unto you, and I would entreat

¹ John Morris and Catherine, daughter of Gregory Yong, Esq., were married at St. Peter’s Church, Cornhill, London, by licence, May 27, 1593.

you commend us unto Mr. Comber and his wife, and Mr. Yunge and his wife ; and I would entreat my brother Richard, and Mr. Comber, to do me this kindness that when (they) go to London, they would sometimes see my wife, and that she may not think that all my friends have forsaken her ; and that my brother Richard would do me this kindness, as to give my mother Yunge thank for her (great) care of me and my children, and I shall be very bound to him for it."

Robert's allusion to his sister and brother Stoughton shows that the letter must have been written some time before November 15, 1610, on which day Mrs. Stoughton died. Mrs. Stoughton (*née* Catherine Evelyn) was Robert's stepsister and the youngest of the family, and was married to Thomas, son of Lawrence Stoughton, Esq. of Stoughton, in Stoke, near Guildford. Probably the letter was written about 1609. The brother Richard mentioned in it is his stepbrother Richard who inherited Wotton and was afterwards the father of John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*. The Mr. Comber alluded to was a relation of the family.

CHILDREN OF ROBERT EVELYN

GEORGE EVELYN, the eldest son, was born in London, January 31, 1592-93, and baptized at St. Peter's, Cornhill, London, on February 11, 1592-93. He was entered at the Middle Temple, October 24, 1620. He did not follow his father to America till 1636, when he was forty-three years of age. He went to Maryland, and eventually became Governor of Kent Island. He had married in 1623¹ Jane Crane, daughter of Richard Crane of Dorsetshire. Before starting on his journey² he placed two of his children, Mountjoy and Rebecca, under the care of his kinsman, Sir John Bodley and his wife. Lady Bodley was the daughter of his uncle, Thomas Evelyn of Long Ditton. George and his wife had separated from each other. George had been imprisoned for debt for a year at one time in the Gatehouse at Westminster, and then in the King's Bench Prison.

¹ Chan. Pro., Charles 1, E. 2/31.

² *Ibid.*, Charles 1, E. 16/27.

Shortly after his marriage, George had tried to make money by means of plantations in America, but in this he was unsuccessful and lost a great deal of money. He returned from America before 1649, according to Lord Liverpool.¹

George's son, Mountjoy, also went to Maryland and Virginia and owned land on the James River. Possibly he may have descendants in America now.

ROBERT EVELYN, the second son of Robert Evelyn, emigrated to Maryland and Virginia in 1634, and died in America. He may have descendants, but they have not as yet been traced.

JAMES EVELYN, the third son, according to Lord Liverpool, was at New Hall, Oxford, December 18, 1615, aged eighteen, so was born 1597.

SUSAN, the eldest daughter, was born November 9, 1591, and baptized at St. Peter's, Cornhill, November 21, 1591.

ELIZABETH, the second daughter, married Anthony Gamage of Yorkshire.

ANNE, the third daughter, married Henry Staynes (or Haines) of London.

FRANCES, the fourth daughter, married Henry Kelsey (or Kelly) of Hants.

ROSE, the fifth daughter, became a nun.

MARIA, sixth daughter, a nun.

MARGARET, the youngest daughter, married John Knatchbull of Kent.

"APRIL 1634.—PASS FOR ROBERT EVELYN, &c.²

"Charles by the grace of God King of Great Brittain, france and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. To all Admiralls, Vice Admiralls, Captaines of o^r forts and Ships, and to all Justices of Peace, Mayo^{rs} Sheriffes Bayliffes, Customes, Contrrollers, Serchers, Constables, and to all and euey other o^r office^{rs} and Ministers, seruing vs vpon the Sea or Lands, whom it doth or may concern greeting.

"Whereas we being very Confident of the fidelity, Allege-

¹ See also *The Evelyns in America*, by G. D. Scull.

² Colonial Papers, Charles I, vol. viii. p. 10.

ance & Loyalty of o^r trusty and Wellbeloued Captaine Thomas Young, and of his devotion to o^r seruice, haue bene pleased to imploy him together wth his Nephew Robt. Euelin of Lond Gentlemen (of whom the said Capt. Young hath made choice to assist and serue vnder him as his Deputy) into the parts of America, vpon speciall and weighty affaires concerning o^r priuate seruice, whereof wee expect a speedy accompt from them. We doe therefore hereby streightly charge and comand you and euery of you to pmitt and suffer the said Capt. Thomas Young, and Robert Euelin, and their Company freely to passe and goe, and depart out of anie of o^r Dominions aforesaid about this o^r seruice wthout any yo^r questions, stoppes letts, Molestations, pressing interruptions or handrances in any kind whatsoever. And we do further will and require you and euery of you to giue them yo^r best furtherance, ayde and assistance from time to time in their necessary occasions when and as often as they shall require the same. And hereof you are not faile as you will answer the Contrary at yo^r pills.

“ Giuen vnder o^r Signett at

”

A description of the province of New Albion by Beauchamp Plantaganet was published in 1648, together with a letter from the younger Robert Evelyn who lived there for many years.

ROBERT EVELYN'S LETTER

“ GOOD MADAM,—Sir Edmund our noble Governour and Lord Earl Palatine, persisting still in his noble purpose to goe on with his plantation in Delaware or Charles river, just midway between New England and Virginia, where with my Uncle Young I severall years resided, hath often informed himselfe both of me and Master Strutton, as I perceiue by the hands subscribed of Edward Monmouth, Tenis Palee, and as Master Buckham, Master White, and other Shipmasters, and Saylors, whose hands I know, and it to be true and there lived and traded with me, and is sufficiently instructed of the state of the country, and people there, and I should very gladly according to his desire have waited on

you into Hamshire to have informed your Honour in person, had not I next weeke been passing to Virginia. But nevertheless to satisfie you of the truth, I thought good to write unto you my knowledge, to first to describe you from the North side of Delaware unto Hudsons river, in Sir Edmund's Patent, called New Albion, which lieth just between New England and Maryland and that Ocean sea, I take it to be about 160 miles. I finde some broken land, Isles and Inlets, and many small Isles at Egby: But going to Delaware Bay, by Cape May, which is 24 miles at most, and is as I understand very well set out and printed in Captain Powels Map of New England, done as is told mee by a draught I gave to M. Daniel the plot-maker, which Sir Edmund saith you have at home, on that North side about five miles within a port, or rode for any Ships called the Nook, and within lieth the King of Kechemeches, having as I suppose about 50 men, and 12 leagues higher a little above the Bay and Bar is the ruin of Mantesis, which lieth 20 miles on Charles river, and 30 miles running up a fair navigable deep river all a flat levell of rich and fat black Marsh-mould, which I think to be 300,000 acres: In this Sir Edmund intendeth as he saith to settle, and there the King of Mantesis hath about 100 Bow-men, next above about 6 leagues higher is a fair deep river 12 miles navigable, where is Freestone, and there over against is the King of Sikonesses, and next is Asomoche river and King with an hundred men, and next is Eriwoneck a King of forty men, where we sate down, and five miles above is the King of Ramcock with a hundred men, and four miles higher the King of Axion with two hundred men, and next to him three leagues overland an inland King of Calcefar, with an hundred and fifty men, and then there is in the middle of Charles river two fair woody Isles, very pleasant and fit for Parks, the one of a thousand acres, the other of fourteen hundred, or thereabout. And six leagues higher near a Creek called Mosilian, the King having two hundred men. And then we come to the Fals made by a rock of limestone, as I suppose it is, about sixty and five leagues from the sea, near to which is an Isle fit for a City, all materials there to build; and above, the river fair and navigable, as the Indians inform me, for I went but ten miles

higher. I doe account all the Indians to be eight hundred ; and are in severall factions and war against the Sasquehannocks, and are all extream fearfull of a gun, naked and unarmed against our shot, swords, and pikes. I had some bikering with some of them, and they are of so little esteem, as I durst with fifteen men sit down, or trade in despite of them, and since my return eightene Swedes are settled there, and so sometime since Dutch doe in a boat trade without fear of them.

“ I saw there an infinite quantity of Bustards, Swans, Geese and Fowl, covering the shoares as within the like multitude of Pigeons and store of Turkeys of which I tried one to weigh forty and sixe pounds. There is much variety and plenty of delicate fresh and sea-fish, and shell-fish, and Whales or Grampuses : Elks, Deere that bring three young at a time, and the woods bestrewed many moneths with Chestnuts, Wall-nuts, and Mast of severall sorts to feed them and Hogs, that would increase exceedingly. There the barren grounds have four kindes of Grapes and many Mulberries with Ash, Elms, and the tallest and greatest Pines and Pitch-trees that I have seen. There are Cedars, Cypresses and Sassafras, with wilde fruits, pears, wilde cherries, pine-apples, and the dainty Parsemenas. And there is no question but Almonds, and other fruits of Spain will prosper, as in Virginia. And (which is a good comfort) in four and twenty houres you may send or goe by sea to New England or Virginia, with a fair winde, you may have cattle, and from the Indians two thousand barrels of corn, at twelve pence a bushel in truck, so as victuals are there cheaper and better than to be transported : Neither doe I conceive any great need of a Port or Charge where there is no enemy.

“ If my Lord Palatine will bring with him three hundred men or more, there is no doubt but that he may doe very well and grow rich, for it is a most pure healthfull air, and such pure wholesome springs, rivers, and waters, as are delightfull, of a Desert, as can be seen, with so many varieties of several flowers, trees, and forests for swine. So many fair risings and prospects, all green and verdant : and Maryland a good friend and neighbour in four and twenty hours, ready to comfort and supply.

“ And truly, I believe, my Lord of Baltamore will be glad of my Lord Palatine’s Plantation and assistance against any enemy or bad neighbour. And if my Lord Palatine employ some men to sow flaxe, hemp and rapes in those rich Marishes or build ships and make pipe-staves, and load some ships with these wares, or fish from the Northward, he may have any money, ware, or company brought him by his own ships, or the ships of Virginia or New England all the year.

“ And because your Honour is of the noble house of the Pawlets, and as I am informed, desire to lead many of your friends and kindred thither, whom as I honour I desire to serve, I shall entreat you to beleeeve mee as a Gentleman and Christian, I write you nothing but the truth, and hope there to take opportunity in due season to visit you, and doe all the good offices in Virginia my place or friends can serve you in. And thus tendering my service, I rest,

“ Madam,

Your Honours most humble faithfull servant,

ROBERT EVELIN.”

CHILDREN OF GEORGE EVELYN

GEORGE EVELYN, baptized at St. Martin’s-in-the-Fields, London, December 3, 1623 ; entered at the Middle Temple in November 1648. Died young.

MOUNTJOY EVELYN went to Maryland and Virginia and owned land on the James River.

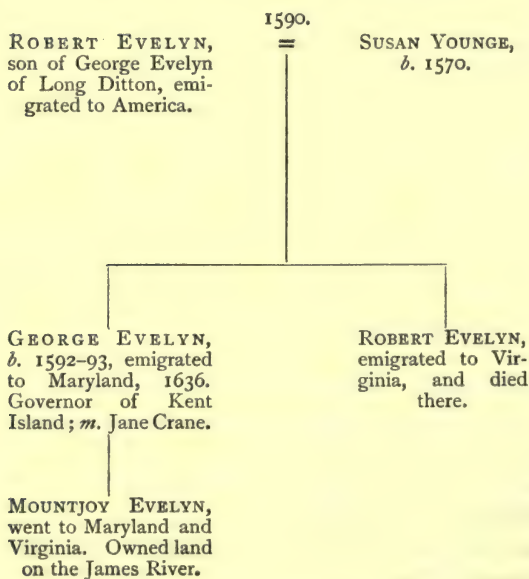
CHARLES EVELYN married Jane, daughter of Sir Thomas Evelyn of Long Ditton.

JOHN EVELYN married Susannah, daughter of She died his widow 1680. Buried at Streatham.

JANE EVELYN married . . . Freeman of Gloucestershire.

REBECCA EVELYN died unmarried. Buried at Godstone, December 29, 1701. Born about 1635.

THE EVELYNS OF AMERICA



APPENDIX I

THE IBELINS OF SYRIA, CYPRUS, AND NORMANDY

THE following details concerning the Norman Evelyns have been collected and arranged by my sister, Mrs. P. S. M. Arbuthnot.¹

BALIAN, or BARISSAN, was the first member of the Norman family to go out to the Holy Land. The records of the time call him "BALIAN LE FRANÇOIS," and say that he was the brother of Count Guilin de Chartres, and that he came to the Holy Land, with ten knights, his vassals. He accompanied Robert, Duke of Normandy, who went out in 1096. Du Cange, in his *Familles d'outre Mer*, writes :

"It is not easy to guess who was this Guilin de Chartres, seeing that in those days the County of Chartres was held by the Counts of Blois, which gives us reason to think that this Guilin was Viscount de Chartres, and that his name was not Guilin but Gilduin ; as we find a Viscount de Chartres of that name in documents of the year 1028, from whom are descended other Viscounts of the family of Puiset. Among the children of Hugues du Puiset, Viscount of Chartres, certain documents name : Hugues, who succeeded him, Guy Viscount d'Estampes, Valeran Seigneur de Villepreux, and *Gilduin*. What further confirms this theory is that the Sire de Joinville gives as the arms of the family of *Ivelin*, or, a cross pattée gules, which cross the English heralds give to the house of Puiset, though they do not coincide as to the tinctures."

The first Crusade ended in the capture of Jerusalem by

¹ See pedigree, p. 13.

Godfrey de Bouillon in 1099. After Godfrey's short rule of one year he was succeeded by his brother Baldwin I, in 1101, and after him his cousin, Baldwin II, surnamed "*du Bourg*," in 1119. This Baldwin had four daughters, the eldest of whom, Millicent, married Fulk, Count of Anjou, who succeeded to the throne of Jerusalem, in right of his wife. Fulk constructed a fortress on a hill close to the town of Rama, between Joppa and Ascalon, in a locality called "Ibelin." This he granted to Balian le François, and laid on him the task of restraining the advances of the Saracens, who at that time held the town of Ascalon. From this fortress he and his descendants took their name, which they retained long after "Ibelin" had passed finally into the hands of the infidels. Ibelin seems to be identified with Iebneh, an Arab village which has replaced the ancient Jamnia, and Ibelin of the Crusades. One may still see there a chapel and a massive wall, the last vestiges of the castle. Balian acquitted himself with much honour and skill in the defence of this place, as did his children after him, up till the time when the town of Ascalon was conquered and temporarily held by the Christians. Balian died in the year 1155. His wife was Helvis, daughter and heiress of Baldwin, Seigneur of Rama and Mirabel.

His son, HUGUES D'IBELIN, succeeded him as Seigneur d'Ibelin and Rama. He was present at the capture of Ascalon in 1154, and, two years later, was for a short time a prisoner with the Saracens. He married, about 1164, Agnes, daughter of Joscelin, Count of Edessa. On her arrival at Joppa as the betrothed of Hugues, Amalric, afterwards King of Jerusalem, seized and married her, and had by her a son and a daughter, Baldwin and Sibilla, both of whom afterwards reigned in Jerusalem; but on account of this high-handed action of Amalric, the Patriarch refused to crown him until he had quitted his wife. This he finally did, and she proceeded to join Hugues, claiming him as her husband and being received by him. By her Hugues had no children, and the properties of Ibelin and Rama passed to his brother Baldwin d'Ibelin, who was already Seigneur de Mirabel, the Seigneuries of Rama

and Mirabel having come into the family through the wife of Balian "*le François*."

BALDWIN D'IBELIN, Seigneur of Rama, Mirabel, and Ibelin, having learnt that Guy de Lusignan had been crowned King, refused to do him homage, and placed his estates in the hands of his son Thomas, who did not share his father's prejudices. The Castle of Mirabel, which had been the first appanage of Baldwin d'Ibelin, was taken by Saphadin in 1187, and in the same year, as we shall see, Ibelin was also lost. (The title of Seigneur d'Ibelin reappears in later years, being borne by Jean d'Ibelin, Seigneur of Joppa and Ascalon.) The Seigneurie of Ibelin (after the death of Thomas, Baldwin's son, who left no children) passed to his uncle, BALIAN, the third son of Balian "*le François*." This Balian (according to the book compiled by Jean d'Ibelin, his grandson) was the last Christian Seigneur of Ibelin—the last *de facto* Seigneur, at least, for the name was retained. Balian married, about the year 1176, the Queen-Dowager of Jerusalem, Maria Comnena, widow of Amalric I. This princess brought as dowry the town of Nablus. Balian's signature is appended to various documents as late as the date 1193. The date of his death is not known. In 1183 he assisted at the coronation of the little king, Baldwin V, whom he carried in his arms, in order that the child might not appear shorter than the barons who surrounded him. In 1186 he was one of those who exerted himself most actively to make peace between Guy de Lusignan and the Count of Tripoly. In this he failed, and the disputes which then commenced resulted in the loss of the Holy Land. Jerusalem was captured by Saladin in 1187, and at the same time many towns along the sea-coast, and among them the fortress of Ibelin, fell into the hands of the Saracens. It is related that Balian was engaged in the defence of Jerusalem against Saladin, and when he saw the city reduced to its last resources proposed a treaty of capitulation to Saladin. He then entered into a discussion with him as to fixing the ransoms of the inhabitants, and above all of those who were poor—a discussion in which were exhibited all the freedom and generosity which characterised the Moslem

were to govern it until the young King should be of age. Having thus secured his own supremacy in the island, Frederick departed to go to Italy, and affairs remained in this condition until the year 1232, when the Seigneur de Beirut, Jean d'Ibelin, invaded the island with his troops, rescued the King, who was practically a prisoner in the hands of the Emperor's nominees, and made himself master of the island.

The Seigneur de Beirut married Millicent, daughter of the Seigneur d'Arsur, in right of whom he became Seigneur d'Arsur, and had by her five sons and one daughter. He died about 1234.

His eldest son, *Balian d'Ibelin*, succeeded him as Seigneur of Beirut. He also had played a distinguished part in the war against Frederick II. In 1228 he was for a short time a hostage in the hands of the Emperor, and Philip de Navarre relates that he drove the Lombards (*i.e.* the Emperor's troops) out of Tyre. In the year 1237 he became Constable of the kingdom of Cyprus. In this capacity he presented to the hospital at Jerusalem two estates or farms which he had received from King Henry I of Cyprus. He married Eschive, daughter of Gauthier of Montbeliard. By this marriage he had three sons and one daughter. It was this Balian who claimed Ibelin when it was recovered from the Saracens in 1191, but his claim was not allowed, and the fortress passed, as has already been stated, into the hands of Marguerite, his aunt, and through her marriage became the property of the Princes of Cæsarea. It was probably finally lost in the year 1264-65, when Cæsarea fell into the hands of the Sultan Bendochar. The year of Balian's death is unknown. He was succeeded by his eldest son.

JEAN D'IBELIN, Seigneur de Beirut, of whom little is known. He married Agnes, daughter of the Duke of Athens, and had two daughters, Isabella and Eschive. In 1260 he was defeated and taken prisoner by the Turcomans and was obliged to pay a ransom of twenty thousand bezants. He died in 1264, and was succeeded by his daughter Isabella, "DAME DE BEIRUT," who was married four times, and left no children. Her sister Eschive was "DAME DE BEIRUT"

after her. She married twice, and had several children, but in her time the town of Beirut was conquered by the Saracens (1291), with the rest of the towns still remaining in the hands of the Christians.

Two other members of the Ibelin family merit notice: the first is JEAN, COUNT OF JOPPA AND ASCALON, son of Philip d'Ibelin, Regent of Cyprus and nephew of Jean d'Ibelin, *le Vieux Seigneur de Beirut*. This Jean, Count of Joppa, was the learned compiler of the *Assises of Jerusalem*, concerning which Gibbon writes as follows in his *History of the Crusades*:—

“No sooner had Godfrey of Bouillon accepted the office of Supreme Magistrate than he solicited the public and private advice of the Latin pilgrims, who were the best skilled in the statutes and customs of Europe. From these materials, with the counsel and approbation of the patriarch and barons of the clergy and laity, Godfrey composed the *Assises de Jerusalem*, a precious monument of feudal jurisprudence. The new code, attested by the seals of the king, the patriarch, and the viscount of Jerusalem, was deposited in the Holy Sepulchre, enriched with the improvements of succeeding times, and respectfully consulted as often as any doubtful question arose in the tribunals of Palestine. With the kingdom and city, all was lost, the fragments of the written law were preserved (A.D. 1099–1369) by jealous tradition and variable practice till the middle of the thirteenth century: the code was restored by the pen of Jean d'Ibelin, Count of Jaffa, one of the principal feudatories; and the final revision was accomplished in the year 1369 for the use of the Latin Kingdom of Cyprus.”

He was born at the commencement of the thirteenth century, and took part, whilst still very young, in the negotiations concerning the ruling of the kingdom of Jerusalem during the minority of Conrad, son of the Emperor Frederick. He also played a prominent part in the war which his family waged against this monarch. He was present at the siege of Beirut, and gave proof of great courage at the rout of Casal-Imbert. When, after the recapture of Beirut, King Henry wished to go and reconquer the island of Cyprus, Jean d'Ibelin sold a house of his at Acre, and gave him the price of

were to govern it until the young King should be of age. Having thus secured his own supremacy in the island, Frederick departed to go to Italy, and affairs remained in this condition until the year 1232, when the Seigneur de Beirut, Jean d'Ibelin, invaded the island with his troops, rescued the King, who was practically a prisoner in the hands of the Emperor's nominees, and made himself master of the island.

The Seigneur de Beirut married Millicent, daughter of the Seigneur d'Arsur, in right of whom he became Seigneur d'Arsur, and had by her five sons and one daughter. He died about 1234.

His eldest son, *Balian d'Ibelin*, succeeded him as Seigneur of Beirut. He also had played a distinguished part in the war against Frederick II. In 1228 he was for a short time a hostage in the hands of the Emperor, and Philip de Navarre relates that he drove the Lombards (*i.e.* the Emperor's troops) out of Tyre. In the year 1237 he became Constable of the kingdom of Cyprus. In this capacity he presented to the hospital at Jerusalem two estates or farms which he had received from King Henry I of Cyprus. He married Eschive, daughter of Gauthier of Montbeliard. By this marriage he had three sons and one daughter. It was this Balian who claimed Ibelin when it was recovered from the Saracens in 1191, but his claim was not allowed, and the fortress passed, as has already been stated, into the hands of Marguerite, his aunt, and through her marriage became the property of the Princes of Cæsarea. It was probably finally lost in the year 1264-65, when Cæsarea fell into the hands of the Sultan Bendochar. The year of Balian's death is unknown. He was succeeded by his eldest son.

JEAN D'IBELIN, Seigneur de Beirut, of whom little is known. He married Agnes, daughter of the Duke of Athens, and had two daughters, Isabella and Eschive. In 1260 he was defeated and taken prisoner by the Turcomans and was obliged to pay a ransom of twenty thousand bezants. He died in 1264, and was succeeded by his daughter Isabella, "DAME DE BEIRUT," who was married four times, and left no children. Her sister Eschive was "DAME DE BEIRUT"

after her. She married twice, and had several children, but in her time the town of Beirut was conquered by the Saracens (1291), with the rest of the towns still remaining in the hands of the Christians.

Two other members of the Ibelin family merit notice : the first is JEAN, COUNT OF JOPPA AND ASCALON, son of Philip d'Ibelin, Regent of Cyprus and nephew of Jean d'Ibelin, *le Vieux Seigneur de Beirut*. This Jean, Count of Joppa, was the learned compiler of the *Assises of Jerusalem*, concerning which Gibbon writes as follows in his *History of the Crusades* :—

“ No sooner had Godfrey of Bouillon accepted the office of Supreme Magistrate than he solicited the public and private advice of the Latin pilgrims, who were the best skilled in the statutes and customs of Europe. From these materials, with the counsel and approbation of the patriarch and barons of the clergy and laity, Godfrey composed the *Assises de Jerusalem*, a precious monument of feudal jurisprudence. The new code, attested by the seals of the king, the patriarch, and the viscount of Jerusalem, was deposited in the Holy Sepulchre, enriched with the improvements of succeeding times, and respectfully consulted as often as any doubtful question arose in the tribunals of Palestine. With the kingdom and city, all was lost, the fragments of the written law were preserved (A.D. 1099–1369) by jealous tradition and variable practice till the middle of the thirteenth century : the code was restored by the pen of Jean d'Ibelin, Count of Jaffa, one of the principal feudatories ; and the final revision was accomplished in the year 1369 for the use of the Latin Kingdom of Cyprus.”

He was born at the commencement of the thirteenth century, and took part, whilst still very young, in the negotiations concerning the ruling of the kingdom of Jerusalem during the minority of Conrad, son of the Emperor Frederick. He also played a prominent part in the war which his family waged against this monarch. He was present at the siege of Beirut, and gave proof of great courage at the rout of Casal-Imbert. When, after the recapture of Beirut, King Henry wished to go and reconquer the island of Cyprus, Jean d'Ibelin sold a house of his at Acre, and gave him the price of

it. After the battle of Nicosia he pursued the advance-guard of the Lombard army, which had gone to besiege Gastia. It was after this war that he became Count of Joppa and Ascalon. In 1239 he joined the army of St. Louis beneath the walls of Damietta. "He was," says Joinville, "the one who arrived in the noblest fashion." In effect, the historian describes with satisfaction the armament and the richness of the vessel which carried Ibelin and his knights. When St. Louis, who had been taken prisoner, was released, a council was held at which Jean d'Ibelin advised that the Crusaders should not abandon the Holy Land. He for some time refused to give his opinion, "because," said he, "my castles are on the route. If I recommend the king to proceed, it will be thought to be for my own profit." In 1253 he received this prince at Joppa, and Louis ordered the castle and town to be repaired. The rest of the Count of Joppa's life flowed away in study and practice of the ancient laws drawn up for the kingdom of Jerusalem by Godfrey de Bouillon. Joinville describes Jean d'Ibelin as a Seigneur powerful, courageous, and wise in council, nephew of the old "Seigneur de Beirut." Gifted with an elevated spirit, versatile, keen-sighted, and possessing rare powers of discussion and it is not surprising that the taste for jurisprudence promptly developed itself in him, nor that he attained in this science so great a renown that people journeyed to consult him from the depths of Armenia. Sanudo fixes the death of Ibelin in the month of December, 1266. He was interred in the Church of the Dominicans at Nicosia, the burial-place of the family.

The other member of the Ibelin family deserving special notice is Jacques d'Ibelin, great-grandson of Jean d'Ibelin, the old "Seigneur de Beirut," and son of Balian d'Ibelin, prince of Tiberius, by his wife Alix, daughter of Hugues III, King of Cyprus. Jacques d'Ibelin lived at the same époque as the Count of Joppa, and was, like him, also author of a book on jurisprudence, which Beugnot describes as "a clear, substantial, but too much abridged collection of the general principles of the law of Beyond-Seas."¹ Nothing is

¹ "d'Outre Mer."

known of the life of Jacques d'Ibelin, except that he was living as late as the end of the thirteenth century, but an ancient manuscript of the *Assises of Jerusalem* has preserved to us a discourse which he pronounced in the presence of the King of England, Edward I, in 1271 or 1272, contending that the men of the kingdom of Cyprus were not bound to give military service outside the island of Cyprus against their wish. Edward I passed into the East in 1271 and conducted himself there with much wisdom and courage. He became King of England the following year. Beugnot says :

“The discussion which arose between King Hugues and his vassals and in which King Edward acted as arbiter, was very serious, as was all that related to military service, but one cannot understand how so much uncertainty prevailed on the subject, which Jean d'Ibelin in particular had so clearly explained.”

Concerning the speech of Jacques d'Ibelin, Beugnot says further :

“The answer of Jacques d'Ibelin is the pure and eloquent expression of the elevated sentiments which animated the nobles in the best days of feudalism. We do not think that the middle ages have produced anything which can be compared with this discourse, which is a glorious testimony to the chivalry of the Orient, in which courage and pride united, in spite of an uninterrupted succession of reverses, to maintain intact the depository of feudal traditions and to defend the fragments of the Christian rule in Syria.”

The speech is too long for insertion. We will, however, quote two extracts in which Jacques d'Ibelin refers to the power exercised by his own family in the island :

“And if it be true that the people of Cyprus have always joined issue in the quarrels of Beyond-Seas, and have espoused the cause of all the allies who came there, following their seigneur, or fighting on their own account without their seigneur, and with their friends or with their neighbours, some did it for the Hospital at Montferrat, and some for the Temple on the shore of Trapessac, some did it for the old Seigneur de Beirut, and many did it for the other Seigneur de Beirut, his son, and many did it for the young Seigneur

de Beirut who died not long ago, and some did it for the Count of Joppa. . . .

“And again we shall show with certainty by the testimony of people still living that the men of the kingdom of Cyprus, who have fought outside the kingdom have more frequently served the house of Ibelin than they have served my Lord the King or his ancestors ; and if the usage of their service should be held to enslave them, for the same reason could the house of Ibelin demand of them that which my Lord the King demands.”

Beugnot remarks as to this :

“During the thirteenth century, the house of Ibelin exercised in Cyprus a real sovereignty under the name of the princes who occupied the throne. One may say that during the minority of Henry, and even during the thirty-five years that this prince reigned, all the wars and troubles of all sorts which agitated the kingdom of Cyprus had as cause the interests and ambitions of this powerful house. Thus, though pride may have dictated the observation of Jacques d’Ibelin, which we have just read, it is none the less evident that it rested on an exact fact, which Hugues could not have forgotten.”

History tells us nothing further of the family of Ibelin. Henceforward we must rely on accounts preserved in private families, and the pedigree at Wotton (which is the one given to John Evelyn by the French heralds in 1650) states that in 1475 Henri Evelin came from Cyprus to Normandy, where he bought a small feif called *Evelinière* in the “*Balliage of Constantine*,” in other words, in the vice-county of Cotentin, whose capital was the ancient Constantia, now Coutances, in the department of La Manche. Coutances is a picturesque town with a beautiful Norman cathedral, situated half-way up a granite hill seven miles from the sea.

From this Henri Evelin (whose descent from the old Seigneur of Beirut is given in the Wotton MS. and who was twice married) descended various Seigneurs of *Evelinière*, of *Ramondière* of *Valdesie* and of *Parie*. The last name on the pedigree is that of William Evelin, physician and councillor to King Henri IV, Louis XIII, and Louis XIV, and who is said to be “*living in the present year, 1650.*”

John Evelyn afterwards made the acquaintance of this William Evelin, and mentions the fact in the account of his family which he furnished to Aubrey the historian :

“ There are of our name both in France and Italy, written Ivelyn, Avelin : in old deeds I find Avelyn, *alias* Evelyn. One of our name was taken prisoner at the battle of Agincourt. When the Duchess of Orléans came to Dover to see the King, one of our name (whose family derived itself from Lusignan, King of Cyprus) claimed relation to us. We have in our family a tradition of a great sum of money that had been given for the ransom of a French lord, with which a great estate was purchased ; but these things are all mystical.”

Under date May 1670, we find recorded in Evelyn's *Diary* :

“ Receiving a letter from Mr. Philip Howard, Lord Almoner to the Queen, that Monsieur Evelin, first physician to Madame (who was now come to Dover to visit the King her brother), was come to town greatly desirous to see me, but his stay was so short that he could not come to me, I went with my brother to meet him at the Tower, where he was seeing the magazines and other curiosities, having never before been in England : we renewed our alliance and friendship with much regret on both sides, he being to return towards Dover that evening, we could not enjoy one another any longer. How this French family Ivelin, of Evelin, Normandy, a very ancient and noble house, is grafted into our family, see in the collection brought from Paris, 1650.”

Unfortunately, the Wotton pedigree (which has been privately printed by the late Lord Liverpool in his book on the Evelyn Family) does not show this, and the alliance between the two families rests only upon tradition, which, however, is strong enough to deserve investigation. A note attached to the manuscript at Wotton states that one of the Norman Evelins, William by name, went when young with Francis de Luxembourg, Vicomte de Martigues, into England in 1489, or about that year, in the reign of Charles VIII, and never returned, and was supposed to be the ancestor of the Evelyns in England. This, however, does not seem possible,

as the Evelyns were settled at "Evelyn, near Tower Castle¹ in Shropshire," as early as 1410, which is of course previous to the return of Henri Evelin from Cyprus to Normandy in 1475. The connecting link between the two families must therefore be sought for in an earlier generation. In the Evelyn pedigree in the possession of Sir Stewkley Shuckburgh at Buxted, the account says: "They came there (*i.e.* to Tower Castle) originally from Evelyn in Normandy temp. Will. Conq. where they had been long settled, and whence one of the family went to the Holy Land with Robert Duke of Normandy, 1100." This again differs from the *Lignages d'outre Mer* and other ancient manuscripts, which state that the name of Ibelin was not borne by Balian *le François* until *after* his arrival in Palestine, when the Seigneurie of Ibelin was granted to him. It seems a pity that John Evelyn did not pursue his researches a little further. That he intended to do so seems clear from a list he has left of "things I would write out fair and reform if I had leisure," of which one item is "pedigree of the Evelyns."

Perhaps the explanation of the matter is that some member of the Evelyn family returned from Cyprus before the year 1410,—perhaps even before 1204, at which date Normandy was still united with England under the rule of the Plantaganet Kings—crossed the Channel and settled in this country. This would be before the establishment of the Norman line, but in course of time two families of the same name and claiming kinship, would be settled one in England, one in Normandy, and the relationship between them—already distant enough—would gradually be forgotten, and the two branches would preserve only a vague tradition of their common origin, and of their common descent from the once celebrated family of Ibelin, which played so prominent a part in the affairs of the Latin Kingdoms of Jerusalem and of Cyprus.

Probably Tonge Castle, near Shifnal.

APPENDIX II

THE EVELYNS IN SHROPSHIRE

JOHN EVELYN, in a letter to Aubrey, gives the following account of the Evelyn family and their first settlement at Wotton:—

“We have not been at Wotton (purchased of one Owen, a great rich man), above 160 years. My great-grandfather came from Long Ditton (the seat now of Sir Edward Evelyn) where we had been long before; and to Long Ditton from Harrow-on-the-Hill; and many years before that from Evelyn near Tower Castle in Shropshire at what time there transmigrated also (as I have been told) the Onslows, and Hattons, from seats and places of those names yet there.”

The Wotton pedigree of the Evelyn family has the traditional descent from the Kings of Jerusalem and Cyprus at the head of it, and has this note: “By tradition the family of Avelyn or Evelyn came to Harrow Co. Middlx from Evelyn near Tower Castle, in the hundred of South Bradford, Salop, 1410.”

No trace of the Evelyn family ever having lived in Shropshire can be found, although the numerous printed Calendars of Pipe Rolls, Close Rolls, and Patent Rolls have been carefully searched, as well as so many of the Lay Subsidies for Salop as were obtainable; also the early Chancery Proceedings. No place of the name of Evelyn now exists there, but Evelyn, situated near Shifnal, is to be found marked in two ancient maps of that county for 1607 and 1610. The maps are to be seen at the British Museum. One of them, published in 1607, is entitled *Salopiæ Comitatus*, and is to be

found in Camden's *Britannia*, which has the following extract referring to the place:—

“Northward from hence is Evelyn; from which place the family of that name came into Surrey, some ages since, along with the Onslows and Hattons, where these three seated themselves near one another, and have remain'd a long time.”

The extract, of course, has no genealogical value, as no authority or proof is given for the statement. The other map, published in 1610, is an atlas of England and Wales by J. Speed.

A gentleman's house of that name certainly existed as late as 1690, as it is mentioned in a book of that date called *Index Villaris*, or a Geographical Table of all the cities, market-towns, parishes, villages, and private seats in England and Wales. Evelyn is mentioned as a private seat of a gentleman in the hundred of South Bradford, latitude 52°41 and longitude 2°20 W. As the book is merely an index, that is all the information it gives. Tower Castle cannot be found in any map.

Although there is no place of the name of Evelyn now to be found in Shropshire, there is a place called Evelith which lies some two miles south of Shifnal and some eight or nine of Bridgnorth in the parish of Shifnal, though nearer to Kember-ton Church. The present mansion is called Evelith Manor, and it is a comparatively modern house and not on the same site as the old manor-house, which stood, however, not very far off.

Evelith does not appear in any very early maps, but it is found in two maps of 1808 and 1827, to be seen at the British Museum. In R. Baugh's map of Shropshire, 1808, it is shown south-west of Shifnal, and in Greenwood's map of Shropshire, 1827, it is marked also south-west of Shifnal.

A history of Evelith can be found in Eyton's *Antiquities*, vol. ii. p. 304, but there is no indication that it ever belonged to any Evelyns or that any of that family lived there. In very early times it belonged to the Toret family. Toret, the Saxon, living in the time of Edward the Confessor, was the progenitor of this family, which took its name of Toret

or Fitz Toret from him. He is noticed in Domesday Book, and he survived in the early part of the twelfth century. Evelith was one of the members of Moreton Corbet. Toret's descendant was Peter Fitz Toret whose name appears constantly before 1160 and 1194 in connection with Shropshire places and Shropshire men, and was succeeded by his son Bartholomew, who appears to have died before 1235. The name of Gerard Fitz Toret, probably a younger brother of Bartholomew's, and the latter's under-tenant at Evelith, frequently occurs under the name of Gerard de Ivelith.

On Bartholomew's death, his Shropshire estates passed, with his daughter, to Richard Corbet of Wattlesborough, her husband, and in course of time to Robert Corbet, their son. At the County Assizes (September 1272) the Brimstree jurors reported that John Ivelithe had broken open the Grange of Robert Corbet and the accused was outlawed. This is the first mention so far found of an Ivelithe of Shropshire, although others of that name are met with in the fourteenth and early fifteenth century in Yorkshire, Durham, Warwickshire, and Middlesex. In a tenure roll of 1284, commonly called *Kirby's Quest*, Robert Corbet is mentioned as holding Ivelithe in Brimstree Hundred. In 1287 a tenure roll of Bradford Hundred speaks of the place as Ivelynton in Brimstree Hundred. At the Assizes of October 1292, Robert Corbet was questioned as to the right of Free Warren exercised by him at Ivelyth. An inquisition on the death of Robert Corbet of Moreton was ordered by writ of November 14, 1300. "The return" (says Eyton), "is sadly defaced, but is sufficiently legible to show him as having held 'Ivelith' under John de Chetwynd." In the Shropshire Lay Subsidy Rolls for 1327, Robert Ivelithe is mentioned in a list of people taxed at Shifnal 12d. This is the second Ivelithe found in Shropshire. In the Inquisition Post-Mortem of Richard Corbet, 10 Hen. VII (1495), there is no reference to Evelith, but no doubt it was included in the Manor of Moreton Corbet, of which the said Richard died seised, as in the Inquisition Post-Mortem of Robert Corbet, 5 Hen. VIII (1514), we again find it. Although the Corbets retained the Manor of Moreton Corbet down to the reign

of Charles 1 (after which Inquisitions were abolished), we do not find Evelith mentioned. From the Corbets, Evelith passed to the Family of Forster (Forester), to whom it belonged for many generations, and to which Sir Anthony Forster, the guardian of Amy Robsart, belonged. In the Inquisition Post-Mortem of Richard Forster, 3 James 1 (1606), it is spoken of as the Capital Messuage and tenement called the Haull of Evelithe als Ivelithe Co. Salop; and in 12 James 1 (1615) Walter Forster died seised of the Capital Messuage of Evelithe.

In an old MSS. pedigree of Forster in the MSS. Department of the British Museum (in which the family goes back seven generations from 1675) they are spoken of as belonging to Eveley, but as far back as the family has been proved by Inquisitions Post-Mortem, *i.e.* to 9 Elizabeth (1562), the name was always written Evelythe or Ivelythe in them.

Nothing now remains of the old Manor House, but on its site are two cottages which go by the name of "the old Hall" at the bottom of which is a brook with a mill called Evelith Mill. The old orchard is still kept up, and part of the old stone wall which enclosed the garden or grounds still remains, with the road at the bottom. Across the road is a field still called Chapel Yard, where was situated the old chapel. The old house, which was tumbling down, was demolished about 1800, and an entirely new building was erected at some little distance from the old house but on the estate.

There is no Tower Castle near, but Tonge Castle, which belongs to Lord Bradford, is not far off, as it lies three miles east of Shifnal. It was probably this building which John Evelyn meant when he alluded to Tower Castle, as Tonge Castle existed in very early times, although the present structure is modern.

It seems certain that Evelyn and Evelith were the same place, as they are never found mentioned together or marked in the same map. Sometimes the place is called Ivelithe, as in a small map of Shropshire for 1723 (*Magna Britannia et Hibernia*, vol. iv. p. 334), where it appears south-west of Shifnal, but it is not referred to in the letterpress, though

Evelin (the place) is, but is not marked in the map. There is no mention of the place Evelyn in any of the numerous old records searched, yet it appears in two of the most ancient maps of Shropshire extant, *i.e.* for 1607 and 1610, and marked as being about two miles south-west of Shifnal, whilst Evelith, as mentioned before, is not found in any map earlier than 1723.

For much of the foregoing information concerning Evelyn or Evelith, I am indebted to Miss Fairbrother of 5 Manor Place, Paddington Green.

APPENDIX III

ACCOUNT OF THE SHEE FAMILY

THIS account of the Shee Family is taken from the *Life of Sir Martin Archer Shee*, the celebrated painter, by his son, Martin Archer Shee.

“ There seems to be abundant evidence of the important territorial and social position occupied by the O’Shees in the counties of Kerry and Tipperary, at a period long anterior to the English expedition under Strongbow. The acknowledged chief of the race appears to have made his formal submission to the government, and accepted his *status* as a subject of the English crown, in the reign of Richard the Second ; and towards the end of the sixteenth century, we find one branch of his descendants long settled in the County of Kilkenny, and holding a conspicuous rank among the landed proprietors of that district.

“ In the ancient church of Kilkenny there are extant some interesting memorials of the family, which sufficiently attest the character of their ancestral claims, and have long been noted objects of curiosity and attention to the antiquarian tourist.

“ Among these, not the least conspicuous is the monument erected to the memory of Elias Shee, of Clanmore or Clanmorne, the younger of two brothers in whose descendants the representation of the family is now vested. This individual—described by high contemporary authority as ‘ a gentleman of a passing wit, a pleasant conceited companion, full of mirth without gall,’—was the direct progenitor of the subject of this biography.

“ With readier submission to the Anti-Hibernian and

crochety legislation, which characterised the English rule over the sister country in byegone days, than was usually exhibited by the great Milesian families, the Shees appear to have relieved their ancient patronymic from the obnoxious prefix 'O,' as early as the middle of the fourteenth century ; and although it has been recently resumed by the representatives of the elder branch, still resident, and in the enjoyment of their hereditary estates, in the county of Kilkenny, the descendants of Elias of Clanmore have adhered, in writing their name, to that form of orthography, which, if less conspicuously national, has at least the sanction of uninterrupted practice during the last four centuries.

"The estate of Clanmore, transmitted in the line of Elias, remained in the possession of his descendants until the Revolution of 1688, when it became the subject of one of those forfeitures to the chances of which the lands of the Roman Catholic gentry in Ireland were in that century so frequently exposed, on very trivial pretexts of confiscation. Whatever may have been the political delinquency, real or imputed, of the dispossessed owner of Clanmore, the loss of his estate seems to have been unattended with the more serious personal results that affected so many of his contemporaries ; and it is therefore fair to conclude that his offences were rather assumed by parliamentary rigour, than established by legal proof.

"Be this as it may, the Clanmore branch of the family, thus deprived of their lands in Kilkenny, migrated to the County of Mayo, where, at an early period of the last century, (18th century) we find them located at or near Castlebar, and occupying a position among the ancient gentry of that county, for which they were apparently more indebted to the *prestige* of their well-known descent, than to the value or extent of their property.

"George Shee, Esq., of Castlebar, the head of this branch of the family, married Mary, daughter of Martin Kirwan, Esq., of Blindwell, in the County of Galway, and by that lady had four sons, the youngest of whom, named Martin after his maternal grandfather, was the father of the late President."

PEDIGREE OF THE SHEE FAMILY

(FROM BURKE'S *Landed Gentry*)ODANUS SHEE, the
ancestor ofROBERT SHEE,
settled at Kil-
kenny, *d.* 1500.

=

CATHERINE SHERLOCK.

RICHARD SHEE,
Burgess of Kil-
kenny.

=

JOAN ARCHER, daughter of
Elias Archer of Rosse.

ROBERT O'SHEE.

=

MARGARET ROTHE.

ELIAS SHEE of Clanmore, Kilkenny
d. 1613. Progenitor of

GEORGE SHEE

=

— WEYMAN.

GEORGE SHEE

=

MARY KIRWAN, daughter of
Martin Kirwan, of Blindwell,
Co. Mayo.ANTHONY SHEE¹
of Castlebar, Co.
Mayo, *d.* 1770.

1748.

=

MARGERY BURKE, daughter
of Edmund Burke of Curry,
Co. Mayo.ANNE SHEE,
b. 1771, *d.* August
27, 1841, aged
seventy.

1787.

=

JOHN EVELYN, of Wotton.

¹ Mentioned in Pue's *Occurrences*, December 4, 1751: "Anthony Shee of Castlebar, merchant, giving up business."

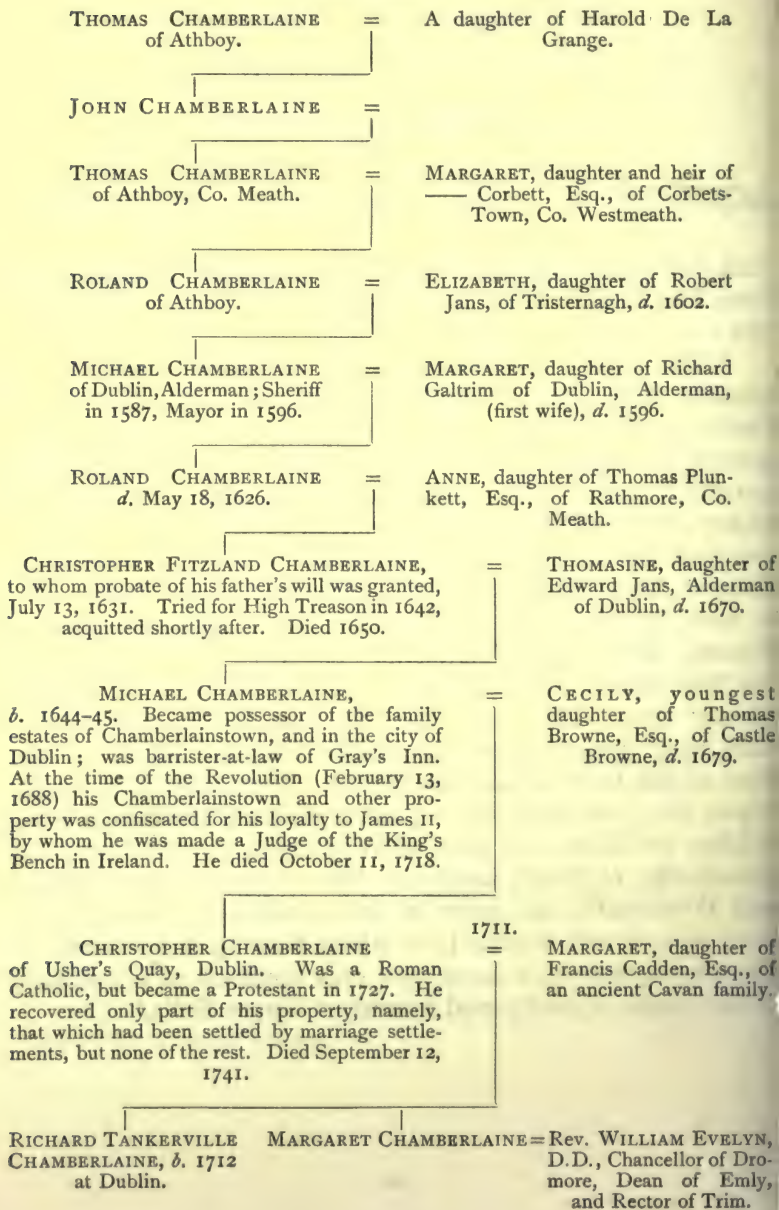
APPENDIX IV

ACCOUNT OF THE CHAMBERLAIN FAMILY

THE following account of the Chamberlain Family is taken from *The Irish Builder* for September 1887, vol. xxix. pp. 251, 264 :—

“The family of Chamberlayne, or Chamberlain, is descended from John, Count de Tankerville, of Tankerville Castle, in Normandy, who accompanied William the Conqueror to England. One of his descendants, John, subsequently became Lord Chamberlain to Henry I, and was father of Richard, Lord Chamberlain to King Stephen, who assumed the surname of Chamberlain (like the Butlers and Ushers) from his high office. Tankerville, or Tancarville, is now in possession of the Counts de Montmorency, in France, who claim the same descent. At what period the first branch of this family came over to Ireland, written history does not inform us; but the family tradition is that they accompanied the Anglo-Normans hither at the time of the English invasion (1170). They settled in Meath, where they obtained large grants of land, extending from Athboy to Kells, and part of Westmeath (at that time the principality of Meath embraced the entire county of Meath, and Westmeath, and parts of the counties of Louth, Longford, King’s and Kildare), to which they gave the name of Chamberlainstown, a name now only confined to a townland in the parish of Girley and barony of Upper Kells.”

PEDIGREE OF THE CHAMBERLAIN FAMILY

(The Irish Builder, 256, 264)

APPENDIX V

THE EVELYNS OF ST. CLERE, KENT

WILLIAM EVELYN OF ST. CLERE

THE first Evelyn of St. Clere, in the parish of Ightham, in Kent, was William, fifth son of George Evelyn of Nutfield, and the younger brother of Richard Evelyn of Dublin, from whom the present Evelyns of Wotton are descended. He was born at Nutfield in 1686, and was baptized there December 14, 1686. He married, February 12, 1718, Frances, daughter and heiress of William Glanville, Esq., and granddaughter of William Glanville and Jane Evelyn his wife, sister of John Evelyn, author of *Sylva*. William Evelyn, on his marriage, assumed the name of Glanville. His wife died July 23, 1719, aged twenty-two, and was buried at Godstone. She left one daughter called Frances. William went over to Ireland very early in the eighteenth century as a Commissioner of the Revenue,¹ an office that was then considered a very high one, and it was by his interest that his elder brother Richard, who followed him there, was appointed Collector of Naas, near Dublin.

William was M.P. for Hythe in 1729. He bought the Manor of St. Clere, *alias* West Aldham, in the parish of Ightham, Kent, and also property in London, viz. Rathbone Place. His second wife was Bridget, daughter of Hugh Raymond of Saling Hall, Essex, and Langley, Kent, Esq., sister and co-heiress of Jones Raymond of Langley. She died December 1, 1761, aged fifty-one, and was buried at Godstone, December 8, 1761. Her portrait is at Wotton. William resumed his original name of Evelyn on the marriage of his daughter to Admiral Boscawen, who carried her estate to that family. William died October 19, 1766, and was buried at Godstone, October 27, 1766.

¹ *Memoir* by Daniel Webb Webber relating to the Evelyns in Ireland.

CHILDREN OF WILLIAM EVELYN

William Evelyn had one daughter by his first wife and two sons and three daughters by his second wife.

FRANCES, daughter of the first wife, was born June 9, 1719. She married in 1742 Admiral the Hon. Edward Boscawen, second son of Hugh, 1st Viscount Falmouth, Admiral of the Fleet, General of Marines, and Lord of the Admiralty. He received the thanks of the House of Commons December 6, 1758, for his services in North America. Mrs. Boscawen kept up with her relations in Ireland, and used to correspond frequently with her first cousin, William, Dean of Emly, until the latter's death in 1776. Admiral Boscawen died of a fever on January 10, 1761.

The Boscawens lived at Hatchlands, an ancient manor-house at East Clandon, in Surrey, which Admiral Boscawen bought in 1749 from Mr. Raymond, a London brewer, who, becoming bankrupt, vested his estate in trustees, who sold it for the benefit of his creditors. Admiral Boscawen pulled down the old mansion and erected the present residence. This was shortly before his decease at Hatchlands on January 10, 1761. He was buried at Penkevel in Cornwall. He left his estate to Frances, his widow, by whom it was sold in 1770.

The following are extracts from Boswell's *Life of Johnson* referring to Mrs. Boscawen:—

"On Wednesday, April 29 (1778), I dined with him (Johnson) at Mr. Allan Ramsay's, where were Lord Binning, Dr. Robertson the historian, Sir Joshua Reynolds, and the Hon. Mrs. Boscawen, widow of the Admiral, and mother of the present Viscount Falmouth, of whom, if it be not presumptuous in me to praise her, I would say that her manners are the most agreeable, and her conversation the best, of any lady with whom I ever had the happiness to be acquainted."

In a letter from Mr. Bennet Langton to Boswell, of which the following is an extract, there is another mention of Mrs. Boscawen: "On the evening I have spoken of above, at Mr. Vesay's, you would have been much gratified, as it exhibited an instance of the high importance in which Dr. Johnson's character is held, I think even beyond any I ever before was witness to. The company consisted chiefly of ladies; among them were the Duchess-Dowager of Portland, the Duchess of Beaufort, whom I suppose, from her rank, I must name before her mother, Mrs. Boscawen, and her eldest sister, Mrs. Lewson, who was likewise there; Lady



FRANCES EVELYN (1719-1805)
WIFE OF ADMIRAL BOSCAWEN



Lucan, Lady Clermont, and others of note both for their station and understandings" Croker, the editor of Johnson's *Life*, adds in a note that "Mrs. Boscawen and her daughters, Mrs. Leveson (spelt in the text, as it is pronounced, Lewson) Gower and the Duchess of Beaufort, are celebrated in Miss Hannah More's poem entitled 'Sensibility,' who, speaking of Mrs. Boscawen, says that she

" ' — views, enamoured, in her beauteous race,
All Leveson's sweetness and all Beaufort's grace.' "—C.

On Friday, April 20 (1781), Boswell says: "I spent with him (Johnson) one of the happiest days that I remember to have enjoyed in the whole course of my life, at Mrs. Garrick's, in London, at her house in the Adelphi. The company was Miss Hannah More, who lived with her, and whom she called her chaplain, Mrs. Boscawen, Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, Sir Joshua Reynolds, Dr. Burney, Dr. Johnson, and myself. We were all in fine spirits, and I whispered to Mrs. Boscawen, 'I believe this is as much as can be made out of life.'" Croker appends a note that "Boswell was right; four other such women or such men it would have been difficult to collect. Mrs. Boscawen shone with her usual mild lustre." During the evening Doctor Johnson said, "I love Blair's sermons. Though the dog is a Scotchman, and a Presbyterian, and everything he should not be, I was the first to praise them. Such was my candour" (smiling). Mrs. Boscawen—"Such his great merit, to get the better of all your prejudices." Johnson—"Why, Madam, let us compound the matter; let us ascribe it to my candour and his merit."

At one time Mrs. Boscawen owned and lived in the villa once occupied by the poet Thompson at Kew Lane, Richmond, and which was called by her "Rosedale." She greatly extended the pleasure-grounds, which were in the poet's time narrow in extent. She religiously preserved the reliques of an alcove which formed the summer study of the poet. She died in South Audley Street, London, March 26, 1805, aged eighty-six years. She had one son, George Evelyn Boscawen, who became 3rd Viscount Falmouth, and two daughters, Frances, who married Admiral the Hon. John Leveson-Gower, and had four sons and three daughters, whence the Leveson-Gowers of Bill Hill, Berkshire, and of Titsey Place, Surrey, and Elizabeth, who married Henry, 5th Duke of Beaufort, and left eight sons and three daughters.

LETTER FROM MRS. BOSCAWEN TO HER COUSIN MISS SAYER,
GRANDDAUGHTER OF EDWARD EVELYN OF FELBRIDGE,
SURREY

"BATH, Monday, *October 28, 1793.*

"The sad apprehension your letter gave me my dear cousine for my Friend Ld. Mt. Edgcumbe has so troubled me that I am poorly qualify'd to make you any Return. The thoughts of loosing him is a Weight upon my Spirits. I know what Misery it will be to my Lady (my very old and constant Friend as indeed he was, being so to Admirall Boscawen also). We long for more (and better) news. Miss Price has wrote to poor Lady Valletort; I may well say poor for she will feel herself undone if she looses him a second Father within 3 months and I'm sure a very kind one. When can we have an Answer? the Post is swift; and if you hear any thing good at Richmond I think you will write knowing how truly I am interested.

"Meantime it is not publick news that can soften for a moment the troubles of private events. I will not sully my paper with the horrible reports I have heard this morning, but trust in God that they are not true, and proceed to admire your good Father's present occupation. To make people happy is a pleasant employment. How long have the odious French been employ'd to make every body miserable. One of the accusations against the Queen gives me a perfect idea of the truth of all the rest of the crimes that have been so eagerly believed concerning that poor ill-fated Woman! How I pity her good Sister-in-law, don't you admire their involving her in their shocking inventions! As to the poor orphans they will I suppose soon be massacred. But what of your Friends at Ramsgate? The last I heard of them was that Mrs. Huber had taught the Duchess of R. and Co. a new game (not at cards) but a sort of Colin Maillard, it was called if I remember *Le Pas de Russe*. A pianoforte was a necessary feature in it. Alas! the Fate of Lyons, the confiscation of the ind. Company probably of Mr. Hubert's Property must put him and his pleasing amiable Partner into a state of deep affliction. It is well now that they have no children to share it.

"I have sent a servant to yr Uncle's to enquire after his health. Answer return'd that he was much as he had been for some time past. If you have any commission here to him or Mrs. S: that I can execute you will employ me. I

need not tell you that I am perfectly well, when I inform you that I was walking upon the crescent (yes indeed the beautiful crescent) soon after 9 this morning after drinking at the hot Bath (for I have left ye Bath) according to Mrs. Ord's advice. I am afraid she will be gone from Richmond before I return unless this protracted fine weather (O how fine this morning was if one could have enjoy'd it !) shou'd keep her landlord longer in Yorkshire and in consequence tempt her to be longer his Tenant yet I hope to be at Home (dear Home which I long for) by the end of next week, the very end for I must visit poor Mrs. Crewe. I wou'd not disoblige my son by passing by her gate, else methinks the interview will be painfull to her, and any retardment unpleasant to me, so that I have refused Mrs. Montagu absolutely, tho' she threatens me with her highest resentment. I will enquire for Mr. and Mrs. Gundry. I sh'd think the former wou'd come and play our whist for we never go out of an evening, that is I don't chuse it, but I persuade my companions to go, as yet they have not minded me. Mrs. and Miss Price live 3 doors off and come constantly. Mrs. Leveson is with me. Captain Wallis generally comes of an evening and others. We have had Ly. Hesketh. She bitterly laments Lyons, having once liv'd there very agreeably 4 months. We have also had at whist Mr. and Mrs. Vanburgh—and to-night expect Miss Master, but she has a Bro^r imprison'd at St. Omers and a nephew with the D. of York, so she will not raise my Spirits.

"29th, Tuesday. I sh^d not have wrote so much if I had not depended on a frank, but now I despair and yrs must pay for this. I will manage better next time. The ill news seems a little soften'd, still very bad it is if these Monsters have got Fumes and Nieuport and that the W. Ind. expedition is stop'd if haply we can save Ostend. All bad, very bad. We have got Mr. and Mrs. John Evelyn at dinner to-day, the first time they have been out since the death of their eldest child who has been long ill—with little hope of Recovery ; it has been a great affliction to them. They have 2 boys left, a William and a George, their eldest was John. They had never heard of being named in Mr. Evelyn of Felbridge his Will.

"Pray my dear cousin let me hear from you often as Letters from Richmond are more interesting to me than any I can send from Bath are to you, for I do not frequent *le beau monde* or rather believe here is no *beau monde*, hardly any *monde* at all, my Lady of the Pump complains. I have seen Mrs. Cha. Stuart but I have no dear Lady Bute. She

has I doubt the Gout in her feet in Audley Street. You will ask after Her if you sh'd see *Ld. Lonsdale* who is apt to come to *Mrs. Jeffreys* to whom I desire my kindest comp. And to *Mrs. Wray* and *Mrs. Onslow*. Not forgetting Dear *Miss Cambridge*. Is she not in trouble for her good Mother? Is *Mr. Cambridge* well as usual? The Times he bears better than I do, for 'My Country's Ruin makes me grave.'

"In all humours most sincerely yours my dear cousine. So is *Mrs. Leveson*. Comp^{ts} to *Mr. Sayer*.

"(*Noon*). I have just got my Packet from *Richmond*. Nothing from my Dear Cousin but very comfortable Acc. Thank God of *Ld. Mt. Edgcumbe*. I trust he will recover.'

To *Mrs. Sayer*,
Marsh Gate,
Richmond,
Surrey.

William Evelyn of *St. Clere* had two sons and two daughters by his second wife, viz. :—

WILLIAM EVELYN, of whom presently.

GEORGE RAYMOND EVELYN, younger son, born 1738, was page of honour to *George II.* He married *Lady Jane Elizabeth Leslie*, Countess of *Rothes* in her own right, eldest daughter of *John*, 8th Earl of *Rothes*, K.T., ninth holder of the title, by *Hannah*, youngest daughter and co-heir of *Matthew Howard, Esq.*, of *Thorpe*, in *Norfolk*. The wedding took place at *St. George's*, *Hanover Square*, *January 2, 1760*. *George Raymond Evelyn* died *December 23, 1770*, aged thirty-two, and was buried at *Godstone*, *December 29, 1770*.

BRIDGET GLANVILLE EVELYN, eldest daughter, born *March 9*, and baptized at *St. Martin's* in the *Fields*, *April 6, 1733*. She married *Joseph Langton, Esq.*, of *Newton Park*, in *Somersetshire*.

SARAH EVELYN, second daughter, born *August 24, 1735*, was baptized at *St. Peter's*, *Cornhill*, *September 9, 1735*. She married at *St. George's*, *Hanover Square*, by special licence, *March 21, 1766*, *Chase Price, Esq.*, of *Knighton*, *Radnorshire*. She died (his widow) at 33 (now 6) *South Street*, *Park Lane*, in the parish of *St. George's*, *Hanover Square*, *January 19, 1826*, in her ninety-first year, and was buried at *Godstone*, *January 26, 1826*. *Mrs. Price* was a great friend of her first cousin once removed, *John Evelyn* of *Wotton*. Her daughter *Frances* married *Bamber Gascoigne, Esq.*, of *Liverpool*, and their daughter, *Frances Gascoigne*, married the 2nd Marquis of *Salisbury*.



SARAH EVELYN
DAUGHTER OF WILLIAM EVELYN OF ST. CLERE
From a crayon by Alan Ramsay

WILLIAM EVELYN (SECOND ONE) OF ST. CLERE

William Evelyn, son of William Evelyn and of his second wife, Bridget Raymond, was born in 1734. He was of St. Clere, Rathbone Place, and of Queen's Parade, Bath. He was High Sheriff of Kent in 1757 and M.P. for Hythe in six Parliaments, 1768-1802. He married, August 2, 1760, Susannah, daughter and co-heiress of Thomas Barret, Esq., of Shoreham, Kent, by Susan his wife, daughter of Sir Thomas Scawen. She died February 5, 1806, and was buried at Ightham, February 15, 1806. Her portrait is at Wotton.

William Evelyn died at Bath, November 3, 1813, aged seventy-nine, and was buried at Ightham, November 13, 1813. His will was dated March 12, 1812, proved November 25, 1813. He left his estates at St. Clere and in Rathbone Place to his daughter Frances and her issue male, then to the Earl of Rothes and his issue male, then to John Evelyn, Esq. (the great-grandfather of the present owner of Wotton, John Harcourt Evelyn).

CHILDREN OF WILLIAM EVELYN (THE SECOND)
OF ST. CLERE

WILLIAM EVELYN, eldest son, born July 19, 1767. He died under age, being killed from a fall from his horse out hunting on March 29, 1788, in his twenty-first year. He was buried at Ightham.

GEORGE EVELYN, born July 15, 1770. Died an infant Buried at Ightham, October 16, 1770.

FRANCES EVELYN, of whom presently.

LOUISA EVELYN, born March 23, 1766. Died an infant and was buried at Ightham, April 30, 1766.

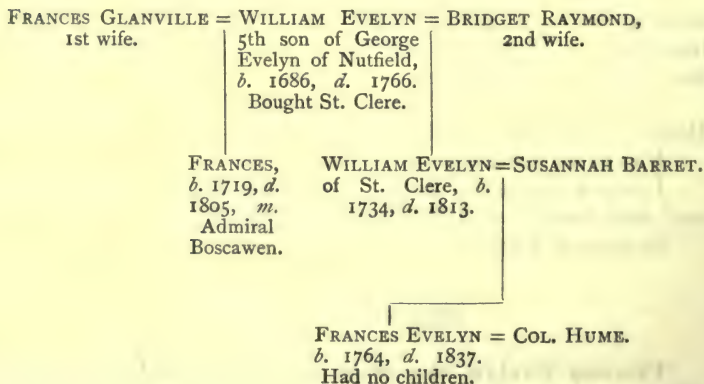
SUSANNA EVELYN, died an infant.

FRANCES EVELYN

Frances Evelyn, the only surviving child and heiress of William Evelyn of St. Clere, was born October 10, 1764. She succeeded to her father's estates at St. Clere and at Rathbone Place, London. She married, April 22, 1782, Colonel Alexander Hume, younger brother of Sir Abraham Hume, Bart. He assumed the name and arms of Evelyn only, by Royal Sign manual, July 22, 1797. He was at one

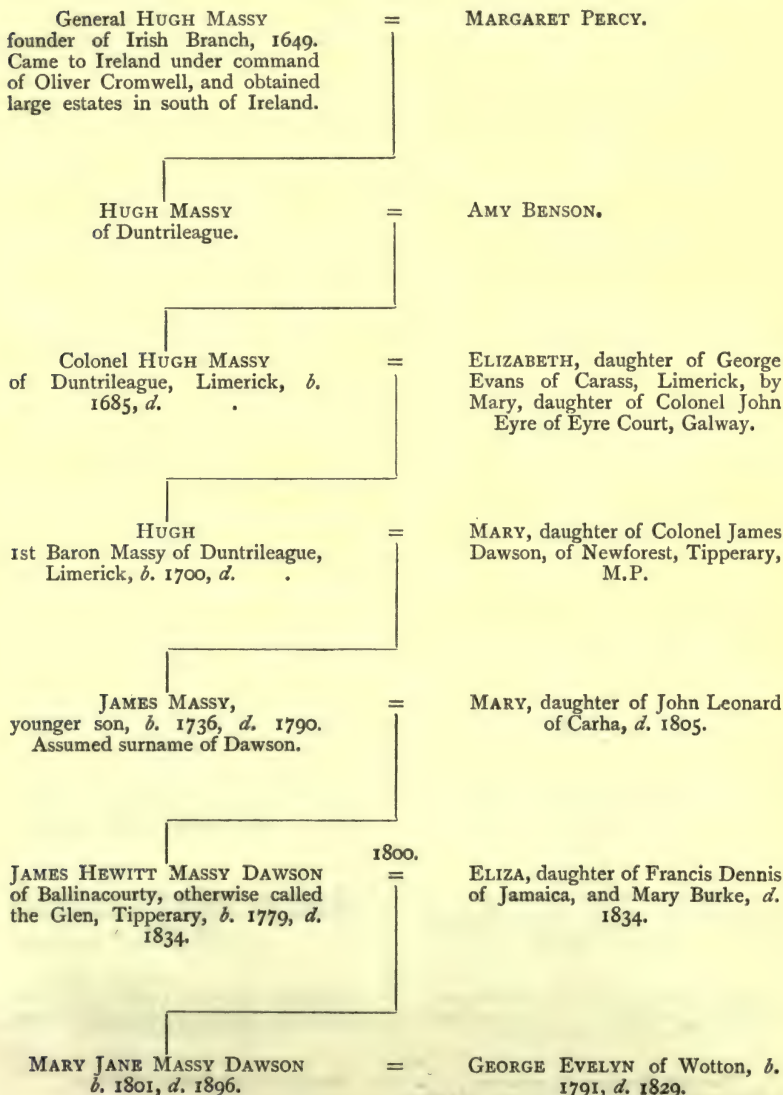
time of Headly, in Surrey, but then of St. Clere. He died February 22, 1837, and was buried at Ightham, March 3, 1837. Frances Evelyn survived her husband (to whom she had been married more than fifty years) only five weeks. She died March 28, 1837, and was buried at Ightham, April 7, 1837. She had no children, so on her death, (the male descendants of her uncle George Raymond Evelyn having become extinct,) Rathbone Place passed to William John Evelyn of Wotton, and the estate of St. Clere was divided between him and his five brothers according to the law of Gavelkind which then prevailed in Kent, and which provides that if a person dies without making a will, his property shall be equally divided between his nearest of kin. Finally it came to belong to Edmund Evelyn, who bought up his brother's shares. He sold it, and it now belongs to Sir Mark Collet. Mrs. Evelyn of St. Clere, whose miniature is at Wotton, shows her to have been very beautiful, was godmother to William John Evelyn of Wotton, to whom she was very kind during his boyhood, and with whom he sometimes stayed. She was devoted to her eldest brother, who had been killed while hunting, and insisted that her godson should be called William after him.

PEDIGREE OF THE EVELYNS OF ST. CLERE



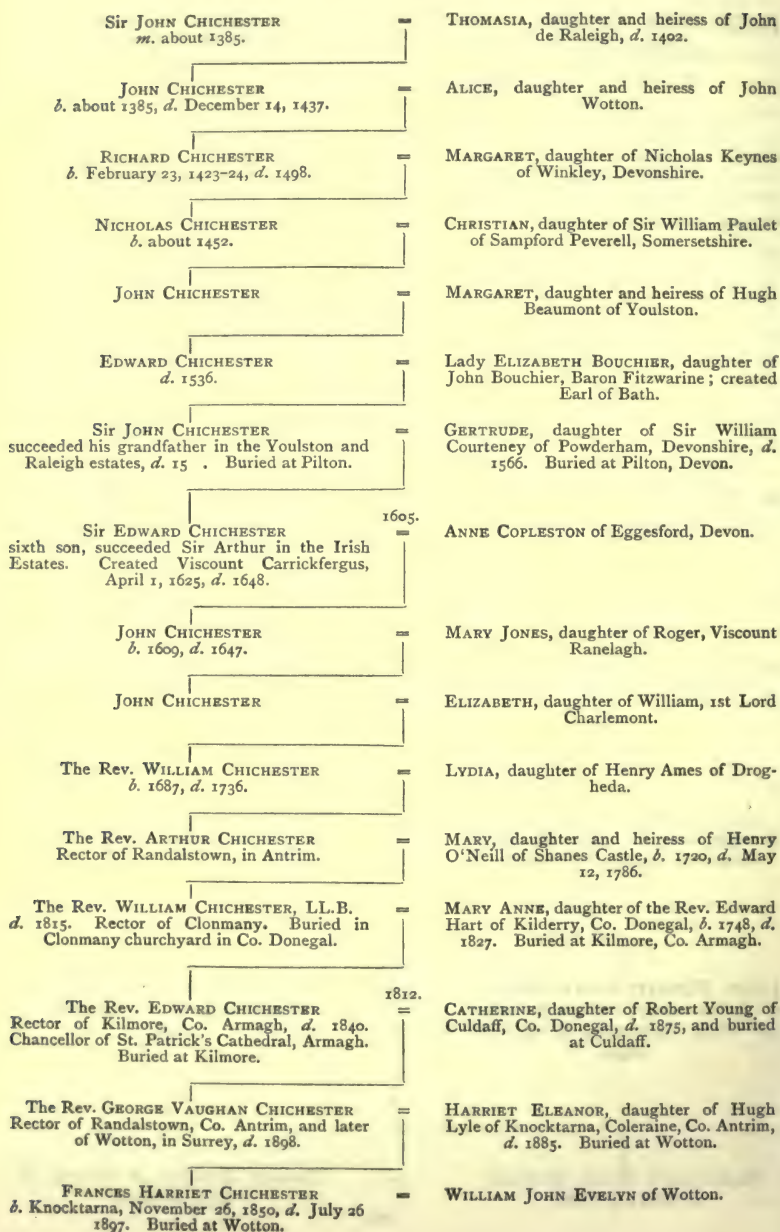
APPENDIX VI

PEDIGREE OF THE MASSY FAMILY, SAID TO BE DESCENDED FROM HAMO DE MASSY, LORD OF MASSY, NEAR BAYEUX IN NORMANDY



APPENDIX VII

PEDIGREE OF THE CHICHESTER FAMILY



LIST OF AUTHORITIES

- Familles d'outre Mer.* By DU CANGE.
- History of the Crusades.* By GIBBON.
- The Evelyn Family.* By C. G. S. FOLJAMBE, afterwards Lord LIVERPOOL.
- Boswell's Life of Johnson.*
- The Gentleman's Magazine* for October 1826.
- East Grinstead and its Environs.* By W. R. PEPPER.
- Diary of John Evelyn.*
- Index Villaris* (published 1690); or a Geographical Table of all the Cities, Market-towns, Parishes, Villages, and Private Seats in England and Wales.
- Eyton's *Antiquities of Shropshire*, vol. ii.
- Aubrey's *History of Surrey*.
- Brayley and Walford's *History of Surrey*.
- The Evelyns in America.* By G. D. SCULL.
- Nichol's Collection of Poems, published in 1780.
- Memoir relating to the Evelyns in Ireland.* By DANIEL WEBB WEBBER.
- Account of the last descendants of John Evelyn.* By WILLIAM BRAY.
- History of Deptford.* By NATHAN DEWS.
- The Irish Builder* for September 1887, vol. xxix. pp. 251 and 264.
- Domestic State Papers.
- Close Rolls.
- Exchequer of Pleas Judgment Rolls.
- Chancery Proceedings.
- Colonial Papers.
- Additional Manuscripts. British Museum.
- Egerton Manuscripts.

Printed by
MORRISON & GIBB LIMITED
Edinburgh

MR. EVELEIGH NASH'S
LIST OF NEW BOOKS

Spring 1915

36 KING STREET
COVENT GARDEN, W.C.

MR. EVELEIGH NASH'S LIST OF NEW BOOKS

1915

General Literature.

IN THE LANDS OF THE SUN

By H.R.H. PRINCE WILLIAM OF SWEDEN

With many Illustrations Demy 8vo Price 16s. net

Prince William was the representative of the Swedish nation at the Coronation of the King of Siam in 1912. This book contains his recollections of the events in which he participated, and comments upon the various Eastern Countries which he visited during his mission.

The Prince made a prolonged tour in Siam, Burmah, India and Ceylon, and it is interesting to read his views of our great Colonial possessions in the Indian Ocean, and his descriptions of big game shooting in the Jungle. Many of the splendid photographs with which the book is illustrated were taken by the Prince himself and add a further value to a volume filled with observations of sociological and topographical interest.

THE ROYAL HOUSE OF PORTUGAL

By FRANCIS GRIBBLE

Author of

"The Life of the Emperor Francis Joseph," etc.

With 6 Illustrations in Photogravure Demy 8vo
Price 15s. net

Mr. Gribble's new volume deals with the whole history of the Portuguese Royal Family from the period of its early magnificence to its decline and fall in our own days.

There is no work in existence in which it is possible to obtain a brightly-written account of the Portuguese Monarchy from the age of Prince Henry the Navigator to the day when Dom Manoel was compelled to flee from his native land.

Portugal has always been intimately connected by treaty and alliance with Great Britain, and this history of her ruling house should be of interest to British readers.

THE LIFE OF BERNAL DIAZ DEL CASTILLO

By R. B. CUNNINGHAME GRAHAM

With Photogravure Portrait Demy 8vo
Price 7s. 6d. net

Bernal Diaz was one of the famous little band of Spanish adventurers who accompanied Cortes on his Conquest of Mexico. His celebrated "History of the

MR. NASH'S NEW BOOKS

Conquest of New Spain," written in 1568, was preserved in MS. for 400 years in Guatemala, where the old "conquistador" spent his last years.

It is one of the most quaint and original historical work in existence.

Mr. Cunninghame Graham knows the old soldier's work by heart, and has learnt to love and admire the author, whose personality stands out in the pages of his fascinating History of conquest and adventure.

Those who have read Mr. Cunninghame Graham's stories of Spain and South America should not fail to read his latest work, which intimately reveals the pride of race and simplicity of soul of the old crusader of the 16th Century.

THE HISTORY OF THE EVELYN FAMILY

By HELEN EVELYN

Profusely Illustrated Demy 8vo Price 16s. net

John Evelyn of Wotton, author of the "Diary" and "Sylva," has made the name of this family well known all over the world.

Miss Evelyn has written a full history of the family in all its branches, from the days of the Ibelins in Normandy, who took part in the crusades and held military positions in conquered Palestine, to the present day.

A full biography of the late W. J. Evelyn, M.P., with Memoir by Wilfred Scawen Blunt is included in the book, which will appeal to all those who are interested in English Family History.

THE LIFE OF GENERAL SIR HARRY PRENDERGAST, V.C.

By COLONEL HENRY M. VIBART, R.E.

Illustrated with Portraits and Maps

Demy 8vo

Price 15s. net

A Military Biography of great interest in these stirring times. General Prendergast's activities chiefly centred in India, Burmah and Persia, and his experiences make lively reading. His management of the Burmese War in which King Theebaw was deposed, after Mandalay had been captured, was a brilliant feat of arms, and led to the consolidation of our Eastern Empire.

THE LIFE OF MARGARET D'ANGOULÊME

(*Author of the Heptameron*)

By H. NOEL WILLIAMS

Illustrated with Portraits Demy 8vo Price 15s. net

The subject of this biography was one of the most noted women of the French Renaissance. Married first to the Duke d'Alençon and after his death to Henri d'Albert, King of Navarre, she was a distinguished patroness of science and the arts.

MEMORIES OF QUEEN AMÉLIE OF PORTUGAL

Translated from the French of
LUCIEN CORPECHOT

Illustrated Demy 8vo Price 7s. 6d. net

Queen Amélie, widow of the murdered Dom Carlos, and mother of his exiled son, is one of the most tragic figures in Modern Europe. Great Grand-daughter of Louis Philippe, King of France, Queen Amélie has never forgotten that she is a French Princess, and Lucien Corpechot has expressed in his book the sympathy with which she is regarded by many French men and women.

The chapters in this volume which deal with the tragic assassination of Dom Carlos and his eldest son, and the subsequent insurrection against Dom Manoel are full of incident and pathos.

A Book for Bird Lovers.

A BIRD LOVER'S YEAR

By The Hon. GLADYS GRAHAM MURRAY

Illustrated Crown 8vo Price 3s. 6d. net

All bird lovers will take an interest in this little book with its charming photographs of birds in the wild state. The author displays a wide knowledge of bird life, and a remarkable talent for close observation.

Books of Naval & Military Interest.

THE FLEETS OF THE WORLD

(In preparation)

Illustrated with full-page Photographs of "Type
Ships" Quarto Price 5s. net

Complete classified tables of the World's Fighting
Ships, with notes on Armament, Guns and Projectiles.

PRACTICAL WARFARE

Chapters on Armies and Navies in Action Illustrated
with Photographs and Diagrams Crown 8vo
Price 3s. 6d. net

This handy little volume contains chapters on the functions of the various branches of the army when actually engaged. The actual conditions of modern warfare are fully dealt with. One may learn how armoured trains are fought; combats in the air are described. There are chapters describing what a modern sea fight is like. A special feature of the book is the section devoted to submarines. There construction, dimensions, latest improvements and methods

MR. NASH'S NEW BOOKS

of fighting are fully described. There is a chapter dealing with the use of mines in modern warfare ; how they are laid down and how they are swept up by daring mine-sweepers. Many technical details, concerning which questions arise almost daily, are simply and accurately elucidated. An invaluable book for all who are interested in warfare by land, sea or air.

NASH'S WAR MANUAL

Second Edition

Crown 8vo

Price 2s. net

"A useful war compendium an amazing production at a florin."—PALL MALL GAZETTE.

New 6s. Novels.

THE LONE WOLF. By LOUIS J. VANCE.

THE WHITE GLOVE. By WILLIAM LEQUEUX.

Author of "The House of Whispers," etc.

PIGEON BLOOD RUBIES. By

H. McDONNELL BODKIN.

A NEW VOLUME OF STORIES. By

MORLEY ROBERTS.

THE MAN AND THE WOMAN. By

F. C. PHILIPS.

THE EMPTY HOUSE. By ALGERNON

BLACKWOOD (New Uniform Edition) 3s. 6d. net.



PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

CS
439
E9
1915

Evelyn, Helen
The history of the Evelyn
family

